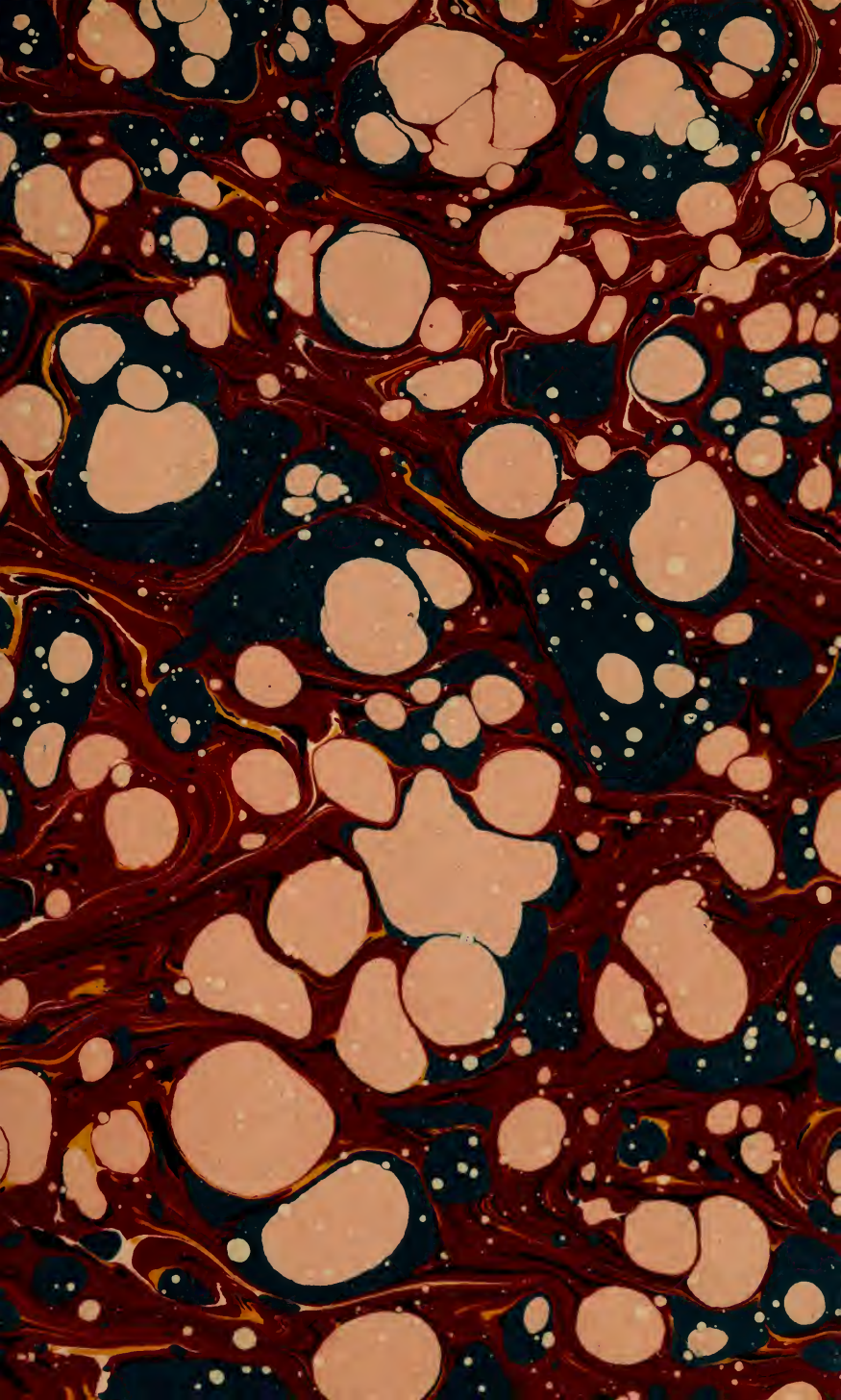


EX LIBRIS  
DOUGLAS AND MILDRED HORTON

500  
# 11519  
v. 2





















THE  
HISTORY  
OF  
NEW-ENGLAND

Containing an  
IMPARTIAL ACCOUNT  
OF THE  
*Civil and Ecclesiastical Affairs*

Of the COUNTRY  
To the YEAR of our LORD, 1700.

To which is added  
The PRESENT STATE of *New-England*.  
With a *New and Accurate* MAP of the Country.

AND AN  
APPENDIX.

Containing their  
Present Charter, *their* Ecclesiastical Disci-  
pline, and *their* Municipal-Laws.

---

By DANIEL NEAL.

---

V O L. II.

---

L O N D O N :

Printed for J. CLARK, at the Bible & Crown in the Poultry,  
R. FORD, at the Angel in the Poultry, and R. CRUT-  
TENDEN, at the Bible and Three Crowns in Cheap-side.

M DCC XX.

# HISTORY

## OF NEW-ENGLAND

IN THE  
SEVENTEENTH CENTURY

AND  
THE PRESENT STATE OF THE

PROVINCE OF MASSACHUSETTS

IN THE  
EIGHTEENTH CENTURY

AND  
THE PRESENT STATE OF THE

PROVINCE OF MASSACHUSETTS

IN THE  
NINETEENTH CENTURY

AND  
THE PRESENT STATE OF THE

PROVINCE OF MASSACHUSETTS

IN THE  
TWENTIETH CENTURY



THE  
CONTENTS  
OF THE  
SECOND VOLUME.

Chap. VIII. **T**HE Colonies address K. Charles II. on his Restoration. *The Submission of Alexander King of the Wompanoags. Determinations of a Synod about Baptism of Infants. A List of silenced Ministers, that settled in New England after the Act of Uniformity in 1662. The Deaths and Characters of the Revd. Mr. John Norton, and Samuel Newman. The Expedition of the English Fleet against the Dutch Settlements on Hudson's River. The Deaths and Characters of John Endicott, Esq; and of the Reverend Mr. John Wilfon, and Mr. Jonathan Mitchel. A Continuation of the Sufferings of the Anabaptists, and a Letter of the Nonconformist Ministers in England upon that Head. The Complaint of the Quakers, with the New England Ministers Reply to them. The Deaths and Characters of the Revd. Mr. Richard Mather, John Davenport, and Mr. Charles Chauncy, President of the College. Harvard College enlarged. Execution of Pyrates. Death and Character of Thomas Prince, Esq;* pag. 331

Chap. IX. *The Rise and Progress of the War with Philip King of the Wompanoags. He is besieged in a Swamp, but escapes. The Nipmuck Indians join him, and rout the English near Quaboag. The Connecticut Indians rise, and destroy the Frontier-Garrisons. The Narrhaganset Indians break the Peace. The English besiege their Fort, and after a bloody Fight take it by storm. Philip's Stratagem to engage the Maquas in the War, accidentally discover'd; which brought that powerful Nation upon himself. His Men are dispirited, and desert. Philip betray'd, and kill'd. His Character. War with the Eastern Indians. The English make a dishonourable Peace with them. The Fidelity of the Indian Converts. The Deaths, and Characters of some Considerable Persons in Church and State. King Charles takes away their Charter.* p. 376

Chap. X. *Captain Phips's Expedition to the Spanish Wreck. The Rise of the War between the English and Indians, in which the French take Part. The Revolution of the Government of New England. The Progress of the War. Examples of the deplorable Circumstances of the Prisoners taken by the Indians. The Reduction of L'Acadie or New Scotland. Sir William Phips's unfortunate Expedition against Quebec. The French and Indians fright away the Frontier-Garrisons, and ravage the Country. The English defeated at Wheelwright-Pond. A Truce concluded. The Death and Character of the Reverend Mr. John Eliot, the Apostle of the Indians.* p 418

Chap XI.

## The CONTENTS.

Chap. XI. *Sir William Phips returns to England, and joins with the New England Agents at the Court of King William and Queen Mary, in soliciting the Restoration of their Charter. They obtain a New one, not so agreeable to the People as their Old one. Sir William Phips appointed Governour. The War renewed. The memorable Siege of Wells. Mr. Increase Mather created Doctor of Divinity. Pemnaquid-Fort built. A Peace concluded with the Indians.* p 472

Chap. XII. *Of the suspected Witchcrafts of New England. The Circumstances of the Afflicted. Tryals of several of the Accused, (viz.) of the Reverend Mr. George Burroughs, Clerk, Bridget Bilhop, and Susanna Martin; the Number of the Condemned, and of those that were Executed, with their Dying Behaviour. Several of the Accused make their Escape. Indirect Methods used to promote Accusations. The Recantation of some of the Confessing Witches; and of the Jurors.* p 495

Chap. XIII. *Sir William Phips recalled. His Death and Character. The War with the Indians renewed. Pemnaquid-Fort taken, and demolished. The Bravery of Mr. Dunstan and his Wife. The Death and Character of Simon Bradstreet, Esq; The Earl of Bellamont arrives Governour, and concludes a Peace with the Indians.* p 542

## The PRESENT STATE of NEW ENGLAND.

Chap. XIV. *A General Description of the Country. Of the Climate, Soil, and Product of it. A Description of the Town, and Harbour of Boston; with an Account of the most considerable Towns and Villages in the several Counties of New England. Of the Inhabitants, their Number, their Religion, their Civil Government, their Customs, and Manners, their Trade, and Political Interests.* p 563

## In the A P P E N D I X.

Numb. I. *The Charter granted by their Majesties King William and Queen Mary.* p 617

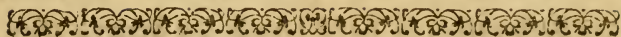
Numb. II. *An Abridgment of the Platform of Church-Discipline, agreed upon by the Elders and Messengers of the Churches assembled in the Synod of Cambridge in New England; to be presented to the Churches and General Court, for their Consideration and Acceptance, in the Year 1648.* p 643

Numb. III. *Heads of Agreement, assented to by the United Ministers, formerly called Presbyterian and Congregational.* p 656

Numb. IV. *An Abridgment of the Laws, and Ordinances of New England, to the Year 1700.* p 664

Numb. V. *A List of the Council and General Assembly of the Province of the Massachusetts-Bay, for the Year 1719.* p 710





## C H A P. . VIII.

*The Colonies address King Charles the Second on his Restoration. The Submission of Alexander King of the Wompanoags. Determinations of a Synod about Baptism of Infants. A List of silenc'd Ministers that settled in New England after the Act of Uniformity in 1662. The Deaths and Characters of the Reverend Mr. John Norton, and Samuel Newman. The Expedition of the English Fleets against the Dutch Settlements on Hudson's River. The Deaths and Characters of John Endicott, Esq; and of the Reverend Mr. John Wilson, and Mr. Jonathan Mitchel. A Continuation of the Sufferings of the Anabaptists, and a Letter of the Non-Conformist Ministers in England upon that Head. The Complaints of the Quakers, with the New-England Ministers Reply to them. The Deaths and Characters of the Reverend Mr. Richard Mather, John Davenport, and Mr. Charles Chauncy, President of the College. Harvard-College enlarged. Execution of Pyrates. Death and Character of Thomas Prince, Esq;*



THE Government of *New-England* submitted to all the Changes that were in *England* for the last Twenty Years; they owned the Parliament, acquiesced in the Commonwealth, submitted to the Protector, and now at last, upon the

Anno  
1661

*Anno*  
*1661*  
 W the Restoration of King *Charles* the Second, they sent over *Simon Bradstreet*, Esq; Secretary of the *Massachuset* Colony, and the Reverend Mr. *John Norton*, with an Address of Congratulation to his Majesty, upon his Accession to the Throne of his Ancestors, in which, after Expressions of their Loyalty, and Endeavours to justify their Conduct towards the *Quakers*, as the Reader has observed in the last Chapter ; they go on to implore his Majesty's Protection of them in the free Exercise of their Religion. " We supplicate  
 " your Majesty (*say they*) for your gracious  
 " Protection of us, in the Continuance both of  
 " our Civil and Religious Liberties, according  
 " to the Grantees known End of suing for the  
 " Patent conferr'd upon this Plantation by your  
 " Royal Father. Our Liberty to walk in the  
 " Way of the Gospel, with all good Conscience  
 " according to the Order of the Gospel, was the  
 " Cause of our transporting ourselves with our  
 " Wives, our little ones, and our Substance,  
 " from that pleasant Land, over the *Atlantick*  
 " Ocean into the vast Wilderness, choosing  
 " rather the pure Scripture-Worship with a  
 " good Conscience in this remote Wilderness,  
 " than the Pleasures of *England*, with  
 " Submission to the Impositions of the then  
 " so disposed, and so far prevailing Hierarchy,  
 " which we could not do without an evil Con-  
 " science. ——— We are not seditious, as to the  
 " Interests of *Cæsar*, nor schismatical, as to  
 " Matters of Religion. We distinguish between  
 " Churches and their Impurities. — We could  
 " not live without the publick Worship of God,  
 " nor be permitted the publick Worship, with-  
 " out such a Yoke of Subscription and Confor-  
 " mity, as we could not consent unto without  
 " Sin. That we might therefore enjoy Divine  
 " Worship without humane Mixtures, without  
 " Offence

“ Offence to God, Man, and our own Consciences, We with Leave, but not without Tears departed from our Country, Kindred, and Father’s Houses into this *Patmos*”. Dr. *Mather* says, the King received their Address very graciously, and sent back Letters to the *Colony*, signifying, that the Expressions of their Loyalty and Affection to him were very acceptable; that he would confirm their Privileges, and give them all manner of Encouragement and Protection; but it’s plain the Country was not satisfied with the Conduct of their Agents; whether they flatter’d the Court too much, or promised more for their Country than they ought is uncertain; but when Mr. *Norton* came home about the Month of *September*, his Friends were shy of him, and some of the People told him to his Face, that he had laid the Foundation of the Ruin of their Liberties, which struck him to the Heart, and brought him into such a melancholy Habit of Body, as hastned his Death.

Old *Massasoiet* being dead, his two Sons *Wamsutta* and *Metacomet* came to the Court of *Plymouth*, desiring to have *English* Names given them, whereupon the Court named the elder Brother *Alexander*, and the younger *Philip*. But notwithstanding their high Pretensions of Friendship to the *English* at this Time, the Court had Information a few Months after, that *Alexander* the elder Brother was soliciting the *Narrhagansets* to make War upon them, whereupon Major General *Winslow* was sent to bring him to *Plymouth*; the Major used such Expedition, and Courage in the Affair, that with the Assistance of no more than ten men, he surprized *Alexander* in the midst of a Croud of Attendants at one of his Hunting-Houses, and clapping a Pistol to his Breast, commanded him to surrender on Pain of Death, and go with him to *Plimouth*; the *Sachem*



*Ann*  
1662 *chem* seeing no Remedy, was forced to submit, only requesting that he might go like a Prince, with his Attendants and Followers, which was granted him: The Major offered him a Horse, but his *Squaw* and other *Indian* Women being on Foot, he refused it. The Governor treated him with great Humanity and Respect, but his great Spirit swelling with Revenge for the Disgrace he was under, threw him into a slow Fever, which in a little Time cost him his Life.

HIS Brother *Philip* succeeded him, a bold and daring young Man, who thought it his Interest nevertheless to comply with the Demands of the *English* at present, and accordingly made his Appearance at the Court held at *Plimouth*, August the 6th, and earnestly desired the Continuance of that Amity and Friendship that had been between the Governor of *Plimouth* \* and his deceased Father and Brother, “ Promising at “ the same Time, for himself and his Successors, “ to remain Subjects to the King of *England*, “ his Heirs and Successors, and truly and exactly “ to observe and keep inviolable such Conditions “ as formerly have been by his Predecessors “ made, and particularly that he will not at any “ Time needlessly or unjustly provoke or raise “ War with any of the Natives, nor at any “ Time give, sell or dispose, of any Lands (to “ him or them appertaining) to any Strangers, “ or to any without our Privy or Appointment, “ but will in all Things endeavour to carry “ peaceably and inoffensively towards the *Eng-* “ *lish*: And the said Court did then also express “ their Willingness to continue with him and “ his the abovesaid Friendship, and did on their “ Part promise, that they would afford them “ such friendly Assistance, by Advice, or other-



---

\* *New-England Mem.* p. 160.

“ wise, as they justly might : and would require  
 “ the *English* at all Times to carry friendly to-  
 “ wards them.”

*Anno*  
 1662  


In Witness whereof the said *Philip* the *Sachem*  
 hath set to his Hand, as also his Uncle, and  
 sundry other of his chief Men witnessed it.

*Witness* John Saufaman      *The Mark*  of *Philip*  
*The Mark*  of *Francis*      *alias Metacom.*  
*the Sachem of Nauset.*

ON the 26th of *January* this Year there was  
 a great Earthquake in *New-England* about the  
 Close of the Evening, and on the 28th of the  
 same Month there was another about Nine in  
 the Morning, but neither of them did any con-  
 siderable Damage.

GREAT Debates arose about this Time a-  
 mong the *New-England* Ministers concerning the  
 Right of the Grandchildren of Church Mem-  
 bers to the Sacrament of Baptism, whose imme-  
 diate Parents had not entred into the Commu-  
 nion: The Importance of this Debate arose from  
 hence, Because the Ministers baptized none but  
 the Children of those of their Communion; so  
 that if either thro' Fear, or any other Motive,  
 they did not become actual Church Members  
 when they were of Age, none of their Posterity  
 could be admitted to Baptism: And this was  
 become a very common Case, since the Grand-  
 children of the first Planters began to rise up in  
 the World. The Dispute began in the Colony  
 of *Connecticut*, but quickly spread thro' the whole  
 Province. The Magistrates hereupon at their  
 General Court the last Summer publish'd an  
 Order and Request, for convening a Synod of  
 the Elders and Messengers of all the Churches in  
 the *Massachusetts* Colony at *Boston* in the present  
 Spring. When they were met together the Ge-  
 neral

*Anno* neral Court propos'd this Question among others  
*1662* to be debated by them.

*Q. Who are the Subjects of Baptism?*

\* The Answer which the Synod agreed upon was this :

“ *First*, T H A T all Members of a particular  
 “ visible Church are the Subjects of Baptism, and  
 “ their Infant Seed, *i. e.* Children in Minority,  
 “ whose next Parents one or both are in Co-  
 “ venant.

“ *Secondly*, T H E Infant Seed of Confederate  
 “ visible Believers are Members of the same  
 “ Church with their Parents, and are personal-  
 “ ly under the Watch, Discipline and Govern-  
 “ ment of it, when grown up, though they are  
 “ not to be admitted to full Communion, un-  
 “ less they understand the Doctrine of Faith,  
 “ and publicly profess their Assent to it, are of  
 “ a sober Life, and solemnly own the Covenant  
 “ before the Church, wherein they give up  
 “ themselves and their Children to the Lord,  
 “ and subject themselves to the Government of  
 “ Christ in his Church, and then their Children  
 “ may be baptiz’d.

“ *Thirdly*, S U C H Church-Members (*i. e.* ba-  
 “ ptized Persons) who either by Death, or some  
 “ other extraordinary Providence, have been in-  
 “ evitably hindred from publicly acting as afore-  
 “ said, and yet have given the Church Cause, in  
 “ Judgment of Charity, to look upon them as  
 “ so qualified, their Children are to be ba-  
 “ ptized.

T H E S E were the Sentiments of the Majori-  
 ty of the Synod, but several learned Men entred  
 their Protest, as Mr. *Charles Chauncy*, President



of the College, and Mr. *Jhn Davenport*, who writ against the Synod: Nor could the Churches of *New-England* agree in their Practice, some being for receiving their Determinations, and others for rejecting them; there were great Divisions and Contentions in the Church of *Boston* upon this Head. The major Part was for the Synod, and proceeded to pass Ecclesiastical Censures upon several of the adult Children of their Communicants for Scandals, tho' they were not of the Communion: but a considerable Number of the Brethren were dissatisfy'd with their Proceedings. However Things went on pretty quietly while Mr. *Wilson* lived; but upon his Death, the Majority of the Church inviting Mr. *Davenport* who had writ against the Synod, to succeed him, Thirty of the Brethren entred their Protest against it, and after some time withdrew from the Communion, and set up another Church in the Town, which has since proved one of the most flourishing of the whole Country. Almost all the Churches of *New-England* were divided upon this Article; and I must confess for my own part, that it looks but like an odd Assertion to me, To call a Person a Member of a Church, who has no Right to any of its Privileges, and yet remains exposed to its Censures. But 'tis now agreed, that Persons of a sober Life, and Conversation, professing their serious Belief of the Christian Faith, and promising to walk according to the Rules of it; tho' they are not fully satisfied in their Qualifications for the Lord's Table, may be baptiz'd themselves and their Children.

IN *England* the Spirit of the Church ran very high against the Presbyterians and Independants; the Bishops would come to no Terms with them, but by an Act of Uniformity which

Anno  
1662

took Place on *St. Bartholomew Day*, about two Thousand Ministers were turned out of their Benefices without the least Provision for themselves or Families: They were afterwards banish'd Five Miles out of every Corporation in *England*, and several at last died in Prison, for exercising their Ministry in private contrary to Law; but some of them being willing to get out of the Storm, removed to *New-England*: Among these the most considerable were,

1. The Rev. Mr. *James Allen* settled at *Boston*.
2. ————— *John Baily* at *Water Town*.
3. ————— *Barnet* at *New London*.
4. ————— *James Brown* at *Swanzey*.
5. ————— *Thomas Gilbert* at *Topsfield*.
6. ————— *Thomas Baily* at *Water Town*.
7. ————— *James Keith* at *Bridgewater*.
8. ————— *Samuel Lee* at *Bristol*.
9. ————— *Charles Morton* at *Charles Town*.
10. ————— *Charles Nicclet* at *Salem*.
11. ————— *John Oxenbridge* at *Boston*.
12. ————— *Thomas Thornton* at *Yarmoutk*.
13. ————— *Thomas Walley* at *Barnstable*.
14. ————— *William Woodrop* at *Lancaster*.

Who all spent the Remainder of their Lives in the Country, except one or two, who came back again at the Revolution.

We might add to these \* the Learned Dr. *John Owen*, who had been Dean of *Christ-Church*, and Vice-Chancellour of the University of *Oxford* under the Protectorship of *Cromwell*: He was universally respected as a Gentleman, a Scholar, and a Divine, and was better versed in *Oriental* and *Jewish* Learning than most of

his Age; after the *Bartholomew-Act* took Place, <sup>Ann.  
1662</sup> whereby he was silenced with the rest of his Brethren; he was invited to the Chair of Professor of Divinity in one of the Universities of *Holland*, but refused it: He was afterwards invited to be President of *Harvard-College* in *New-England*, and was shipping his Effects for that Country, when he was forbid to leave the Kingdom, by express Orders from King *Charles* himself.

ONE Mrs. *Greensmith* was executed this Year for Acts of Witchcraft upon the Body of *Anne Cole*, a virtuous young Woman, who lived with her Father at *Hertford*, and was taken with strange Fits, in which she express'd Things unknown to herself at another Time, as, that such and such Persons were consulting how to carry on mischievous Designs against her, &c. several Eminent Ministers wrote her Speeches, and one of the Persons accused being this *Greensmith*, who was then in Prison on Suspicion of Witchcraft, she was brought before the Magistrates, and having heard the Ministers Allegations against her, she confessed her Guilt; that the Devil had appear'd to her first in the Shape of a Deer skipping about her; that she had talked with him, tho' not made a formal Covenant with him, and that the Devil had had carnal Knowledge of her, for which she was executed.\*

SIX or seven violent Shocks of an Earthquake <sup>Ann.  
1663</sup> were felt this Year in *New-England* within the Space of three Days, on *January* 26, 27, and 28, which spread an universal Consternation among the People; but no considerable Damage ensued.



Anno  
1663

ON the 5th of *April* this Year died the Reverend Mr. *John Norton*, one of the Ministers of *Boston*, and one of the most learned Men of the Country. He was born at *Storford* in *Hartfordshire*, May 6, 1606, and educated at *Peter-House*; but his Father falling to Decay before he had finished his Studies, he was obliged to leave the University after he had taken his first Degree, and become Usher of the School, and Curate of the Church of *Storford*; he was an admired Preacher, but being a *Puritan*, no Preferment in the Church could be obtained for him, whereupon he resolved to remove to *New-England*; he came over in the Year 1634, and settled at *Ipswich*, but upon the Death of Mr. *Cotton* in the Year 1652, he was called to *Boston*, and there spent the Remainder of his Life: He was undoubtedly a very good Scholar, as well as a great Divine, as appears by the Works he has published both in *Latin* and *English*. The Magistrates of *Boston* had such an Opinion of his Abilities, that they join'd him in Commission with *Simon Bradstreet*, Esq; to manage their Concerns at the Court of *England* after the Restoration of King *Charles*, but upon his Return he grew melancholy and discontented, and at last died of a Fit of an Apoplexy, as he was preparing to preach his weekly Lecture; he was certainly a Man of warm Passions, and of a cholerick Temper; he was at the Head of all the Hardships the Quakers suffered, which made them in their Representation to the King, wherein they insert certain remarkable Judgments of God upon their Persecutors, relate this among others. “*John Norton* chief Priest in *Boston*, by the immediate Power of the Lord was smitten, and as he was sinking down by the Fire-side, being under just Judgment, he confessed the Hand of the Lord was upon him, and so he dyed.”

Tho'

Tho' this Reflection of the *Quakers* is very unjust, it being impossible for us to distinguish between a natural and judicial Death, yet I heartily wish that neither he nor any Body else by their unchristian Severities had given them Occasion to make it.

Anno  
1663

SOON after him died the Reverend Mr. *Samuel Newman*, Pastor of a Church at *Rehobth*, and Author of that *Concordance of the Bible* that bears his Name; he was born at *Banbury* in the Year 1600, educated at *Oxford*; and afterwards ordained a Presbyter of the Church of *England*, but being a *Nonconformist*, was forced to remove no less than seven Times, to avoid the Fury of the Bishops, 'till at last he resolved to get out of their Reach. He came over to *New-England* in the Year 1638, and settled first at *Weymouth*, and afterwards at *Rehoboth* in *Plimouth-Colony*, where he ended his Days; he was a Person of invincible Patience and Constancy, and went thro' a great many Straits, when the *Antinomian* Spirit prevailed in that Colony so far as to drive away almost all the regular Ministers out of the Jurisdiction; he was a hard Student, a lively Preacher, and very charitable to the Poor out of that little he had. He died with a great deal of Joy and Transport in the 63d Year of his Age.

THE Colonies of *Connecticut* and *Newhaven* being under a great Concern for want of a Charter, without which they were sensible they had no legal Title to their Land, prevailed with *John Winthrop*, Esq; Son of the late Governour of the *Massachusetts*, to go over to the Court of *England*, to solicit for such an one as might unite both Colonies, and make them one Body corporate, which accordingly he obtain'd; 'tis said, that he procured the King's Favour, by presenting him with a Ring, which King *Charles*

Anno  
1664

Anno  
1664

the First had on some Occasion or other given to Mr. *Winthrop's* Grandfather. Upon his Return to *New-England* the *United Colonies* chose him annually their Governour as long as he lived, Mr. *Webster* Governour of *Connecticut*, and Mr. *Lee*, Governour of *Newhaven* resigning their Charges into his Hands. There were some disaffected Persons in each Colony that opposed the Union at first, but were soon satisfied and reconciled.

THE War between the *English* and *Dutch* breaking out \* about this Time, King *Charles* resolv'd to dispossess the *Dutch* of their Settlements upon *Hudson's* River. This Part of the Country was first discovered by Captain *Hudson*, an *English* Man, who sold it to the *Dutch* about the Year 1608; but doing it without the King's Licence it was reckon'd invalid; the *English* who sailed from *Holland* to the *West-Indies*, and settled at *Plimouth*, designed to have taken Possession of those Parts, but the Commander of the Ship being a *Dutch* Man, and bribed by some of his Countrymen, landed them further to the North. The *Dutch* took Possession of the Country soon after, and began a Plantation in the Year 1623, but were driven thence by Sir *Samuel Argall*, Governour of *Virginia*; they then applied to King *James*, who being a slothful Prince, gave them Leave to build some Cottages for the Convenience of their Ships touching there for fresh Water in their Passage to and from *Brazil*: Under this Pretence they built the City of *New Amsterdam*, in an Island called *Mahana-roes* at the Mouth of *Hudson's* River, and a Fort about 80 Miles up the River, which they called *Orange-Fort*; from whence they traded with the

---

\* Oldmixon's *British Empire in America* Vol. I. p. 117.



*Indians* over Land as far as *Quebec*. Whether the *English* or the *Dutch* had the best Title to this Part of the Country is of no great Importance now, since it was taken from them in Time of War, and yielded up by the Peace. 'Tis plain however, that King *Charles* the Second looked upon them as Intruders, because on the 12th of *March* this Year, he made a Grant of the whole Country called *Nova Belgia* to his Brother the Duke of *York*, who gave it the Name of *New-York*, and sent a Squadron of Men of War, with some Land-Forces under the Command of Sir *Robert Carr* to reduce it. Sir *Robert* arrived there in the latter End of the Year 1664, landed 3000 Men upon *Mahanatces-Island*, and marched directly to *New-Amsterdam*, the Governour of the Town was an old Soldier that had lost his Leg in the Service of the *States*, but being surprized at the unexpected Attack of a formidable Enemy, he was prevailed upon by the Inhabitants to surrender. Thus this Place fell into the Hands of the *English*; 'twas handsomely built by the *Dutch* of Brick and Stone cover'd with red and black Tile, and the Land being high, it affords an agreeable Prospect at a Distance. Above half the *Dutch* Inhabitants remained, and took the Oath of Allegiance to the King, the rest had Liberty to remove with their Effects.

THIRTEEN Days after the Surrender of *Amsterdam*, a Detachment was sent under Colonel *Nichols*, to reduce *Orange-Fort*, which he easily accomplished, and called it *New Albany*, the Duke of *York*'s *Scotch* Title, and so the whole Country fell into the Hands of the *English*.

BUT Sir *Robert Carre* was not only commissioned to reduce the *Dutch* at *Mahanatoes*, but he with Col. *Richard Nichols*, *George Cartwright*, Esq; and *Samuel Maverick*, Esq; were commissioned to

*Anno* call at *New-England*, to hear and determine such  
*1664* Differences as might be amongst the Colonies,  
 with respect to their Jurisdictions, which they ac-  
 cordingly did, not very much to the Satisfaction  
 of *Plimouth*; they brought with them likewise  
 his Majesty's gracious Letter to the Governour  
 and Council of *New-Plimouth*, which is as fol-  
 lows.\*

To our Trusty and Well-beloved our Governour  
 and Council of *New-Plimouth* greeting.

CHARLES R.

“ T R U S T Y and Well-beloved, we greet you  
 “ well; we need not enlarge upon our  
 “ Care of, and Affection to that our Plantation  
 “ of *New-Plimouth*, when we give you such a  
 “ Testimony and Manifestation of it, in the  
 “ sending of these Gentlemen, Persons well  
 “ known unto us, and deserving from us, our  
 “ trusty and well-beloved Col. *Richard Nichols*,  
 “ Sir *Rbert Curre*, Knt. *George Cartwright*, Esq;  
 “ and *Samuel Maverick*, Esq; our Commissioners  
 “ to visit you, and other our Plantations in those  
 “ Parts of *New-England*, and to give us a full  
 “ and particular Information and Account of  
 “ your present State and Condition, and how  
 “ the same may be advanced and improved by  
 “ any further Acts of Grace and Favour from us  
 “ towards you; and that both you and all the  
 “ World may know, and take Notice that we  
 “ take you into our immediate Protection, and  
 “ will no more suffer you to be oppressed, or in-  
 “ jured by any foreign Power, or ill Neighbours,

---

\* *New-England Memorial*, p. 73.

“ than we would suffer our other Subjects that  
 “ live upon the same Continent with us, to be  
 “ so injured or oppressed. And as our Care and  
 “ Protection will (we doubt not) be sufficient  
 “ with God’s Blessing to defend you from fo-  
 “ reign Force, so our Care and Circumspection  
 “ is no less, that you may live in Peace among  
 “ yourselves, and with those our other Subjects  
 “ who have planted themselves in your Neigh-  
 “ bour Colonies, with that Justice, Affection,  
 “ and brotherly Love, which becomes Subjects  
 “ born under the same Prince, and in the same  
 “ Country, and of the same Faith, and Hope in  
 “ the Mercies of our Lord Jesus Christ; and to  
 “ the End there may be no Contentions and  
 “ Differences among you, in respect of the  
 “ Bounds and Jurisdictions of your several Co-  
 “ lonies, the hearing and determining whereof  
 “ we have refer’d to our Commissioners, as the  
 “ Right appears by clear Evidence and Testi-  
 “ mony before them, or that they can settle it  
 “ by your mutual Consent and Agreement;  
 “ otherwise in case of Difficulties they shall pre-  
 “ sent the same to us, who will determine ac-  
 “ cording to our own Wisdom and Justice. The  
 “ Address you formerly made to us gave us so  
 “ good Satisfaction of your Duty, Loyalty and  
 “ Affection to us, that we have not the least  
 “ Doubt that you will receive those Commissio-  
 “ ners in such Mannner as becomes you, and  
 “ as may manifest your Respect and Affection  
 “ towards us, from whom they are sent. They  
 “ will let you know the Resolution we have to  
 “ preserve all your Liberties and Privileges, both  
 “ Ecclesiastical and Civil, without the least Vi-  
 “ olation, which we presume will dispose you to  
 “ manifest by all Ways in your Power, Loyalty  
 “ and Affection to us, that all the World may  
 “ know, that you look upon yourselves as being

Answer  
 1664



*Anno* 1664 “ as much our Subjects, and living under the  
 “ same Obedience under us, as if you continu’d  
 “ in your natural Country. And so we bid you  
 “ Farewell.

Given at our Court at *Whitehall*,  
*April* the 23d. 1664. In the  
 Sixteenth Year of our Reign.  
 By His Majesty’s special Com-  
 mand.

*Henry Benet.*

*Anno* 1665 IN the Beginning of this Year there was a  
*Comet* visible in *New-England*; it appeared in the  
 Months of *November*, *December*, *January* and *Fe-*  
*bruary*, and rose constantly about one of the  
 Clock in the Morning in the South-East Part of  
 the Heavens. It was seen likewise in *England*,  
 and in most other Parts of the World, at the  
 same Time; the People looked upon it as a  
 Sign of some approaching Judgment; but their  
 Expectations were happily disappointed, for the  
 Country continued in Peace and Tranquillity for  
 several Years after.

ON the 23d of *March* died Mr. *John Endicott*,  
 Governour of the Jurisdiction of the *Massachusetts*;  
 he arrived at *Salem* in the Year 1628, and had  
 the chief Command of those that first settled  
 there, and shared with them in all their Hard-  
 ships: He continued at *Salem*, till the Magi-  
 strates desired him to remove to *Boston* for the  
 more convenient Administration of Justice, as  
 Governour of the Jurisdiction, to which he was  
 frequently elected for many Years together; he  
 was a great Enemy of the Sectaries, and was  
 too severe in executing the Penal Laws against  
 the *Quakers* and *Anabaptists* during the Time of  
 his Administration; he lived to a good old Age,  
 and was interred at *Boston* with great Honour  
 and Solemnity.

IN the Month of *July* Capt. *Davenport*, Governour of the Castle in the *Massachusetts*, was killed as he lay in his Bed, with a Clap of Thunder, he was a valiant Man, and his Death was very much lamented. Anno  
1665

THE Summer after, there was an Accident of the like Kind in the Jurisdiction of *Plimouth*; three Persons were struck dead in the Town of *Marblefield*, by a Flash of \* Lightning, a Man, a Woman, and a Child. Tis observable concerning the Man *William Shertliffe*, that he had his Wife by the Hand, and one of his Children in his Arms, when he was struck dead and neither the Woman nor the Child hurt. *New-England* is a Country famous for Mischiefs done by Thunder and Lightning; rarely a Summer passes without some remarkable Accidents of this Kind, either upon Men, Houses or Cattle. Anno  
1666

THE next Summer put a Period to the Life of Reverend old Mr. *John Wilson*, M. A. Fellow of *King's College*, *Cambridge*, and first Pastor of the Church of *Boston*. He was born at *Windsor*, in the Year 1588, and was third Son of Dr. *William Wilson*, Prebendary of *St. Paul's*, of *Rochester*, and of *Windsor*, and Rector of *Cliff*; having finished his Grammar-Learning at *Eaton-School*, he was admitted into *King's College* in *Cambridge* in the Year 1602, and after some Years was chosen *Fellow*; but by reading the Books of the most celebrated *Puritans* of those Times, he became a *Nonconformist*, and refused to comply with some of the Ceremonies; for which the Bishop of *Lincoln* at the next Visitation pronounced the Sentence of *Quindennium* upon him, whereby he was forced to resign his Fellowship, and leave the College. After this Anno  
1667

---

\* *New-England Memoria*. p. 178.



*Anno* he came to *London*, and studied the Law at  
*1657* one of the Inns of Court for three Years, but  
 having a strong Propensity to the Ministry, he  
 returned to *Cambridge*, and by the Favour of the  
 Earl of *Northampton* got Admission into *Emanuel-College* without Subscription, and proceeded  
 Master of Arts: When he left the University,  
 he lived first as a Chaplain in several honour-  
 able Families, but was afterwards chosen Mini-  
 ster of *Sudbury* in the County of *Suffolk*, where  
 he preached the Gospel with universal Accep-  
 tance and Applause for several Years, 'till at last  
 by the Information of one *Bird*, Dr. *Hurfnut*  
 Bishop of *Norwich*, first suspended, and then si-  
 lenc'd him: The Earl of *Warwick* interceded  
 for him to the Bishop, and with great Difficulty  
 obtained the Liberty of his Ministry again; but  
 being in continual Danger, he resolved to get  
 out of the Way, and therefore embarked with  
 some of his Neighbours, in the Fleet that came  
 to *New-England* in the Year 1630. He settled  
 first at *Charles-Town*, but soon after removed to  
*Boston*, where he spent the rest of his Life. He  
 was an exact Preacher in his younger Days,  
 and admired by Dr. *Goodwin*, Mr. *Burroughs*,  
 and Mr. *Bridge*; but as he grew into Years, he  
 took a greater Liberty; his Sermons being made  
 up chiefly of Exhortations, Admonitions, and  
 Counsels to the People, without much Order or  
 Method, but delivered with a great deal of af-  
 fecting Warmth and Fervency. He was a very  
 charitable Man, employing all his Estate for the  
 Service of the poor, and being of a sweet natu-  
 ral Disposition he was universally beloved, and  
 looked upon as the Father of the Plantation.  
 Once when the whole Town was gathered to-  
 gether to a general Muster, a Gentleman that  
 stood by said to Mr. *Wilson*, Sir, here is a mighty  
 Body of People, and there is not seven of them all  
 but

but loves Mr. Wilson. To which he replied, Sir, *Anno*  
*I'll tell you something as strange, there is not one of* 1667  
*them all but Mr. Wilson loves.* He was a vigorous Opposer of the *Antinomian* Errors in the Synod of 1637, and favoured too much the Prosecutions of the *Quakers* and *Anabaptists*, by encouraging the Magistrates to put the Laws in Execution against them, which was the common Error of the Times in which he lived. In his last Sickness he was visited by all the neighbouring Ministers, who took their last Farewell of him with Tears, and the Elders of his own Church coming to see him, the venerable old Man, after a short Prayer, lifted up his Hands and blessed them, saying, "I am not like long  
 " to be with you, the Lord pardon us and heal  
 " us, and make us more heavenly, and take us  
 " off from the World, and make us burning  
 " and shining Lights by our heavenly Doctrine  
 " and Example: And I beseech the Lord with  
 " all my Heart to bless you, and to bless his  
 " Churches, and to bless all his People, and to  
 " bless all your Families, and to bless your  
 " Wives, and to bless all your Children, and  
 " your Childrens Children, and make us all  
 " more and more meet for our Inheritance, and  
 " bring us all to it in his good Time." When he drew towards his End, he lift up his Hands and said, "I shall now e'er long be with my  
 " old Friends, Dr. Preston, Dr. Gouge, Dr. Sibs,  
 " Dr. Taylor, Dr. Gouge, Dr. Ames, Mr. Cotton,  
 " Mr. Norton, and my Children and Grandchildren in the Kingdom of God." So having made a short, but most affectionate Prayer he died *August* the 7th, 1667, in the 79th Year of his Age, having been Pastor of the Church of *Boston* 37 Years, 3 Years before Mr. Cotton, 20 Years with him; 10 Years with Mr. Norton, and 4 Years after him.

Anno  
1668

IN the beginning of *March* \* there appeared a Meteor in the Heavens, in the Form of a Spear, of a bright Colour, something thicker in the midst than at either End; it was seen several Nights together in the West about half an Hour within Night, it stood slooping, one End pointing towards the setting of the Sun; and moved downwards by little and little, 'till it descended beneath the *Horizon*. This, and some other Incidents put the Magistrates upon promoting a *Reformation of Manners*, for it was observed, that the Youth of the present Age had degenerated very much from the Strictness of their Fathers, which some imputed to a Neglect of the Determinations of the late Synod, relating to the Churches watching over the Children of Church Members; and others, to the Ministers not visiting and instructing the Families of their Hearers as they ought. The following Letter was therefore printed, and sent to every Minister in the *Massachusetts-Colony*.

*To the Elders and Ministers of every Town within the Jurisdiction of the Massachusetts in New-England. The Governour and Council sendeth greeting.*

*Reverend and Beloved in the Lord,*

“ WE find in the Examples of Holy Scrip-  
 “ ture, that Magistrates have not only  
 “ excited and commanded all the People under  
 “ their Government *to seek the Lord God of their*  
 “ *Fathers, and do the Law and Commandment*, but  
 “ also sent forth their *Levites*, accompanied with  
 “ other principal Men, *to teach the good Know-*



“ ledge of the Lord throughout all the Cities, which *Ann*  
 “ Endeavours have been crowned with the Bless- *1668*  
 “ sing of God.

“ Also we find, that our Brethren of the  
 “ Congregational Perswasion in England, have  
 “ made a good Profession in their Book enti-  
 “ tuled, *A Declaration of their Faith and Order*  
 “ (p. 59. Sect. 14.) where they say, *That altho’*  
 “ *Pastors and Teachers stand especially related unto*  
 “ *their particular Churches, yet they ought not to*  
 “ *neglect others living within their Parochial Bounds,*  
 “ *but besides their constant preaching to them, they*  
 “ *ought to enquire after their profiting by the Word,*  
 “ *instructing them in, and pressing upon them (whe-*  
 “ *ther young or old) the great Doctrines of the Gospel*  
 “ *even personally and particularly, so far as their*  
 “ *Strength, and Time will permit.*

“ We hope that sundry of you need not a  
 “ Spur in these Things, but are conscientiously  
 “ careful to do your Duty, yet forasmuch as we  
 “ have Cause to fear, that there is too much  
 “ Neglect in many Places, notwithstanding the  
 “ Laws long since provided therein, we do there-  
 “ fore think it our Duty to emit this Declara-  
 “ tion unto you, earnestly desiring, and in the  
 “ Bowels of our Lord Jesus Christ requiring  
 “ you, to be very diligent and careful to cate-  
 “ chise and instruct all People (especially the  
 “ Youth) under your Charge in the sound Prin-  
 “ ciples of the Christian Religion, and that not  
 “ only in publick, but privately from House to  
 “ House, as Blessed *Paul* did, or at least three,  
 “ four, or more Families together, as Time and  
 “ Strength may permit, taking to your Assistance  
 “ such godly and grave Persons as to you may  
 “ seem most expedient; and also, that you la-  
 “ bour to inform yourselves (as much as may be  
 “ meet) how your Hearers do profit by the  
 “ Word of God, and how their Conversations  
 “ do

*Anna* “ do agree therewith, and whether the Youth  
*1663* “ are taught to read the *Englysh* Tongue, taking  
 “ all Occasions to apply suitable Exhortations  
 “ particularly unto them, *for the Rebuke of those*  
 “ *that do Evil, and the Encouragement of them*  
 “ *that do well.*

“ THE effectual and constant Prosecution  
 “ hercof we hope will have a Tendency to pro-  
 “ mote the Salvation of Souls, to suppress the  
 “ Growth of Sin and Prophaneness, to beget  
 “ more Love and Unity among the People, and  
 “ more Reverence and Esteem of the Ministry,  
 “ and it will assuredly be to the Enlargement of  
 “ your Crown, and Recompence in eternal  
 “ Glory.

Given at *Boston, March* 10th,  
 1668, by the Governour  
 and Council, and by them  
 ordered to be printed, and  
 sent accordingly.

*Edward Rawson, Secretary.*

THIS Concern of the Magistrates for the  
 Youth of the Country was very commendable,  
 and with the Blessing of God prov'd effectual,  
 not only for the restraining Vice and Immora-  
 lity; but for keeping alive the dying Power of  
 Religion among the rising Generation.

*New-England* lost one of her most conside-  
 rable Divines this Year, namely, the Reverend  
 Mr. *Jonathan Mitchel*, Pastor of the Church of  
*Cambridge*. He was born at *Hallifax* in *Yorkshire*,  
 in 1624; when he was ten Years old, he had a  
 malignant Fever, which settled in one of his  
 Arms, and rendred it lame to his dying Day;  
 he came over with his Father to *New-England*  
 in the Year 1635, but by the Losses that befell  
 the Family, was diverted from his Studies for  
 some



some Years, which was the true Reason of his not being entred into *Harvard-College* 'till the 21st Year of his Age; but he made such a quick Progress in the liberal Arts and Sciences afterwards, that he was qualified for the Pulpit within the Space of four Years, and immediately chosen Pastor of the Church of *Cambridge*, in the Room of the Reverend Mr. *Sheppard* deceased: He was certainly an incomparable Preacher, and had a very agreeable Manner, which all the Students affected to imitate; he was a Man of exemplary Holiness, and Catholick Charity and Moderation. Tho' he was a thorough *Independant* in his Judgment, yet he was for enlarging the Bounds of Church-Comminion, and took a great deal of Pains for this End in the Synod of 1662; Mr. *Baxter* used to say of him, *That if there was an Oecumenical Council to be held, Mr. Mitchel were worthy to be its Moderator.* All the Students of the College had a great Value and Esteem for him; but it pleased God to deprive the Country of this useful Man in the midst of his Days, for he was seized with a malignant Fever, as he came out of the Pulpit in very hot Weather, which put an End to his Life, *July* the 9th, 1668, in the 43d Year of his Age, after he had been Pastor of the Church of *Cambridge* 18 Years.

THE Displeasure of the Government ran very high against the *Anabaptists* and *Quakers* at this Time; the *Anabaptists* had gathered one Church at *Swansey*, and another at *Boston*; but the general Court was very severe in putting the Laws in Execution against them, whereby many honest People were ruined by Fines, Imprisonment and Banishment, which was the more extraordinary, because their Brethren in *England* were groaning under Persecution from the Church of *England* at the same Time. Sad Complaints were sent

*Anno* over to *England* every Summer of the Severity  
 1669 of the Government against the *Anabaptists*, which  
 obliged the Dissenting Ministers of *London* to appear at length in their Favour. A Letter was accordingly sent over to the Governour of the *Massachusetts*, signed by Dr. *Goodwin*, Dr. *Owen*, Mr. *Nye*, Mr. *Caryl*, and nine other Ministers, beseeching him to make Use of his Authority and Interest, for the restoring such to their Liberty as were in Prison on the Account of Religion, and that their sanguinary Laws might not be put in Execution for the future. Dr. *Mather* has preserved the Substance of this Excellent Letter, which I have transcribed for the Reader's Perusal.

“ WE shall not here undertake \* in the least  
 “ (say they) to make any Apology for  
 “ the Persons, Opinions, and Practices of those  
 “ who are censured among you ; you know our  
 “ Judgment and Practice to be contrary to  
 “ theirs, even as yours, wherein God assisting,  
 “ we shall continue to the End ; neither shall we  
 “ return any Answer to the Reasons of the Re-  
 “ verend Elders for the Justification of your  
 “ Proceedings, not being willing to engage in  
 “ the Management of any the least Difference  
 “ with Persons whom we so much love and ho-  
 “ nour in the Lord. But the Sum of all which  
 “ we shall offer to you at present is, that tho’  
 “ the Court might apprehend that they had  
 “ Grounds in general warranting their Proce-  
 “ dure (in such Cases) in the Way wherein  
 “ they have proceeded ; yet that they have any  
 “ Rule or Command rendring their so proceed-  
 “ ing indispensably necessary under all Circum-

---

\* *Mather, Book VII. page 28.*

“stances of Times or Places, we are altogether  
 “unsatisfied: And we need not represent to  
 “you how the Case stands with ourselves, and  
 “all your Brethren and Companions in the Ser-  
 “vices of these latter Days in these Nations:  
 “We are sure you would not be willing to put  
 “an Advantage into the Hands of some who  
 “seek Pretences and Occasions against our Li-  
 “berty, and to reinforce the former Rigour.  
 “Now we cannot deny but this hath in some  
 “Measure been done, in that it has been  
 “vogued, that Persons of our Way, Principles  
 “and Spirit cannot bear with Dissenters from  
 “them; and as this greatly reflects upon us, so  
 “some of us have observed how already it has  
 “turned to your own Disadvantage. — We  
 “leave it to your Wisdom to determine, whether  
 “under all these Circumstances, and sundry o-  
 “thers of the like Nature that might be added,  
 “it be not adviseable, at present to put an End  
 “to the Sufferings and Confinements of the  
 “Persons censured, and to restore them to their  
 “former Liberty; you have the Advantage of  
 “Truth and Order, you have the Gifts and  
 “Learning of an able Ministry to manage and  
 “defend them; you have the Care and Vigi-  
 “lancy of a very worthy Magistracy to counte-  
 “nance and protect them, and to preserve the  
 “Peace: And above all, you have a blessed  
 “Lord and Master, who has the Keys of *David*,  
 “who openeth, and no Man shutteth, living  
 “for ever to take Care of his own Concernments  
 “among his Saints; and assuredly you need not  
 “be disquieted, tho’ some Persons (thro’ their  
 “own Infirmary and Weakness, or thro’ their  
 “Ignorance, Darkeness and Prejudices) should  
 “to their Disadvantage turn out of the Way in  
 “some lesser Matters into By-Paths of their  
 “own; we only make it our hearty Request



*Anno* " to you, that you will trust God with his  
*1659* " Truths and Ways, so far as to suspend all ri-  
 ~~~~~ " gorous Proceedings in corporal Restraints or  
 " Punishments on Persons that dissent from you,  
 " and practise the Principle of their Dissent  
 " without Danger or Disturbance to the Civil  
 " Peace of the Place."

Dated *March* the

25th, 1669.

But this excellent Letter made no Impression  
 upon them; the Prisoners were not released, nor  
 the Execution of the Laws suspended, nay, so  
 far from this, that ten Years after, in the Year  
 1679, a general Synod being called to enquire  
 into the Evils that provoked the Lord to bring  
 his Judgments on *New-England*. They mention  
 these among the rest. ————— \* " Men have set  
 " up their Thresholds by God's Threshold, and  
 " their Posts by God's Post. *Quakers* are false  
 " Worshippers; and such *Anabaptists* as have  
 " risen up among us, in Opposition to the  
 " Churches of the Lord Jesus, receiving into  
 " their Society those that have been for Scandal  
 " delivered unto Satan; yea, and improving  
 " those as Administrators of holy Things, who  
 " have been (as does appear.) justly under  
 " Church-Censures, do no better than set up an  
 " Altar against the Lord's Altar: Wherefore it  
 " must needs be provoking to God, if these  
 " Things be not duly and fully testified against  
 " by every one in their several Capacities re-  
 " spectively."

The *Anabaptists* in both *Englands* were  
 certainly in very low Repute at this Time;  
 their Enemies did not think it worth their while

to confute them with Arguments; but took a shorter Way to ruin them, by as unparallel'd a Piece of Villany as ever was heard of. A Pamphlet was published in the Year 1673, entituled, *Mr. BAXTER Baptized in Blood; or, a sad History of the unparallel'd Cruelty of the ANABAPTISTS in NEW-ENGLAND: Faithfully relating the cruel, barbarous and bloody Murder of Mr. J. BAXTER, an Orthodox Minister, who was kill'd by the ANABAPTISTS, and his Skin most cruelly flea'd off from his Body.* Published by his mournful Brother Benjamin Baxter, living in Fenchurch-street, London. This Pamphlet was licens'd by Dr. Parker, the Archbishop's Chaplain, and cried about Streets by the Hawkers. The Author represents his Brother, as worsting the *Anabaptists* in a publick Disputation at *Boston*; for which, by Way of Revenge, they sent four Russians in Vizors to his House a little Way out of Town, who after they had bound his Wife and three Children, first whipp'd, and then flea'd him alive: The Author concludes, I have publish'd this Narrative, *in perpetuam rei memoriam*, that the World may see the Spirit and Temper of those Men, and that it may stand as an eternal Memorial of their Cruelty and Hatred to all Orthodox Ministers.

WHEN the *Anabaptists* came to examine into this Story, they found it a pure Piece of Forgery, contrived on Purpose to set the Mob upon them; there was no such Person to be found as *Benjamin Baxter* of *Fenchurch-street*; nor was there any such Man as *Jesus Baxter* of *New-England*: The Passengers who came over in the first Ships after the Date of the Fact, made Oath before the Lord Mayor, that they never heard of the Fact, tho' they were at *Boston* 22 Day after it was said to be committed: The Publishers of it were one *Swil* and *Seymour*, who impos'd



*Ann*  
*1669* upon Dr. Parker by forged Letters, as himself own'd by a publick *Advertisement* under his Hand; nay, the King and Council, after an Examination of the whole Affair, did them so much Justice, as to declare in the *Gazette*, that the whole Story was false and fictitious: But to such Extrayagancies do Men sometimes proceed, who will support their Cause by other Methods than the Gospel prescribes.

THE *Quakers* likewise made heavy Complaints about this Time of the Sufferings of their Friends in *New-England*, tho' 'tis certain that none of the *Penal Laws* had been put in Execution against them since the King's Letter in 1661, except that which relates to *Vagabonds*; nor can I find any Examples of those that suffer'd under that Character, except a few itinerant Men and Women, who made it their Business to travel thro' the Country, and alarm the Peoples Minds with Predictions of approaching Judgments on the Province. But the *Quakers* in *England* were so vain, as to expect Relief for their Friends from a Court and Parliament, who were prosecuting them at the same Time, in common with all others that dissented from the Established Church of *England* with the utmost Severities. They therefore drew up the Case of their Friends, under the Title of

*A Short Summary of some of the Sufferings of the People of God, called QUAKERS, in New-England, both former and latter, as represented in a Broadside to the King and Parliament, in the Year 1669.*

Wherein after they had in the most moving Language revived the Memory of the Hardships their Friends had suffered, not only from the Government, but from the Under-Officers and Gaolers

Gaolers under the Protectorship of *Oliver Crom-* *Anna*  
*well*; they go on in the same Strain thus: — *1669*

---\* “ **A**ND now, O King, since the very  
 “ Day the Lord brought thee into  
 “ this Land again, and gave unto thee thy Re-  
 “ gal Power, have they in thy Name made  
 “ strange and cruel Havock of thy true Subjects,  
 “ in putting to Death, and banishing; and in  
 “ thy Name with many torturing Whippings of  
 “ Old and Young at Posts, and at Wheels of  
 “ great Guns, and at Carts Tails, dragging the  
 “ naked Bodies of Parents and Children thro’  
 “ divers long Towns, thro’ the Dirt and Filth of  
 “ their Channels and Cart-Ways; and in thy  
 “ Name commanding one Friend and Brother  
 “ to help imprison the other; yea, in thy Name  
 “ they have lately press’d the Son to help to  
 “ force his tender Father and Mother to Gaol,  
 “ sundry Miles in the Extremity of Winter-Sea-  
 “ son, to the Hazard of their Lives; and such  
 “ as refused to obey their unnatural and abo-  
 “ minable Commands they have fined at their  
 “ Courts; and thus from Court to Court do  
 “ these Monsters of Men, in thy Name, fine  
 “ and break open the Houses of the *Quakers*,  
 “ and rob them of their Goods, and take away  
 “ that they should eat in, and that they should  
 “ drink in, yea, the very Cloaths from their  
 “ Backs in the Winter, and the Bed they should  
 “ lye on, while they keep the Body sundry  
 “ Miles off in Prison, driving Husbands and  
 “ Wives divers Miles to Prison, in Times of  
 “ great Frost and Snow, keeping them close  
 “ Prisoners in a very cold Room, to the en-  
 “ dangering of their Lives, and to the Ruin of

---

\* *New-England judg’d.* p. 478.

Anno  
 1669 “ their Families, had not the Lord preserved  
 “ them. All this, and much more, too tedious  
 “ to mention at this Time, have they done to  
 “ the Servants of the Lord in *New-England*, in  
 “ thy Name, saying, that thou ownest their  
 “ Doings, and esteemeest their Laws as thy  
 “ Laws; and these hard Things have the Ser-  
 “ vants of the Lord patiently suffered, and sus-  
 “ tained at their Hands for no other Cause, but  
 “ for their faithful Obedience to the Spirit of  
 “ the Lord in their Hearts, which Spirit of Ho-  
 “ lineſs teacheth them, that forced Worships  
 “ and Worshippers are both an Abomination to  
 “ the Lord. These few Lines are written not  
 “ from any Desire of the least Revenge from thy  
 “ Hand upon them, but that thou mayest know  
 “ it, and make known thy Dislike of their Wic-  
 “ kedness, that so the Blood of the Innocent  
 “ there, if possible, might not be laid to your  
 “ Charge in the terrible Day of the Lord, in  
 “ which both high and low must come to Judg-  
 “ ment, and receive according to their Deeds  
 “ done in the Body, in which Day the Lord  
 “ will make known in the Sight of all his En-  
 “ mies, his mighty Power for the saving of his  
 “ beloved Ones, and for the delivering and help-  
 “ ing of them, who had no Helper in the  
 “ Earth ”

ONE would be apt to think from this *De-*  
*claration*, that the Government of *New-Eng-*  
*land* continued still to hang the *Quakers*, or  
 banish them upon Pain of Death; whereas no  
 Instances of this Kind are produced: 'Tis  
 true, the Government treated their Itinerants  
 as Vagabonds, and whipp'd them out of the  
 Country; but all the other Laws against them  
 were suspended; and therefore this *Declaration*  
 is



is so far from being a plain State of the Case, <sup>Anno</sup> that it appears to me, to be nothing but an art- <sup>1669</sup> ful Address to the Passions of Men, painting out, the imprisoning of a Man, and whipping him at the Cart's Tail, in such frightful Colours as might strike the Reader's Mind with Indignation and Horror; nor do I find the King or Parliament took the least Notice of it.

THEY inveighed likewise against the Dissenting Ministers of *London*, because when they wrote to *New-England* in Favour of the *Anabaptists*, they made no Mention of *their Friends*; but the Reason of this might be, because the *Quakers* did not think it worth their while to apply to them, for we find afterwards, in the Beginning of the Reign of *Queen Anne*, when some of the leading *Quakers* complained to the Dissenting Ministers of *London*, of some severe Laws of a long standing against their Friends in *New-England*, and desired their kind Interposition to skreen them from the Execution of them, they immediately wrote to *New-England* in their Behalf. The Complaint and Request of the *Quakers* to the Ministers was this, ——— that

“ THERE being several severe Laws  
 “ made by your Brethren in *New-England*, in the *Massachuset-Bay* Province,  
 “ against our Friends the People called *Quakers*, only for their conscientious Dissent  
 “ from the National Way there, if you are  
 “ for Liberty of Conscience to those that  
 “ dissent from you, and are willing our  
 “ Friends in *New-England* should enjoy the like  
 “ Liberty of Conscience there, as you with us  
 “ do here; we request you to manifest your  
 “ Sincerity herein, not only by shewing your  
 “ Dislike hereof to your Brethren there, but  
 “ also

1790 " also by your concurrent Application with us  
 1669 " to the Queen, that she would be favourably  
 " pleased to disallow all such Laws."

Signed

*William Crouch,  
 William Mackett,  
 Theodore Ecclestone,  
 John Whiting,  
 John Field,  
 George Whitehead.*

THE Letter which the Dissenting Ministers of *London* wrote in their Behalf to one of the chief Ministers of *Boston*, to be communicated to his Brethren, was as follows.

*Reverend and Dear Brethren,*

" **Y**OU may from the inclosed gather the  
 " Occasion of our giving you this  
 " Trouble. As for an Application to the Queen  
 " therein desired, we could by no Means count  
 " it agreeable to the Respect we have for our  
 " Brethren of *New-England*, had we thought it  
 " never so suitable to our more private Station  
 " and Ministerial Character; we preferred not to  
 " form a Judgment in the present Cause, which  
 " would not be just, without a full Hearing of  
 " both Sides; much less would we presume to  
 " dictate Measures to you about it.

" We cannot reasonably suppose, but you as  
 " well as we are for Liberty of Conscience, as  
 " full as it is here established and enjoyed, since  
 " you are not so much as charged with having  
 " lately executed those Laws among you which  
 " might now appear to infringe it; whatever  
 " peculiar Reasons your Ancestors had for first  
 " enacting them.

" We



“ WE conclude, you agree with us, that the  
 “ Truth is not to be propagated or maintained,  
 “ by external Force or Violence against Errors  
 “ or Mistakes, but by the gentle Methods of Ar-  
 “ gument and Persuasion; and we cannot but  
 “ judge it disagreeing with the Spirit and Prin-  
 “ ciples of the Gospel, and an Encroachment  
 “ upon the Divine Prerogative, and the un-  
 “ doubted Rights of Mankind, to punish any  
 “ for their conscientious and peaceable Dissent  
 “ from the Established Way of Religion, whilst  
 “ they are not justly chargeable with any Im-  
 “ moralities, or what is plainly destructive of  
 “ Civil Society.

Anno  
 1669  
 ~~~~~

“ SINCE this is our real Sentiments, and  
 “ we are called upon to own it, we think our  
 “ selves obliged thus to express it, for the  
 “ avoiding that odious Imputation of denying  
 “ to others what we claim ourselves. And that  
 “ we may not give any Handle or Colour for  
 “ the undermining your and our common Li-  
 “ berties, we would also do whatever may be  
 “ done with Christian Prudence to engage the  
 “ Affections of those who differ from us; and  
 “ at the same Time testify our Abhorrence of  
 “ the Popish pretended Infallibility and *French*  
 “ Persecution.

“ WE cannot think the Truth to be betray-  
 “ ed, or any Way injured, by the avowing such  
 “ Principles as secure it the Liberty to speak  
 “ for itself, and which, if universally espous'd,  
 “ must open it a Way into all Parts and Places  
 “ of the World.

“ THEREFORE upon the whole, we con-  
 “ ceive, that the Honour of God and the Inte-  
 “ rest of our Redeemer engage us, thus to ap-  
 “ pear for Liberty of Conscience; and we per-  
 “ suade ourselves, you will look upon our  
 “ laying this Matter so freely before you, as an  
 “ Instance

*Answer*  
1669  
w  
“ Instance of our brotherly Affection to you ;  
“ nor is it the wide Distance of Place, or any  
“ little Difference of Sentiment that may pos-  
“ sibly be, which can lessen our Concern for  
“ Members of the same mystical Body of  
“ Christ.

“ WE therefore humbly offer it to the seri-  
“ ous Consideration of yourselves, and by you  
“ to your Fellow-Labourers in the Ministry, to-  
“ gether with other Christian Brethren, what  
“ farther Assurance may be prudently and fitly  
“ given, that in the present Affair you are like-  
“ minded with us, and are not to be out-done  
“ by any in the Evidence and Exercise of a truly  
“ Christian Charity; and that you will ra-  
“ ther employ your own Interest for the pro-  
“ curing some such Liberty as is here allowed,  
“ than that others should be left to try what  
“ their Endeavours can do, which we would  
“ gladly divert them from, in Expectation of  
“ what this Letter may produce.

“ FINALLY, Brethren, you will not forget  
“ that the Apostle tells us, after the mentioning  
“ of Faith, Hope and Charity, that the greatest  
“ of these is Charity; since you are (we doubt  
“ not) guided by that Wisdom from above,  
“ which is not only pure, but peaceable, gentle,  
“ and easy to be entreated, full of Mercy and  
“ good Fruits, without Partiality, and without  
“ Hypocrisy, &c.

*Signed by Eleven of the Chief Dissenting  
Ministers of the Three Denominations  
in London.*

I have now by me *Dr. Increase Mather's* An-  
swer to this Letter, but his Son *Dr. Cotton Ma-*  
*ther* having entred into the Merits of the Cause,  
and given a particular Reply to the several  
Grievances

Grievances of the *Quakers*, I'll present the Reader with an Abstract of his Manuscript now before me. It is impossible, says he, that there should be any severe Laws in Force against the *Quakers*, on the Account of their Religion, because the *Royal Charter* expressly provides, "That  
 "for ever there shall be a Liberty of Conscience al-  
 "lowed in the Worship of God unto all Christians,  
 "except Papists, inhabiting, or which shall inhabit,  
 "or be resident within the said Province or Terri-  
 "tory." And if the general Assembly of the Province should enact any Laws contrary to these express Words of the Charter, they must be brought over to *England*, and have the Royal Assent before they can be put in Execution; so that to complain of such Laws, is in Effect to complain of King *William* and Queen *Anne*, for giving the Royal Assent to them.

BUT what are these severe Laws which the *Quakers* complain of? Why, the first is that which requires all Sorts of Persons of a proper Age, Quality, and Condition to attend the military Exercises on four training Days in a Year, as also to be furnished with Arms and Ammunition fit for Service, on the Penalty of a moderate Fine therein expressed. Now the Government do not insist upon the *Quakers* personal Appearance, but upon their paying the Fine, in case of Default, as many other Gentlemen and Inhabitants of the Country choose to do, but the *Quakers* will do neither; tho' they enjoy the Protection of the Government, they will do nothing towards the Security and Defence of it, which is the more extraordinary; since all the World knows, that the *Quakers* in *Pennsylvania*, in the Year 1692, on Occasion of a Piracy, hired Men with Money, and supplied them with Ammunition and Fire-Arms, to recover their Sloop from the Privateers.



Anno

1669

ANOTHER Branch of the Law provides, *That there be military Watches kept in every Town at such Times, in such Places, and in such Numbers, and under such Regulations as the chief Officer in each Town shall appoint, and that all Persons able of Body, or that are of Estates (not exempt by Law) shall by themselves, or some meet Person in their Stead, attend the same, on the Penalty therein expressed.*" But the *Quakers*, tho' the Country was then at War with the *French* and *Indians*, would neither provide Arms and Ammunition, nor Watch and Ward; they would neither march out against the Enemy, nor keep Garrison at home, nor pay the Penalty which the Law provides for Defaulters. 'Tis true, the *Quakers* pay the Taxes raised by the General Assembly for the Maintenance of the Army, but refuse to submit to the Penalty which the Law inflicts on personal Defaulters in the Train-Bands, which has obliged the Officers sometimes to distrain their Goods; but the *Quakers* have no more Reason to complain of this, than of the Practices of their own Friends in *Pensilvania*, who have not only fined their Brethren, for declining to serve on Juries, but have violently taken away their Goods for Non-payment, tho' they pleaded the Laws of *England*, which exempts *Quakers* from serving on Juries. \*

THE other severe Law which the *Quakers* complain of, is that which obliges them, as well as the other *Inhabitants*, to pay their Proportion of Assessment for the Maintenance of the Ministers legally chosen and settled. This Law extends only to such Places where the Ministers Salary is raised by Assessment, for in *Boston*, and some

---

\* *Trumpet sounding in the Wilderness*, Chap. 10



Anno  
1669  
W

other Places, 'tis raised by a voluntary Contribution, and there nothing is demanded of them. But if this Law was universal, 'tis no greater a Hardship, than they are under from the National Church of *England*; and yet the *Governours* of *New-England* have something more to say for themselves; for in a considerable Part of the Province the original Grants of the Lands were made with this Condition, that there should be certain Taxes paid out of them, as a Sort of *Quit-Rent*, towards the Maintenance of the Established Ministry: Now tho' the *Quakers* are in Possession of some of those Lands, and have raised Estates upon them, yet they deny to pay the *Quit-Rent*, because 'tis to support a Ministry they don't approve of.

Now if this be a true State of the Case, I leave the Reader to judge, whether the *Quakers* had Reason to raise such a Cry of Persecution against the *New-English* Government, or to prefer a Supplication to *Queen Anne* against them, when they enjoyed the same Privileges with the rest of their Fellow-Subjects of that Country.

THE Inhabitants of the Town of *Boston* were now grown so numerous, that the two Meeting-Houses would not hold them, and therefore in the Month of *May* this Year, a third Church was gathered out of the first, and the Reverend Mr. *Thacher* was ordained Pastor of it the 16th of *February* following. This Mr. *Thacher* was both a good Divine, and an excellent Physician; and did a great deal of Good in both Capacities; he was first Minister of *Weymouth*, and from thence removed to the New Church of *Boston*, among whom he spent the rest of his Days; he dyed *October* the 13th, 1678, in the 59th Year of his Age, and was succeeded by the Reverend Mr. *Willard*, sometime Vice-President of *Harvard-College*.

Anno

1669

A LITTLE before the erecting of this new Church at *Boston* died the Reverend Mr. *Richard Mather*, Pastor of the Church at *Dorchester*: He was born at *Lowton* in *Lancashire* in the Year 1596, and educated at *Brazen Nose College* in *Oxford*; afterwards he became Minister and Schoolmaster at *Toxteth Park* in *Lancashire*; but in the Year 1634, he was suspended and silenced for Nonconformity, after he had been a Preacher there for fifteen Years, in all which time he never wore a Surplice. Upon this, he resolved to remove with his Family to *New-England*, and arrived there *August 17, 1635*. The next Year he settled at *Dorchester*, and continued there till he died. He was a Man of an exemplary Life and Conversation, a good Scholar, and a plain, solid, practical Preacher: He writ several Treatises, which were well accepted in those Times, and was generally consulted in all Difficulties relating to Church Government; but at last as he was attending the Synod at *Boston*, of which he was chosen Moderator, he was taken with a Fit of the Stone, which caused a total Suppression of Urine, and in four or five Days put an End to his Life, on the 22<sup>d</sup> of *April 1669*. He left behind him four Sons all educated for the Ministry, Mr. *Samuel Mather*, first Fellow of *Harvard College* in *New-England*, and the first Preacher of the *North Church* in *Boston*, where his Brother and Nephew are now his Successors; he came over to *England* in *Cromwell's* Time, and was chosen one of the Chaplains in *Magdalen-College, Oxon*; he afterwards went over to *Ireland*, and was one of the Senior Fellows of *Trinity College* in *Dublin*; Upon the Uniformity Act in 1662. He left all his Preferments in the Church, and became Pastor of a Dissenting Congregation in *Dublin*, where he died in the Year

1671. He was a good Scholar, and a generous spirited Man. He is the Author of a very valuable Treatise of the *Figures and Types of the Old Testament considered and improved*, published by his Brother after his Death. Anno 1670

Mr. *Nathaniel Mather*, who succeeded his Brother in *Dublin*, but about the Time of the Revolution came over to *England*, and was chosen Pastor of a Dissenting Congregation in *London*, where he dy'd Anno 1697, in great Esteem among his Brethren for Learning and Piety.

Mr. *Eleazar Mather* of *Northampton* in *New-England*; who dy'd young; and Dr. *Increase Mather*, Father of Dr. *Cotton Mather*, Author of the Ecclesiastical History of *New-England*.

THIS Year the Reverend Mr. *John Davenport*, M. A. and B. D. exchanged this Life for a better: He was born at *Coventry* in the Year 1597, and educated at *Brazen Nose College* in *Oxford*. When he left the University, he came to *London*, and after some time was chosen Minister of *Colemanstreet Parish* within the City, where he continued till he began to be obnoxious to his Diocesan for Nonconformity, and then with the Leave of his Parishioners he resigned, and went over to *Holland* in the Year 1633. He preached occasionally to the *English Church* at *Amsterdam* for about three Years but not liking the Country, he came back to *England* in Disguise, and see  
157 embarked with several of his Friends and Acquaintance for *New-England* in the Year 1637. Having refreshed themselves at *Boston*, they travelled to the Western Parts of the Country, and settled at a Place which they called *Newhaven*: Here Mr. *Davenport* continued till the Year 1667, bearing his Part in all the Hardships of the new Plantation, and then removed to *Boston* to succeed the Reverend Mr. *Willson*, where he died of a Fit of an Apoplexy, March the 15th



Anno  
1670

1670, in the 73<sup>d</sup> Year of his Age. He was a great Scholar, an admirable Preacher, and a Man of exemplary Piety and Virtue, he was entrusted by Dr. *Preston* in Conjunction with Dr. *Sibs*, with the Publication of his posthumous Works; but his Notions of Church-Discipline were very rigid, as appears by his Book entitled, *The Power of Congregational Churches*: He was a *Millenarian* being fully persuaded in his own Mind of the Thousand Years Personal Reign of Christ upon Earth; but notwithstanding this or any other singular Notions he might entertain, he was one of the greatest Men that *New-England* ever enjoy'd.

THE *Indians* having been pretty quiet for the last seven Years, began now to enter into a Confederacy against the *English*, under the Protection of *Philip*, Brother of *Alexander*, late Sachem of the *Wompanoags*. *Philip* observ'd with Regret the growing Power of the *English*, and waited but a convenient Opportunity to break with them; It was observ'd about this Time that he kept at a greater Distance from the *English* than usual, and treated them with Contempt; which made the Magistrates of *Plimouth* send for him to *Taunton*. *Philip* was in doubt what to do; but his Affairs being not yet ripe, he submitted. The Commissioners accus'd him of Perficiousness and Breach of Covenant; which he confess'd, and promis'd for Time to come to be subject to the Government of *Plimouth*; to pay 100*l.* Damages; to send five Wolves Heads every Year in Token of his Fealty; not to make War without Approbation of the Government; not to attack the *English* without first endeavouring to accomodate Differences in a peaceable Way; nor to sell any of his Lands without Approbation of the *English* Government:

But



But how he perform'd this Contract the next Chapter will declare. Ann<sup>o</sup>  
1671

HARVARD-College sustained a very great Loss this Year in the Death of the Reverend Mr. *Charles Chauncy*, the President of it: He was born in *Hertfordshire* in the Year 1589. bred up at *Westminster-School*, and from thence sent to *Trinity-College* in *Cambridge*, where he proceeded Batchellor of Divinity, and was chosen *Greek Professor*. When he left the University, he was chosen first Minister of *Murston*, and afterwards of *Ware*, his Ministry having been blessed in both those Places, for the Conversion of many Souls; but refusing to read the Book of Sports; he was suspended by Bishop *Laud*, and silenced. Mr. *Chauncy* had been in the High Commission Court several Years before, according to Mr. *Rushworth*, who in his Collections for the Year 1629. gives this Account of him. “ Mr. *Charles Chauncy*, says he, Minister of *Ware*, using some Expressions in his Sermon, *That Idolatry was admitted into the Church; That the Preaching of the Gospel would be suppressed; That there is much Atheism, Popery, Arminianism and Heresy crept into the Church*: And these being look'd upon to raise a Fear among the People that some Alteration of Religion would ensue, he was questioned in the High Commission, and by Order of that Court the Cause was referr'd to the Bishop of *London*, being his Ordinary; who order'd him to make a Submission in *Latin*. ” Which he accordingly did, tho' afterwards he repented bitterly of it. Dr. *Mather* observes that there were but few that suffer'd more for *Nonconformity* than he, by Fines, by Goals, by Necessity to abscond, and at last by an Exile from his Native Country. He arrived at *New-England* a few Days before the great Earthquake, which happen'd *January* the 1st,

Anno 1638. and settled at *Scituate* in *Plimouth* Colony,  
 1671 where he continued twelve Years; but the Epi-  
 scopal Power being destroy'd in *England*, and his  
 People of *Ware* inviting him to return home, he  
 was come as far as *Boston* in his Way to *England*,  
 when the *Curators* of *Harvard-College*, being ve-  
 ry unwilling the Country should lose so valuable  
 a Person, press'd his Acceptance of the Presi-  
 dentship of the College, in the room of Mr. *Dun-*  
*star* removed for *Antipadobaptism*. Mr. *Chauncey*  
 at length yielded to their Importunities, and  
 spent the rest of his Days in the Education of  
 the Youth of the Country. He was an excellent  
 Scholar, and an hard Student, even in his Old  
 Age: It was his constant Custom to rise at Four  
 of the Clock in the Morning Winter and Sum-  
 mer, and having spent about an Hour in his  
 Closet he visited the College Hall, and after a  
 short Prayer expounded a Chapter of the Old  
 Testament, which one of the Students construed  
 out of the *Hebrew*, and in the Evening he did the  
 like with one out of the New Testament. His  
 natural Temper was hasty and passionate, but  
 he endeavoured by Watching and Prayer to cor-  
 rect it as much as possible. He continued his  
 Labours to the very last, even when his Years  
 and Infirmities required a Recess: When his  
 Friends desired him to spare himself, he replied  
 with the Emperor, *Oportet Imperatorem stantem*  
*meri*. But at last, on the Day of Commence-  
 ment, in the Year 1671. finding himself almost  
 worn out, he made a Farewel Oration to the  
 College, wherein he took a solemn Leave of his  
 Friends, and on the 2d of *February* following he  
 died, in the 82d Year of his Age, after he had  
 been President of the College almost Seventeen  
 Years. When he was drawing towards his End  
 Mr. *Urian Oakes*, who had been praying by his  
 Bedside, desired him to give some Sign of his  
 Assurance

Ann  
1672  
~

Assurance of entring into Eternal Glory; upon which the speechless Old Man lifted up both his Hands as high towards Heaven as he could, and so expired. He left behind him six Sons, all bred up to the Ministry in *Harvard-College*, the Eldest of which was the Reverend Mr. *Isaac Chauncey*, M. D. and late Pastor of a Congregational Church in *London*.

TOWARD the latter End of this Year died Mr. *Richard Bellingham*, Governor of the *Massachusetts* Colony: He was bred a Lawyer, and was a Gentleman of severe Principles against the *Anabaptists* and *Quakers*, but of uncorrupted Integrity, being noted for his perpetual Hatred of a Bribe. He lived 'till he was above Eighty Years of Age; and was succeeded in his Government by Mr. *John Leverett*.

UPON the Death of Mr. *Chauncey* the Curators chose Dr. *Leonard Hoar* President. This Gentleman after his Education in *Harvard-College* travelled into *England*, and commenced Doctor of Physick in the University of *Cambridge*; but being invited to be Pastor of the South Church in *Boston*, he returned to *New-England* with a Design to settle with them; but Mr. *Chauncey* dying just after his Arrival, Dr. *Hoar* was thought the fittest Person to succeed him in the College, which he accordingly did, and gave up his Pretensions to the Church at *Boston*: But tho' the Doctor was an excellent Scholar, and a good Christian, he wanted the Art of Government, which made the Students so uneasy under him, as at last to desert the College in a Body. Their Complaints being laid before some considerable Persons in the Neighbourhood, they gave their Opinions in favour of the Students, and the President fell under their Displeasure so far as to be obliged to resign his Place in the Year 1675. the Grief of which



*Anno* threw him into a Consumption, and in six Months  
*1672* put an End to his Life.

IN his Time the Number of Students was so considerably encreased, that it was judged necessary to enlarge the College, the present Buildings not being sufficient to receive them, and Contribution was accordingly made thro'out the whole Colony for this Work, which in the whole amounted to 1895 *l.* 2 *s.* 9 *d.* Eight Hundred of which was gather'd out of *Boston*. With this Money, and a few other Assistances, a new College was built, wearing still the Name of the old One, tho' the old One is now quite demolish'd and destroy'd.

*Anno* THERE was a remarkable Execution this Sum-  
*1673* mer at *Boston* of some *English* Pirates belonging to a Vessel bound from the *Streights* to *London* \*, who having entred into a Conspiracy to seize the Ship, took occasion to quarrel with the Master and some of his Officers, and turn'd them out into the Long-Boat with a small Quantity of Provisions, about an hundred Leagues to the Westward of the *Spanish* Coast, and then tack'd about with the Ship for *New-England*. The Master and his Company in the Long-Boat were forc'd to drive before the Wind, and the Providence of God so order'd it, that they likewise made the *New-England* Shore, and arriv'd all safe at *Boston*, except one Man, who died of the Hardships that he suffer'd in the Way. Both the Master and his Ship's Crew were surpriz'd to see each others Faces again; but the former making his Application to the Government, got them arrested, and the Ringleaders of them hang'd. The Chief of these Pirates was one *Toreft*, who, tho' a brave and stout Man, yet



when he came to dye, utter'd these Words: *Anno*  
*I have been among drawn Swords, flying Bullets and* <sup>1673</sup>  
*roaring Cannons, amongst all which I knew not what*  
*Fear meant; but now I have dreadful Apprehensions*  
*of the dreadful Wrath of God in the other World*  
*which I am going into; my Soul within me is amaz'd*  
*at it.*

IN the Spring of this Year died Mr. *Thomas*  
*Prince*, Governor of *Plimouth* Colony: He was  
 the greatest Patron of Learning that the Colony  
 ever had, and took a great deal of Pains to pro-  
 cure Revenues for the setting up Grammar-  
 Schools in all Parts of the Country: He was  
 sometimes chosen Governor during Mr. *Brad-*  
*ford's* Life, but constantly after his Death as long  
 as he liv'd: He was a Man of uncorrupted Ho-  
 nesty and Integrity, greatly beloved by his Coun-  
 try, and universally lamented when he died,  
 which was *March* the 29th, 1673, about the  
 73d Year of his Age.





## C H A P. IX.

*The Rise and Progress of the War with Philip King of the Woinpanoags. He is besieged in a Swamp, but escapes. The Nipmuck-Indians joyn him, and rout the English near Quaboag. The Connecticut-Indians rise, and destroy the Frontier-Garrisons. The Narrhaganset-Indians break the Peace. The English besiege their Fort, and after a bloody Fight take it by Storm. Philip's Stratagem to engage the Maquas in the War, accidentally discover'd; which brought that powerful Nation upon himself. His Men are dispirited, and desert. Philip betray'd, and kill'd. His Character. War with the Eastern-Indians. The English make a Dishonourable Peace with them. The Fidelity of the Indian Converts. The Deaths, and Characters of some considerable Persons in Church and Stat. King Charles takes away their Charter.*

Anno  
1674



NEW ENGLAND had now enjoyed a profound Tranquility for almost 40 Years; in which Time the English perfected all their Settlements, and began to appear formidable to their Neighbours. The Natives might easily have crushed them at the Beginning, and preserved  
to

to themselves the Sovereignty of their own Country, but they were a disconcerted Body; and the *English* were so wise as to play them one against the other. The *Pequots* first declared War with the *Narrhagansets*; these to be reveng'd of their Enemies, made an Alliance with the *English* to destroy their own Countrymen, 'till at last both were swallowed up by the Conqueror: The *Narrhagansets* preserved themselves the longest, by their Adherence to the *English*, who frequently assisted them against their Enemies; but at the same Time kept them so much in Awe, as to oblige them, upon any Cause of Complaint against the *English*, to repair to the Governour, and endeavour to compose Matters in an amicable Way, before they pretended to do themselves Justice by any open Acts of Hostility. The *Indians* began to see their Error when it was too late, for no single Nation of them was now a Match for the *English*, nor could they make Alliances with one another without being discovered by the Missionaries.

BUT notwithstanding all this, *Philip* King of the *Wompanoags*, a Nation bordering on the County of *Plimouth*, a bold and daring Prince, having a mortal Hatred to the *English*, and fearing to be brought under their Yoke, resolved to oppose their growing Power; for this End, he invited as many of the Subjects of other *Indian* Princes as were willing to come to him, and gave them Arms. He sent a secret Embassy to the *Narrhagansets*, to offer them an Offensive and Defensive Alliance; but they as well as the other *Indian* Nations were afraid to declare openly for him, 'till they saw the Success of his Arms.

IN the mean Time *Philip's* Preparations were discovered to the *English* by *John Sausaman*, the Son of an *Indian* Convert, who had been educated in the Christian Faith, but when he came

to



Anno  
1674

to judge for himself, returned to the Religion of his Ancestors, and became Secretary to *Philip*. After some Time he deserted his Master, and returning to the *English* he changed his Religion again, and gave such Signs of Sincerity, that he was admitted to the *Communion* in one of the *Indian Churches*, and commissioned to be a Preacher and Missionary, for the Conversion of his Countrymen to Christianity: As this *Sausaman* was travelling up and down the Country upon his Missionary Work, he got Information of *Philip's* Designs, and went immediately to the Governor of *Plimouth*, and made a full Discovery of them. *Philip* was quickly informed both of the Treason and Traytor, and took such Measures upon it as quickly cost the poor Man his Life; for, as he was travelling the Country alone, in the Winter-time, two or three of *Philip's* Men lay in Ambush for him, and murder'd him, as he was going over a Pond, and to conceal the Fact, cut a Hole in the Ice, and thrust his Body into it, leaving his Hat and Gun on the Out-side, that the World might think he had slip'd in and drowned himself. When it was rumoured abroad that *Sausaman* was missing, some of his Neighbours went out in Search of him, and finding his Hat and Gun by the Pond, they drew out his Body, and buried it; but the Government of *Plimouth* suspecting that he was murdered, order'd his Body to be dug up, and impannel'd a Jury to sit upon it, who, upon examining the Body, found the Neck broke, the Head very much swelled, and Bruizes in several other Parts, whereupon they gave it as their Opinion, that he was murder'd. Dr. Mather says, that when *Tobias*, one of King *Philip's* Counsellors, who was suspected of the Murder, approached the Body it tell a bleeding, and that upon repeating the Experi-

peri-



periment several Times, it always bled afresh; but the Justice of Peace did not think fit to commit him upon this Evidence, 'till one *Pattucksin*, an *Indian* came in and swore, that he saw him with his Son, and another *Indian* called *Mattashinnamy* kill *Sausaman*; upon this they were all three apprehended, and after a fair Trial for their Lives by a Jury, consisting half of *English*, and half of *Indians*, were found guilty; and tho' they denied the Fact upon the Ladder, yet the last of them happening to break or slip the Rope, confessed before he was turned off the second Time, that the other two *Indians* who had suffered, did really murder *Sausaman*, but himself was only a Spectator of it.\*

*Philip's* Resentments boiled in his Breast at these Proceedings of the *English*, for tho' he did not immediately break with them, yet he allowed his People to gather together in a tumultuous Manner, and insult them as they were at Work in the Field, and when Complaint was made of the Disorders of his People, and Messengers sent to desire him to prevent the like for the future; he received them with Disdain, and sent them home with a surly Answer. Things continued in this uncertain Posture 'till the Month of *June*, when some of *Philip's* Men rifled several Houses in the Plantation near *Mount Hope*, the Place of *Philip's* chief Residence; upon which one of the *English* fired his Gun, and wounded an *Indian*. The Governour of *Plimouth* hearing of these Disorders, sent out a Party of Men for the Defence of those Parts, and proclaimed a Fast to be observed throughout the whole Colony on the 24th of *June*; but

---

\* Hubbart's Narrative of the Troubles with the Indians. p. 16.

*Ann.*  
1675 as the Inhabitants of *Swanzy* were going home from their Prayers, a Party of *Indians* that lay in Ambuscade, fired upon them out of the Woods, killed one of their Company, and wounded another; the frightened People immediately dispatched two Men for a Surgeon, but as they were hastning to the Town the Messengers were intercepted by another Party of *Indians*, and killed; the same Night the *Indians* entred the Town of *Swanzy*, killed six Men, and then retired into the Woods.

THE War being thus begun, the Governour of *Plimouth* sent Advice of it to the *Massachusetts*, and the other *United Colonies*, demanding their Assistance, according to the Articles of Union between them: The *Massachusetts-Colony* dispatched away \* Capt. *Thomas Prentice* with a Troop of Horse, and Capt. *Daniel Henchman* with a Company of Foot who were followed by a Company of Volunteers under the Command of Capt. *Samuel Mosely*. They joyned the *Plimouth* Forces under Capt. *Cudworth* at *Swanzy*, on the 28th of *June*; and that very Evening a Party of twelve Men were sent toward *Mount Hope* to look out the Enemy, who after they have made one Discharge at them from behind the Bushes, whereby they killed one of the *English*, and wounded another, took to their Heels, and fled out of Sight. Next Morning the whole Army marched towards the Head-Quarters of the Enemy, and offered them Battle, but as soon as they had received one of our Fires, they abandoned their whole Territory to our just Revenge. The Army immediately took Possession of *Mount Hope*, and ravaged the adjacent Country; in their March they found the mangled

---

\* *Ibid.* p. 17.

Carcasses of some of their Countrymen, whose Heads were stuck upon Poles, Bibles torn in Pieces, empty *Wigwams*, or Cottages, and in a Word, all the Marks of a hasty Retreat; they pursued the Enemy several Days together, and skirmished with them in the Woods till they cleared that Part of the Country pretty well of them.

WE have already observed, that *Philip* had been tampering with the *Narrhagansets*, and the *English* were very jealous of them, for tho' they had not appeared openly in Arms; yet they had secretly encouraged *Philip* in his Designs, and by their unusual Carriage towards the *English* at this Time gave Ground to believe, that they waited but a convenient Opportunity to declare themselves: All the *Massachuset*-Forces therefore were ordered to march over into their Country, not to commit any Acts of Hostility, but to demand peremptorily their renouncing all Alliances with *Philip*, and their entering into an offensive and defensive Alliance with the *English*; this wise Piece of Conduct frightened the *Sachems* of the *Narrhagansets* into a thorough Submission for the present, insomuch that on the 15th of *July* they signed and sealed Articles of Peace, wherein they promised, not only to forbear all Acts of Hostility against the *English*, but to assist them to their uttermost in destroying *Philip* and his Adherents, to seize and deliver up all the Subjects of *Philip* that should come into their Territories, and to restore all stolen Goods; for the Performance of which they delivered up some of the *Sachem's* near Kinsmen for Hostages. The *English* to encourage them in the Prosecution of the War, promised them twenty good Coats for *Philip's* Head, and for every one of his Subjects that they should deliver up to the *English* alive two Coats,



*Anno.* Coats, and dead one Coat; these Articles were  
 1675 signed by seven *English* and four *Indians* in the  
 Name of *Canonicus*, and five other *Sachems* of the  
*Narrhaganset* Country.

WHILE these Things were doing, Captain  
*Cudworth* with the *Plimouth* Forces was sent to  
 secure the *Pocasset-Indians*, but when he came  
 into their Country he found them in Arms; *Capt.*  
*Fuller* and *Capt. Church* with two small  
 Detachments had been scouring the Woods, but  
 were overpowered by an Army of *Indians* twenty  
 Times superiour in Number to themselves: *Fuller*  
 and his Men fled to a little House by the  
 Water-side, which they made a shift to defend  
 till a Sloop from *Rhode-Island* fetched them off;  
*Capt. Church* with fifteen Men was surrounded  
 in a Pease-field by two hundred of the Enemy,  
 where notwithstanding the Inequality of Num-  
 bers he fought with invincible Resolution and  
 Bravery for a great while; at last he got to the  
 Water-side, and defended himself behind a Bar-  
 ricado of Stones till he was brought off in a  
 Sloop to *Rhode-Island* without the Loss of one of  
 his Men: When he had refreshed his Men a  
 few Days in the Island he passed over again to  
 the Continent, and borrowing three Files of  
 Men from the *Massachusetts*-Forces he engaged  
 the *Pocasset-Indians* again, and slew fourteen or  
 fifteen of them upon the Spot, which struck such  
 a Terrour into the rest that they fled into the  
 Woods, and appeared no more in a Body in the  
 open Country.

THE Detachments that were sent against the  
*Pocasset*s joyn'd the Army again as soon as the  
 Treaty with the *Narrhagansets* was finish'd, and  
 Information being given at the same Time by  
 some Deserters that *Philip* and his Men were in  
 a certain Swamp upon *Pocasset-Neck*, about 18  
 Miles distant, it was determin'd in a Council of  
 War



War to besiege him in it. The Army broke up immediately from *Taunton* July the 18th, and march'd directly to the Place. The Soldiers bravely entred the Thicket, but the Enemy was prepar'd to receive them, for no sooner were they entred a few Paces but the *Indians* fir'd upon them from behind the Bushes, and at one Discharge kill'd five of the *English*, and mortally wounded six or seven more. They then deserted their Wigwams and retired deeper into the Swamp, the *English* likewise retreated out of Danger, finding it impossible to attack them in the Swamp without hazarding the Loss of the whole Army; it was resolved therefore to reduce them by a Blockade, and accordingly two hundred Men were posted at the several Avenues of the Thicket, and the rest of the Forces sent away to the Relief of *Mendham*, where the *Nipmuck-Indians* were making terrible Spoil and Havock; *Philip* himself was in the Thicket, and must have surrendered if the *English* durst have ventured in to attack him, but they were willing to spare the Lives of their Men, not doubting but they should have him when his Provisions were spent. *Philip* indeed was in great Perplexity, but being made desperate, he formed a Stratagem, whereby he and some of his best fighting Men gave his Enemies the Slip; there was a large River which ran by the Side of the Thicket; which a Party of *English* posted on the other Side were to observe, but *Philip* and his Men having cut down some Rafts of Timber out of the Woods, took the Advantage of a low Tide, and in the dead of the Night swam cross the River upon them without being observed, and escaped into the *Nipmuck* Country: About one hundred poor Wretches that were left behind came out the next Day, and surrendred at Discretion. But the

*English*

*Anno* English knew nothing of *Philip's* Escape 'till the  
 1675 Morning, when a Party was sent out after him,  
 who by the Direction of the *Monhegin-Indians*  
 pursued him till Night, but could not come up  
 with him, only they slew about thirty of his  
 Men, who being fatigued with their last Night's  
 Expedition were dropp'd by the Way.

THE Seat of the War was now carried into  
 the *Nipmuck* Country, who inhabited the  
 Inland Parts between the Sea-Coast and *Con-*  
*necticut*-River, within the Jurisdiction of the  
*Massachuset-Colony*. The *Nipmuck-Indians* had  
 killed four or five of the Inhabitants of *Mend-*  
*ham*, July 14, which was the first Act of Hosti-  
 lity within the *Massachuset-Patent*; Capt. *Hut-*  
*chinson* and Capt. *Wheeler* were sent hereupon to  
 prevent further Mischief, and invite the Na-  
 tives to a Treaty. They seemed at first incli-  
 nable to Peace, and fixed a Time for signing  
 it; but *Philip* and his Men coming into  
 these Parts before-hand spirited them up  
 to a general Revolt, insomuch that none of  
 them came to the Place of Treaty; but when  
 Capt. *Hutchinson* with a small Party rid up into  
 the Country to see if he could learn the Mean-  
 ing of it, they discharged a Volley of Shot  
 upon him from an Ambuscade, whereby the  
 Captain himself was mortally wounded, and  
 eight of his Men shot dead upon the Spot; the  
 rest fled back to *Quaboag*, or *Brookfield*, a little  
 Village about 60 or 70 Miles from *Boston* on the  
 Road to *Connecticut*, and put the Inhabitants into  
 such a Consternation, that they all to the Num-  
 ber of about 70 retired into one House resolving  
 to live and dye together. *Philip* with his new-  
 raised Army pursued them at the Heels, and  
 coming to the Village set all the Houses on Fire,  
 and assaulted that in which all the Inhabitants  
 were inclosed; they poured in Shot continually  
 upon

upon the Besieged for two Days together, and attempted six several Times to burn the House, one while they threw Fire-brands into it, made of Rags tied to the End of Poles, and dipp'd in burning Brimstone; another Time they filled a Cart with Flax, Hemp; and other combustible Matter, and pushed it on with long Poles spliced one to another: This Device would certainly have taken Effect, if a great Storm of Rain had not suddenly extinguished the Fire in the Machine before it took the House; the besieged behaved themselves with the utmost Bravery, and were at last relieved by Major *Willard*, who hearing by Accident of their Distress, at 30 Miles Distance marched immediately with a Company of forty eight Men, and falling upon the *Indians* in the Night, killed about 80 of them, drove the rest back into the Woods, and so raised the Siege of this little *Hovel*, for it deserved no better a Name.

*Philip* with his Tawnies retired still to the Westward, whereupon Capt. *Lathrop*, and Capt. *Beers* being joyned with the *Connecticut*-Forces under Major *Trent*, went out to observe him; and the Governour who heard that the Savages upon that River were in Motion, sent a Party of Soldiers with an Officer to demand Hostages for their peaceable Behaviour; but *Philip* had been there beforehand, and prevailed with the *Indians* not only to mutiny against their King, but upon his peremptory Refusal to declare against the *English*, to kill him, after which they abandon'd their Houses, with a Design to joyn *Philip* and the *Nipmuck-Indians*; the Captains *Lathrop* and *Beers* pursued and overtook them at a Place called *Sugar-Loaf-Hill* ten Miles above *Hatfield*, where they skirmished with them, and killed 26 of their Number with the Loss of 9 or 10 of their own, but the rest of them escaped to *Philip*.



Anno  
1675  
W

THUS this bloody War spread over all *New-England*, the *Indians* in all the several Colonies being now in Arms; *September* the first they laid all the Houses of *Deerfield*-Plantation in Ashes, and forced the Inhabitants to shut themselves up within the Fortification of a poor Work which they had raised for their Defence: Two or three Days after they slew eight Men in the Woods at *Squakbeag*, without attempting the Town; upon which Capt. *Beers* with 36 Men was sent to fetch off that, and some other Frontier Garrisons, but he was intercepted by a large Troop of Savages, and himself with 20 of his Men cut in Pieces after they had fought to the last, with the utmost Resolution and Bravery; the rest escaped to *Hadly*, the barbarous Savages having cut off the Heads of the slain, stuck some of them on Poles by the High-way, and hung up others by the Jaws on Boughs of Trees. Major *Treat* with a larger Body of Men being sent a few Days after to perform what Capt. *Beers* had undertaken was entertained with this melancholy Sight in his March.

BUT tho' the Inhabitants of these Plantations were brought off, their Retreat was so sudden that they could not carry their Harvest along with them, Capt. *Lathrop* therefore with about 80 Men went with Carts to fetch off the Corn that lay threshed in *Deerfield*; but on *September* the 18th they were surrounded by a Body of 800 *Indians*; the Captain thinking he should succeed best by fighting after the Manner of the Savages, sheltering his Men behind Trees, exposed them to inevitable Ruin, for the *Indians* being good Marks-men shot them down one after another; whereas if he had kept his Men together in a Body they might have broke thro' to some of the neighbouring Garrisons; but this fatal Mistake of the Captain's cost him not only  
his



his own Life, but the Lives of above 70 of his Followers, the Flower of the County of *Essex*, and as brave young Men as ever drew a Sword; this was the greatest Loss that ever befell the *New-England* Christians till that Time. Capt. *Mosely* hearing the Noise of the Fire hastned to relieve *Lathrop*, but came too late; however he charged thro' and thro' the Barbarians five or six Times, and with a Handful of Men killed above 100 of them, losing no more than two of his own, and kept the Field till he had buried the slain.

THE *Indians* encouraged with this Success fell upon *Springfield* (the Hostages which they had given for their preserving the Peace, having first made their Escape) and burned 32 Houses, amongst which was Mr. *Glover's* the Minister's with his well-furnish'd Library; they had infallibly massacred all the Inhabitants if an honest *Indian* called *Toto* had not discover'd their Design just Time enough for them to retire into the fortified Parts of the Town, where they made a shift to defend themselves, till Major *Treat*, Major *Pinchon*, and Capt. *Appleby* came in with their Forces, and put a Stop to the Fury of the insulting Enemy.

IT was now Time for the Council of *New-England* to consider of the State of the War, and enter upon such Measures, as by the Blessing of God might put a speedy End to it; they appointed therefore a Committee of Ministers and Gentlemen to enquire into the crying Sins of the Land, and draw up a Scheme for the Reformation of Manners; the Magistrates in the mean Time ordered all their Forces in the *Connecticut-Colony* to rendezvous about *Hadly*, *Northampton* and *Hatfield*, for the Security of those Places; of which the *Indians* having no Notice, 800 of them breaking in,

*Anno* upon *Hatfield*, *October* the 19<sup>th</sup>, met with such  
 1675 a warm Reception, that they were not only  
 beat out of the Town, but pushed into the River, where a great many of them lost their Lives. This resolute Repulse gave such a Check to the Enemies Courage, that they appeared no more in a Body in the Western Plantations for a considerable Time, but as the Winter came on they took Shelter among the *Narrhagansets*, who were so far from delivering them up to the *English*, as they were bound to do by their late Treaty, that they received them with open Arms, and gave them the best Entertainment they were capable of

THIS Conduct of the *Narrhaganset-Indians* was voted by the Commissioners of the United Colonies at *Boston* a Breach of the Peace; and certain Information being given, that they intended to begin a War in the Spring, the Commissioners resolved to be beforehand with them, and accordingly ordered *Jesiah Winslow* Governor of *Plimouth-Colony* with a thousand Men, 527 of which were the *Massachusset-Forces*, the rest *Plimouth* and *Connecticut*, to march immediately into their Country, and destroy it with Fire and Sword. \*

*December* the 12<sup>th</sup> the General pass'd over *Patuxet-River* with the *Plimouth* and *Massachusset-Forces*, and took 36 Prisoners, among whom was one *Peter*, who having received some Disgust from his Countrymen list'd himself among the *English*, and undertook to be their Guide: *December* the 14<sup>th</sup> they burnt 150 Wigwams, killed seven of the Enemy, and took eight Prisoners: On the 16<sup>th</sup> Capt. *Prentice* with his Troop being sent to *Petequamsfot*, brought back

---

\* Hubbard, p. 47.

News, that the Enemy had burnt *Jerry Bull's* <sup>Anno</sup> Garrison-House, killed ten Men, and five Wo- <sup>1675</sup> men and Children; the same Day the *Connecticut-Forces* joyn'd the Army to the Number of 300 *English*, and 150 *Mohegin-Indians*: December the 18th they marched 16 Miles up into the Country to a Fort which the *Indians* had raised upon an Island of about five or six Acres in the midst of an horrid Swamp, and fortify'd with Palisadoes, and a Wall of about a Rod thick; \* the Entrance into the Fort was over a long Tree laid a-cross the Water, over which but one Man could pass at a Time: It was thought impracticable to attack the Fort at this narrow Passage, but they could find no other, till *Peter* who was acquainted with all the Avenues shewed them a large Breach, which was only filled up with long Trees to the Height of four or five Foot from the Ground, and here the Enemy had built a *Block-House* which commanded the Breach, from whence they could pour in Vollies of Shot upon such as should venture to mount it: However the *English* found they must storm the Fort in this Place, or not at all, and having agreed upon it in a Council of War, the Army was marshall'd in the following Order; Capt. *Mosely* and Capt. *Davenport* led up the Van of the *Massachuset-Forces*, Capt. *Gardner* and Capt. *J. hnson* were in the Centre, Major *Applexon* and Capt. *Oliver* brought up the Rear. General *Winslow* with the *Plimouth-Forces* marched in the Centre, and Major *Treat*, the Captains *Sillery*, *Gallop*, *Mason*, *Watts*, and *Marshall* with the *Connecticut-Forces* brought up the Rear of the whole Body. They entred the Swamp, or

---

\* Hubbard, p. 52.



Anno

1675

Thicket about one a-Clock, and pressed forward to the Breach which they mounted with great Bravery and Resolution, receiving the Fire of the Enemy from the Block-House all the while; six valiant Captains dyed in the Breach, namely, *Davenport, Gardner, Johnson, Gallep, Siley* and *Marshall*; but the Fall of these Men served only to enrage the Soldiers, who leap'd boldly over the Trees into that Spot of Ground where Death with all its Terrors was to be faced; they beat the Enemy from one cover'd Way to another till they had driven them out of all their Fences, and made them fly into a vast Cedar Swamp at some Distance off; after which they set Fire to the Fort, and levell'd the Fortifications; 700 fighting *Indians* perished in this Action, among whom was above twenty of their chief Captains, besides 300 which dyed of their Wounds, and a vast Number of old Men, Women and Children, who had crouded into the Fort, as thinking it impregnable; and it must be allowed to have been the best Fortification the *Indians* were ever Masters of, and the Loss of it gave them such a terrible Blow, as they were never able to recover; the *English* lost in this Gallant Action six Captains, and 85 Soldiers, besides 150 wounded: As soon as the Action was over, which was a little before Night, the General rallied all his Forces together without Loss of Time, and having taken Care of his wounded Men, he marched back his whole Army in a frosty Night 16 Miles to their Head-Quarters; where they refreshed themselves for some Days, and then went into Winter-Quarters.

THE Winter was spent in fruitless Treaties about a Peace which came to nothing, the *English* in the mean Time scoured the Woods as well as they could, but the *Indians* who were swift



swift of Foot, and capable of enduring the Hardships of a Winter-Campaign, did a great deal of Mischief \* to the Frontier-Towns, in the frosty Weather ; especially after they had received Recruits from the *French* at *Canada* ; for tho' the two Kings of *England* and *France* were at Peace, yet the Governour of *Canada* thought it for his Master's Interest to support the *Indians* against the *English*, in Order to prevent their growing too powerful, even with the Breach of the publick Faith. With these Recruits they burnt the Town of *Mendham*, and laid it in Ashes after the Inhabitants had deserted it. *January* the 27th they carried off 200 Sheep, 50 Head of Neat Cattle, and 15 Horses from Mr. *Carpenter's* Farm. On *February* the 10th they plunder'd the Town of *Lancaster*, burned several Houses, killed and carried into Captivity 42 Persons, among whom was the Minister Mr. *Rolandson's* Wife and Children, who was then at *Boston* soliciting Succours, but upon his Return found his House and Library in Ashes, and which was worse, all his Family carried into Slavery by the *Barbarians*, who had been compelled to quit the Place some Days before by Capt. *Wadsworth* : From hence they went to *Marlborough*, *Sudbury* and *Chelmsford*, and did all the Mischief that their hasty March would allow. *February* the 21st, 2 or 300 of them surprized *Medfield*, about 20 Miles from *Boston*, burnt half the Town, and killed 20 of the Inhabitants ; the like Damage they did to *Weymouth* : In the Beginning of *March* they burnt the whole Town of *Groton* to the Ground, and called out insolently to the *English* in the Garrison, *What will you do for an House to*

---

\* *Ibid.* p.17.

*Anno* pray in, now we have burnt your Meeting House?  
 1675 *March* the 14th they broke through the Palli-  
 sadoes which were made for the Defence of  
*Northampton*, burn'd five Houses, and killed five  
 Persons, but were prevented from doing further  
 Mischief by the seasonable Arrival of Major  
*Thomas Savage*, with a strong Party of *English*  
 under his Command. Upon this the Enemy  
 left this Part of the Country for the present,  
 and cross'd over into the Colony of *Plimouth*,  
 where the Seat of the War was at first: Here  
 they surprized Part of the Town of *Plimouth* it-  
 self, and murdered two Families in the Night:  
 On the 17th of *March* they laid the whole  
 Town of *Warwick* in Ashes, except one House,  
 and then retired into the *Woods*.

THESE Excursions of the Enemy alarm'd  
 the whole Colony, so that they ordered out Capt.  
*Pierce* immediately with 50 *English* and 20  
*Christian Indians* to pursue the Incendiaries;  
 but on the 26th of *March* he fell into an Am-  
 buscade, at which the *Indians* are very dex-  
 trous; and after a bloody Fight wherein he  
 killed 140 of the Enemy, being overpowered  
 with Numbers, himself and his whole Army  
 were cut off, except one *Englishman* and twelve  
*Indians*. The same Day another Party of Sa-  
 vages laid the Town of *Marlborough* in Ashes;  
 on the 28th they burnt 40 Houses at *Rehoboth*, and  
 the next Day about 30 more at *Providence*, for  
 the Inhabitants of these Towns not being strong  
 enough to resist the Fury of the Enemy, retired  
 into their Garrisons, and so left their Houses  
 open to their Insults. In the Beginning of *A-*  
*pril* they committed terrible Cruelties at *Chelms-*  
*ford* and *Andover*; and tho' 140 of the Inhabi-  
 tants of *Sudbury* sallied out upon them, and kil-  
 led 30 out of 300 in one Night, yet upon the  
 18th of this Month they renewed their Attack  
 upon

upon the Place, burnt several Houses, and cut off 12 Men who were coming from *Concord* to their Assistance: The Captains *Wadsworth* and *Brattlebank* hearing of these Murders and Devastations, made a long March with 70 Men for their Relief, but the *Indians* having Notice of it, surrounded them in the Woods with 500 Men, and after an obstinate Fight wherein they lost 120 Men, killed the Captains, and 50 of their Men on the Spot, and took five or six Prisoners, whom they put to Death with most exquisite Torments, making them first run the Gantlet, after which they threw hot Ashes upon them, and cutting out Pieces of their Flesh, put fire into their Wounds, and roasted them alive.

THUS the *Indians* continued prosperous during the whole Winter, wherein the Cold was so extreme, that the *English* durst hardly look out of their Quarters; many Days of Fasting and Prayer were kept both in *New* and *Old England* by the Dissenters for their distressed Brethren; and as the Spring advanced it pleased Almighty God to give a remarkable Turn to their Affairs. The first Blow that was given them was by Capt. *Dennison*, who at the Head of 66 *English*, and about 100 Confederate-*Indians* took and slew 76 of the Enemy in the Month of *April*, among whom was some of their chief Princes; and about the same Time a Party of *Connecticut* Soldiers took and slew 44 of the Enemy without any Loss: Among the Prisoners was *Canonchet* Son of *Miantonimo* first Sachem of the *Narragansets*, and Heir of all his Father's Pride; he came to *Boston* in *October* last, under Pretence of concluding a Peace with the *English*, but as soon as he got home spread the Flames of War all over his Country; the *English* therefore wisely deliver'd him up to their *Indian* Auxiliaries the *Mohawks* to cut off his Head, that so the Enmity



*Ann*  
*1676* mity between the two Nations might become incurable.

BUT that which effectually destroyed the Force of the *Indian* Arms, and broke all their Measures, \* was a Difference that happened among themselves which broke out about this Time into an open War. *Philip* had retired last Winter into the Territories of *Maquas*, a potent *Indian* Nation in the West, and had been civilly received and entertained by them, but could not by any Arguments or Perswasions draw them into the War against the *English*: At last he resolved to try the following Stratagem; he walk'd out into the *Woods* alone, and meeting with some of the *Maquas* at a Distance from one another, he murdered them with his own Hands, and as soon as he had done, ran in great Haste to the Prince of the *Maquas*, and told him, that a Party of *Plimouth*-Soldiers had invaded his Country, and killed several of his Subjects in the *Woods*. This raised a mighty Ferment among the People, and would effectually have answered *Philip's* End, if it had not happened unluckily for him, that one of the Men whom he thought he had killed, recover'd so far of his Wounds, as to crawl home to his Friends, and inform them of the Truth of the Matter before he dyed: Upon this the Nation conceived such an implacable Hatred against *Philip*, that they resolved not only to continue their Alliance with the *English*, but to act separately against him and his Confederates, and drive them out of the Country with Fire and Sword. Accordingly in the Spring they broke in upon those Nations that were in Confederacy with *Philip*, and gave them such a powerful Diver-

---

\* C. Mather *Book VII. p. 83.*



sion, that they were not able any longer to make Head against the *English*. They pursued them thro' the *Woods*, beat up their Quarters continually, and carried away their Wives and Children into Captivity which broke their Courage, and made many of *Philip's* own Men reproach his Conduct, and desert him. There were some small Parties of *Indians* after this that frighten'd the Inhabitants of *Plimouth*, *Taunton*, *Chelmsford*, *Concord*, *Haverfield*, *Bradford*, and *Woburn*, by their Excursions, but did them no great Damage; they attempted to fire the Town of *Bridgewater*, but the Inhabitants sallying out upon them, and a great Shower of Rain falling at the same Time saved that Place.

THE *English* on the other Hand killed several of the *Indians* near *Medfield* and *Plimouth*, and having Notice by two Boys who had made their Escape from them, that a Body of the Enemy were securely clanning together near the *Upper Falls of Connecticut-River*, Capt. *Turner* with 180 Men hastned thither, killed 100 of them upon the Spot, and pushed as many more into the River, but the Captain paid dear for this Victory afterwards, for in his Retreat he fell into an Ambuscade of the Enemy, and after a brave Resistance was himself killed with 38 of his Men. May the 30th the *Indians* made an Assault upon the Town of *Hatfield*, but were repulsed with the Loss of 25 Men. At *Rehoboth* they lost 12 more. June the 12th 700 *Indians* attacked the Town of *Hadley*, but were repuls'd with considerable Loss. On the other Hand, a Party of the *Massachusetts-Forces* took and killed 40 *Indians*; the *Connecticut-Forces* in one March destroyed 100, and in another which they made into the *Narrhaganset-Country* under the Command of the brave Major *Toliet* 360 more.

Anno

1676

~

IT would tire the Reader's Patience should I set down all the Excursions of the several small Parties of *English* against the Enemy, with the Heroick Valour of several private Persons, which yet deserve to be remembred and praised; but 'tis observable that the *English* Colonies did not unite their Forces this Summer, as they did last Winter in the Expedition against the *Narrhagansets*, because the Enemy had now no Forts or Castles left, but lived in the Woods, and ranged up and down the Country in flying Parties, burning and plundering such Villages as they could surprize on a sudden, and then retiring into the Woods again; it was in vain to follow such an Enemy with a numerous Army; each *Colony* therefore acted separately, guarding their own Frontiers, and joyning their Allies as Occasion requir'd: The Design of the *English* was to beat up the Enemies Quarters as often as they could, in Order to prevent their planting their Corn in the Spring, and their fishing in the Summer, for want of which they were now reduced to very distressing Circumstances; for the Famine began to rage amongst them, insomuch that some of them were almost starved, and the rest were forced to feed upon unwholsome Diet, which threw them into Fevers, Fluxes, and other epidemical Distempers; these Considerations, together with a Proclamation from the *Massachusetts*-Government, that such *Indians* as should submit themselves to the *English* within 14 Days might hope for Mercy, induced 200 of the Enemy to come to *Plimouth*, and lay down their Arms; being absolutely reduced to this Dilemma, either of perishing by Famine, or throwing themselves upon the Mercy of the *English*; the Government accepted of their Submission, and pardoned them all but three, who were convicted by one of their own Company of

a cruel Murther, and a villanous Assault upon *Mr. Clarke's House of Plimouth.* Anno  
1676

SOON after this 200 of the Enemy with *Philip* at their Head fell upon the Town of *Taunton*, but met with a warm Reception, their Design having been discovered by a *Negro* who made his Escape from them, Time enough for the Inhabitants to put themselves into a Posture of Defence. July the 22d, the *Massachusetts*-Forces returned home, having taken and killed about 150 stragling *Indians* with the Loss of but one of their own Number; for *Philip* and his Followers being now distressed on every Side left the *Massachusetts*-Jurisdiction, and returned to their old Quarters about *Mount Hope* in the Jurisdiction of *Plimouth*, which made that *Colny* the chief Stage of Action the remaining Part of the Summer. Here he had like to have surpris'd Major *Bradford* in an Ambush, but the Major happily disengaged himself without the Loss of one of his Men, and marched into the Territory of the *Saconets*, the Queen of which Country at the Head of 90 of her Subjects came to the Major, laid down her Arms, and submitted to Mercy. Capt. *Church* going out with a Party of no more than 18 *English* and 22 Confederate-*Indians*, had the good Fortune to kill 76 Savages in four several Engagements, without the Loss of one of his Men.\* At *Dedham* a Party of 26 *English* and 10 Confederate-*Indians* pursued and took 50 of the Enemy, among whom was *Pomham* a mighty Sachem of the *Narrhagansets*, who though he was mortally wounded, and left for dead, yet when one of the *English* came to rise him, the dying Savage got Hold of the Hair of his Head, and

---

\* Hubbard. 2. 100.



Anno  
1676  
w

would have killed him if some of his Friends had not immediately come to his Rescue. *July* 27th, *John a Segamore*, or Lord of the *Nipmuck-Indians* with 180 of his Men laid down his Arms, and submitted to Mercy, and to ingratiate himself with the *English* brought in Prisoner *Matoonas* and his Son, who was the first Man that appeared in Arms in the *Massachusetts-Colony* the last Summer; they spared the Son's Life, but ordered *Segamore John* to shoot the Father dead, which he did. *July* the 31st a small Party marching out of *Bridgewater* fell in with a Company of *Indians* with *Philip* at their Head: *Philip* commanded his Men to fire, but their Pieces being wet would not go off, upon which they took to their Heels and ran away as fast as they could; the *English* killed ten in the Pursuit, and took fifteen Prisoners with a great deal of Booty. *August* the first *Capt. Church* with about thirty *English* and twenty Confederate-*Indians* took twenty three of the Enemy, and the next Morning surprised *Philip* in his Head-Quarters, killed 130 of his Men, and took his Wife and Son Prisoners, himself hardly escaping.

*August* the 6th an *Indian* Deserter informed the Inhabitants of *Taunton* of a Body of the Enemy who were securely clanning in the neighbouring Woods, whereupon they immediately sallied out upon them, and brought in 26 Prisoners; the brave Queen of *Pocasset Philip's* near Kinswoman and Confederate lost her Life upon this Occasion; she animated her Men with her Presence as long as there was any Hopes of Success, but when they traiterously deserted her she fled to her Canoe, hoping to pass the River in it, but not finding it ready she attempted to cross upon a Piece of Timber, and was drowned; her Body was thrown ashore sometime after at *Metapoiset*, where the *English* finding it, cut  
off

off the Head, not knowing whose it was, and set it upon a Pole in *Taunton*, which the *Indians* seeing made hideous Howlings and Lamentations for her. Answer  
1675  
~

SOON after this, *Philip* himself was betrayed by one of his own Friends and Counsellors, who being disgusted at him for killing an *Indian* who only ventured to mention to him an Expedient for making Peace with the *English*, ran away to *Rhode-Island*, and informed Capt. *Church* where he was, and how he might be surprised: *Philip* was strangely dejected at the Desertion of his Friend, his Head was disturbed that Night with frightful and terrifying Dreams of his falling into the Hands of the *English*, and therefore early in the Morning he called his Friends together, and was telling them the sad Apprehensions he had from the Villain that was gone from them, when Capt. *Church* with a small Party of *English* and *Indians* surprised and dispersed them. *Philip* attempted to escape out of the *Swamp*, but an *English* Man and an *Indian* firing at him, the former's Piece being wet would not go off, but the latter shot him through the Heart, *August* the 12th, 1676: His Body was quartered, and set upon Poles, and his Head was carried in Triumph to *Plimouth*, where his Skull is preserved as a Curiosity to be seen at this Day.

THUS dyed *Philip* Grandson of Old *Massasoiet* Sachem of the *Wompanoags*; an implacable Enemy of the *English* Nation, he was a bold and daring Prince, having all the Pride, Fierceness and Cruelty of a Savage in his Disposition, with a Mixture of deep Cunning and Design; being resolved to make a Stand against the growing Power of the *English*; he was Master of so much Intrigue, as to engage all the *Indian* Nations in his Neighbourhood in the War with him,

Anno

1576

W

him, and when his Affairs grew desperate he chose rather to dye than submit, or hearken to any Terms of Accommodation: He was no less an Enemy to the Christian Religion, and would never suffer it to be preached to his People; when the Reverend Mr. *Eliot* offered to reason with him upon this Head, he received him with Contempt, and taking Hold of the Burton of his Coat told him, that he cared for his Gospel no more than for that Button. *Philip's* Death was attended with the dispersing of all his Followers, who fled some to *Albany*, and others to *Piscataqua*, many of the Straglers were taken by the *English*, and their Chiefs put to Death, the rest submitted to such Terms as the Conquerors were pleased to impose upon them: And thus the War ended in the Western Parts of *New-England*, which broke the Strength of the several *Indian* Nations in those Parts so effectually, that since that Time they have never been capable of giving the *English* any Disturbance.

IN the East, the *Indians* bordering on the Provinces of *Main* and *New-Hampshire* lying beyond *Piscataqua*-River had driven a very profitable Trade with the *English*, who had settled there from the *Massachusetts*; \* they were without the Line of the *Massachusetts*-Charter, and consequently a distinct Government by themselves, tho' the Proprietors never obtained a Charter from the Crown; these *Europeans* were so intent upon their Trade, that they had no Time to build Towns or Garrisons, but lived in Houses scattered up and down the open Country; they cheated the Natives in the most open and bare-faced Manner imaginable, and treated them

---

\* Mather Book VII. p. 55.



like Slaves. Once when there was a very great *Anno*  
 Drought in the Country, insomuch that the *Indian* *1676*  
 Corn was parch'd up, and the Apple-Trees  
 wither'd, they would not furnish them with a  
 little Powder and Shot to save them from pe-  
 rishing: The *Indians* were not insensible of this  
 Usage, but were afraid to do themselves Justice,  
 'till they heard that all *New-England* was in-  
 volv'd in a bloody War with *Philip*.

WITHIN a Month after the breaking out of  
 that War, the *Indians* in these Parts took Heart,  
 and meeting with the *English*, told them plainly  
 they would bear their Insults no longer. Each  
 Party at first gave the other hard Words, from  
 whence they proceeded to Scuffling and Blows.  
 Several little Skirmishes past between them in  
 the first three or four Months of the War, wherein  
 the *English* lost 50, and the *Indians* 90 of their  
 People; but these were but the Beginnings of  
 greater Desolations, for in the Spring of this  
 Year the *Indians* came down out of the Woods in  
 vast Numbers, and broke up all the *English* Plan-  
 tations to the North of *Wells*, destroying all the  
 Country with Fire and Sword; they burnt Cap-  
 tain *Boniton's* House to the Ground, and besieged  
 Major *Philips's*, but the Major with 10 Men  
 defended his House so bravely, that the Enemy,  
 after 24 Hours Siege, retired with the Loss of  
 20 or 30 Men. From thence they went to *Casco*,  
 and murder'd Mr. *Wakely*, his Wife, his Son,  
 and Daughter-in-Law with Child, and two  
 Grandchildren, and carried away three more in-  
 to Captivity. This honest old Man was often  
 heard to say with Tears, that he believed God  
 was angry with him, because when he came  
 over into *New-England* for the Sake of Religion,  
 he had left those Parts where he might have en-  
 joy'd it, for a Place where there was neither  
 Church, nor Ministry, nor so much as the Show

*Anno* of any Religion at all. On the 14th of *August*  
 1676 they invaded *Arrowfick* Island in *Kennebeck* River,  
 destroy'd every thing that was valuable in it, and  
 murther'd Captain *Thomas Lake*, and as many  
 more *English* as came in their Way. In *Septem-*  
*ber* they burnt the two *Cheflies* Houses about  
*Oyster* River, and kill'd two Men. *October* 16,  
 One hundred of them assaulted *Newechewannick*,  
 and kill'd two Men. Lieutenant *Plaisted* hearing  
 of their Danger, sent seven Men from the next  
 Garrison to their Relief, who falling into an  
 Ambuscade lost three of their Number, the rest  
 being hardly able to make good their Retreat.  
 The Lieutenant marching out next Morning  
 with 28 Men to fetch off the dead Bodies, was  
 surrounded by 150 *Indians*; and tho' the greatest  
 Part of his Men got off, yet himself, with some  
 of the bravest of his Followers, lost their Lives.  
*October* the 12th they made an Assault upon  
*Black Point*, which was surrender'd to them up-  
 on Condition the Inhabitants might depart with  
 their Goods, which the greatest Part of them  
 took care to do while the Governor was in  
 Treaty with them: But these Excursions of the  
 Enemy alarm'd the whole Province, and oblig'd  
 the Inhabitants of *Sheepscoat* River, *Kennebeck*  
*River*, *Sagadebeck* and the adjacent Parts, to desert  
 the open Country, and retire within the Govern-  
 ment of the *Massachusetts*.

IN the mean Time Application being made  
 to *Boston* for Assistance, the *Massachusetts* Colony  
 sent out a Body of Men under the Command of  
 Captain *Thomas Hawthern*, Captain *Syll*, and o-  
 thers, for the Subduing these *Indians*, but they  
 found it impracticable; for there being no Towns  
 or Forts for the *English* to garrison, the *Indians*  
 could make their Excursions into the open Coun-  
 try, and retire again into the Woods before it  
 was possible for the Army to overtake them:  
 How-

However the *Massachuset* Forces, after several smart Skirmishes with various Success, on the 6th of *September* \* surprized about 400 *Indians* as they were plundering Major *Walderen's* House at *Quochecho*, and took them all Prisoners: Those that were taken in Arms, which were about 200, were sold for Slaves; the rest, upon Promise of living peaceably and quietly with the *English* for the future, were sent home, some few only who had been guilty of Murther being put to death.

Anno  
1676  
~

BUT notwithstanding this, and some other little Advantages that they gain'd over the Enemy, 'tis certain the *English* were sick of the War, and glad to embrace the first Offers of Peace; and accordingly when *Mugg*, a chief Leader among them, but a known Villain, made some Proposals, they agreed with him on the following Articles.

Covenants and Agreements, made and concluded by and between the Governor and Council of the *Massachuset's* Colony in *New-England* on the one Part; and *Mugg Indian*, in the Name and on the Behalf of *Madockawando* and *Chebar-tina*, Sachems of *Penobscot*, on the other Part.

(1.) “ **W**HEREAS the said *Mugg* hath  
“ been sent and employ'd by the  
“ said Sachems upon a Treaty with the said  
“ Governor and Council relating to a Conclusion  
“ of Peace, doth hereby covenant and engage  
“ for himself, and in Behalf of the said Sachems,  
“ that from henceforth they will cease all Acts  
“ of Hostility, and hold an entire and firm Uni-  
“ on and Peace with all the *English* of the Colo-  
“ nies of *New-England*.

---

\* Hubbard, *Part II.* p. 28.



Anno

1676

(2.) “ THAT immediately on the said *Mugg’s* Return, the said Sachems shall deliver up to such *Englshman* or Men, as shall by Order of the said Governor and Council be sent with him, all such *Englsh* Captives, Vessels, and Goods whatsoever, Arms and great Artillery belonging to the *Englsh*, as are in their Custody, or under their Power, as have been taken from them during the Time of the late Hostility.

(3.) “ THAT they will use their utmost Endeavour with all possible speed to procure pay, wherewith to make full Satisfaction to the *Englsh*, for all such Injuries, Losses and Damages, as they have sustain’d by them in their Housing, Cattle, or other Estate, during the Time of the late Hostility, or else to pay such a Number of *Beaver* Skins yearly in order thereunto, as shall be agreed on between the said Sachems, and such Person or Persons as shall be sent to them from the said Governor and Council for the Ratification hereof, to be paid at such Time and Place, as shall be then agreed upon.

(4.) “ THAT upon Consideration of the *Englsh* furnishing of them with Powder and Ammunition for their necessary Supplies and Maintenance, they do covenant and promise not to trade for or buy any Powder or Ammunition, but of such Persons as shall from Time to Time be deputed by the Governor for that End.

(5.) “ THAT if it appear that *Walter Gendal*, and the Men sent with him in the Vessel from *Piscataqua*, (with Goods from Mr. Fryer for the Redemption of the Captives, according to Agreement) or any of them are surpriz’d, and slain by any of their *Indians*, or any others whom they can bring under their Power, that they shall forthwith execute such Murtherer

or

“ or Murtherers, or otherwise deliver them up *Anno*  
 “ into the Hands of the *English*. 1676

(6.) “ THAT if the *Amonoscoggin*, or any other  
 “ *Indians* in the Eastern Parts that are in  
 “ Hostility with the *English*, shall not fully con-  
 “ sent to these Covenants and Agreements, but  
 “ shall persist in Acts of Hostility against the  
 “ *English*, that then the said Sachems shall, and  
 “ will hold all such *Indians* to be their Enemies,  
 “ and take up Arms against them, and engage  
 “ them as such.

(*Lastly*,) “ THE said *Mugg*, as a Pledge and  
 “ Assurance of his own Fidelity, and that he is  
 “ empower’d by the said Sachems for the End  
 “ abovesaid, and for the Performance of the a-  
 “ bovemention’d Agreements, doth freely and  
 “ willingly deposite himself and his Life in the  
 “ Hands of the *English*, to remain with them  
 “ as a Hostage, until the said Captives, Goods  
 “ and Vessels shall be deliver’d up.”

*Boston, Nov. 13. 1676.*

Signed in the Presence of

*John Earthy,*  
*Richard Oliver,*  
*Isaac Addington.*

The Mark of  
*Mugg W Indian.*

*Madockowando* perform’d his Part of the Tre-  
 ty, and deliver’d up his Captives, but could not  
 perswade his Countrymen to submit: The *Mas-*  
*sachusetts* therefore dispatch’d 200 Men, under  
 the Command of Major *Waldereen*, to oblige  
 them to it. The Major met with a Body of  
*Indians* at *Penobscot*, and would have treated with  
 them for the Release of the Captives on both  
 Sides, but finding them treacherous he fir’d up-  
 on them, and took several of them Prisoners,  
 with a considerable Booty: But after all, the  
 Major could neither conquer the Eastern *Indians*,

Anno

1676

nor obtain the Release of the Prisoners, but return'd to *Boston* with no other Lawrel than that he lost none of his Men. Soon after this a Sort of Peace was concluded, not very honourable to the *English*, for among other Articles that were agreed to this was one, *That the English should allow the Indians a certain Quantity of Corn yearly, as a kind of Quit Rent for their Lands.* Upon the Signing of the Peace the *English* return'd to their Plantations again, Trade began to flourish, and the Number of Inhabitants encreas'd to such a degree, that within a few Years there were ten or twelve little Towns built within the Provinces of *Main* and *New-Hampshire*.

THUS within the Compass of two Years ended the *Philippick War*, wherein all the *Indian* Nations that took part in it were subdued and brought under the Power of the *English*, except those in the North East, who not only maintained their Ground, but gained such Advantages as made them in a Manner Masters of the Peace. And tho' the Actions of this War are not so important as those of *Flanders* and *Spain*, which have lately raised the Wonder of the World; yet the Valour of these *English* Captains in *America*, who died in the Bed of Honour, and saved their Country from the Misery and Ruin that a barbarous Enemy would have brought upon it, ought to be remembred and praised by Posterity.

THERE is one Thing which deserves to be taken particular Notice of, and that is, The unshaken Fidelity of the *Indian Converts* during the whole Course of this War, whom neither the Perswasions nor Threatnings of their Countrymen could draw from their Allegiance to the *English*. The Government kept a watchful Eye over them at first; and the Mob, being incensed against the *Indian Savages*, could hardly be restrained



strained from sacrificing the *Converts* to their Fury; for they demanded of the Governor of *Martha's Vineyard* the disarming of all the *Indians* upon the Island, and in case of a Refusal, they threatned to oblige them to it by Force of Arms, tho' the others were 'Twenty to One in Number. Hereupon Mr. *Mayhew* ordered Capt. *Richard Sarson* to march with a small Party to the West End of the Island, and make this Proposition to the *Indian Converts*, \* only as an Expedient for the Quieting the Minds of the People; but the Answer they received was this: " That the delivering up of their Arms would  
 " expose them to the Rage and Anger of their  
 " Countrymen engaged in the present War, who  
 " were no less theirs than the Enemies of the  
 " *English*: That they had never given the least  
 " Occasion for the Distrust the People had entertained; but that if in any thing, consistent  
 " with their own Safety, they could give any  
 " further Proofs of their Fidelity, they would  
 " readily comply with what should be demanded,  
 " but they were unwilling to deliver up their  
 " Arms, unless the *English* could propose some  
 " other Way for their Safety and Livelihood. " With this Answer they delivered the Captain a Writing in their own Language, wherein they declare, " That as they had already submitted  
 " to the Crown of *England*, so they were determined to assist the *English* on these Islands  
 " against their Enemies, whom they esteemed  
 " equally their own, as being Subjects of the  
 " same King. " The Governor was so well satisfied with this Answer, that he gave them no farther Trouble; but instead of disarming them, supplied them with all Sorts of Ammunition,

Anno  
1576

\* C. Mather, *Book vi.* p. 57.

*Anno*  
1676 and committed the Defence of the Island to their Care; and so faithful were they to their Trust, that all Persons that landed upon the Island during the Course of the War were without Distinction, brought before the Governor to be examined.

ON the 5th of *April* this Year died *John Winthrop*, jun. Esq; Governor of the United Colonies of *Connecticut* and *Newhaven*, and Fellow of the Royal Society: He was Son of *John Winthrop*, Esq; first Governor of the *Massachusetts*, and was born at *Groton* in *Suffolk*, 1605. He was educated at *Cambridge*, and came over with his Father to *New-England*, 1631, where he was immediately chosen into the Magistracy. He returned to *England* in the Year 1634. and came over again the Year following with Powers from the Lord *Say* and *Brook* to begin a Plantation on *Connecticut* River, and a Commission for himself to be Governor of it. Here he built *Say-Brook* Fort, the best Security against the Incursions of the *Indians* that the *English* in those Parts were ever Masters of. Upon the Restoration of King *Charles* the Second he undertook a Voyage to *England*, and obtained a Charter for the two Colonies of *Connecticut* and *Newhaven*, whereby they were invested with greater Privileges than any of their Neighbours. The United Colonies for this extraordinary Piece of Service chose him their Governor every Year after as long as he lived. When the Government was distressed by the War with *Philip*, and the Affairs of the Country required the Advice of the most experienced Counsellors, Mr. *Winthrop* travelled to *Boston*, to assist as a Commissioner of the General Court, where he was seized with a Fever, and died in the 22d Year of his Age. He was a fine Gentleman: A good Natural Philosopher and Physician. His Closet was always

ways furnished with the best Medicines, which he charitably distributed to such of his poor Neighbours as had need of them. Anno  
1678  
w

ON the 16th of *March* died Mr. *John Leverett*, Governor of the *Massachusetts* Colony. He had been a Soldier, and signalized himself in several considerable Actions abroad in his younger Years, but of late had applied himself wholly to the Art of Government; and was so well beloved by the Colony, that his Election as Governor was never contested from the Death of Mr. *Bellingham* to his own. He died of the Stone in an advanced Age; and was succeeded by *Simon Bradstreet*, Esq; in whose Time their Charter was taken from them.

WHILE the *New-England* Forces were in the Field, Days of Fasting and Prayer had been frequently observed by the Churches, for the Success of their Arms; but when the War was over, these Solemnities were discontinued, and the People began to grow intolerably licentious in their Morals: Devout People observed, that tho' they were delivered from the Hands of their Enemies, yet the Judgments of God seemed to follow them; for the Fruits of the Earth were blasted two or three Years successively, insomuch that the Labour of the Husbandman began to fail, Epidemical Diseases carried off great Numbers of People, and the Trade of the Country fell to decay, by uncommon Losses both by Sea and Land. The General Court of the *Massachusetts* taking these Things into Consideration, called a Synod to meet at *Boston*, and examine into the State of Religion, and prevent the further Growth of Impiety and Prophaneness: The Synod agreed, That there was not only a general Decay of Piety among the Inhabitants, but that *Pride*, *Intemperance*, *Swearing*, *Sabbath-breaking* and *Covetousness*, were at an uncommon Height; and therefore advised



*Anno*  
*1679* fed, that for the reforming these Vices, the Ministers should be exhorted to preach against them in their Pulpits, and the Magistrates to put the Laws in Execution against them, as far as they came under their Cognizance.

IN this Synod there was a Debate about the Right of *Laymen* to a Place in the Synod, occasioned by the Practice of some Churches, who would only send their Ministers to the Assembly: But it was agreed that not only Ministers, but other Lay-Messengers were the proper Members of a Synod, and had a Right to their Suffrage in it, as the Churches Representatives.\*

IN the same Synod the Platform of Church Discipline, drawn up in the Year 1648 was recognized and confirmed by the following Vote; "A Synod of the Churches of the Colony of the *Massachusetts* being called to meet at *Boston* September 1679, having read and considered a Platform of Church Discipline agreed upon by the Synod, assembled at *Cambridge* 1648, do unanimously approve of the same Platform as to the Substance of it, desiring that the Churches may continue stedfast in the Order of the Gospel, according to what is therein declared from the Word of God."

*Anno*  
*1680* NEXT Year another Synod met at *Boston*, and having revised the *Savoy Confession of Faith*, ordered it to be printed by Authority; with some few Variations, as the Faith of the Churches of *New-England*: This Confession of Faith, to which is annex'd a Chapter of Discipline, was drawn up by an Assembly of the Elders and Messengers of the several Congregational Churches throughout *England*, who met at the *Savoy* the 12th of *October* 1658, and ad-

---

\* Mather, B. v. p. 86.

jour'n'd themselves from time to time till they had finished it; the Confession of Faith differs but very little from that of the Assembly at *Westminster*, and the Chapter of Discipline agrees very much with the Platform. The first Churches of *New-England* were all built on the Foot of this Discipline as the Reader has already observed in this History, and though since that Time some Churches of the Presbyterian Persuasion are planted among them, yet their Discipline has not been received in the Country according to the Models of *Geneva* or *Scotland*: However they have as much Liberty as they can desire, and an equal Share in the Government with their Neighbours, and the Churches live in Love and Communion with each other.

SOME Attempts were made by the Presbyterian and Congregational Ministers in *England*, for compromising the Differences between these two Parties among themselves, and Heads of Agreement were drawn up, and assented to on both sides, in the Year 1692, but Disputes arising upon some high Points of Divinity, in which the Heads of each Denomination took a different Part, they proceeded at length to such Heats as alienated their Affections, and dissolved the Union, after it had subsisted about three Years. But the *New-England* Ministers received these Articles with an Universal Approbation, and continue to act agreeably to them to this Day. Dr. Mather \* says 'tis not possible to give the World a juster Idea of the Ecclesiastical Constitution of *New England*, than is to be had from these Articles; and therefore I have given them a Place in the Appendix.†

---

\* Book. v. p. 59. † Appendix Numb. III.

*Anno*  
1680  
W AT the Close of this Year died *Josiah Winslow*, Esq; Governour of *Plimouth*, and the first *New-Englsh* Man that was ever advanced to that Honour; he was Son of *Edward Winslow*, Esq; and succeeded Mr. *Prince* in the Government of the Colony. In the *Indian War* he was made General of the *Plimouth-Forces*, and got immortal Honour at the Fort of the *Narrhagansets*; he was a fine Gentleman, a brave Soldier, and an excellent Governour: He was succeeded by Mr. *Robert Treat*, in whose Time the Charter of the Country was taken away.

*Anno*  
1681 ABOUT Midsummer following dyed Mr. *Urian Oakes*, Pastor of the Church of *Cambridge*, and President of *Harvard-College*, he was born in *England*, but educated in *Harvard-College* in *New-England*, and preached his first Sermon for Mr. *Eliot* at *Roxbury*. In the Time of the Civil Wars he returned to his native Country, and became Minister of *Titchfield*, where he continued till he was silenced with the rest of the Nonconformist-Ministers in 1662. He was afterwards Schoolmaster at *Southick* in *Hampshire*, but upon the Death of Mr. *Mitchel*, the Church of *Cambridge* in *New-England* inviting him to the Pastoral Office among them, he accepted their Call, and soon after became President of the College, which he governed with universal Satisfaction to his Death, which happen'd *July* the 18th, 1681, in the 50th Year of his Age; he was a good Scholar, an excellent Preacher, and of a sweet natural Disposition.

*Anno*  
1682 THE Governours of the College would have appointed the Reverend Mr. *Increase Mather* to succeed him, but his Church at *Boston* not being willing to part with him, Mr. *John Rogers* was prefer'd to the Place; Mr. *Rogers* came over to *New-England* at six Years of Age, and was educated in *Harvard-College*; he was first a Preacher at



at *Ipswich*, but applied himself afterwards to the Study of Physick; he governed the College but two Years, and dyed universally lamented by all the Students.

*Ann*  
1682  
~

UPON his Death Mr. *Mather* was again chosen to succeed him, and to satisfy the Objections of his Church, was allowed to preach at *Boston* on Lord's-Days, and to attend the Business of the College in the Week; he governed with great Reputation till his advanced Years requir'd a Recess, and had the Welfare of the College so much at Heart, that the University decreed him the highest Honours. This good old Gentleman is yet alive, and in high Esteem among his Country-men for his eminent Services both to the Church and Commonwealth.

REMARKABLY Pious and Christian was the Death of *Mitark*, Prince of the *Gay-Head* on *Martha's-Vineyard*; who was converted to the Christian Religion by Mr. *Mayhew*, and like a good Prince, encouraged the spreading of it among his Subjects, even to the Hazard of his very Crown; for the People were so bigotted to their old Religion that they threatned to depose him, unless he banish'd the *English* Missionaries, the *Prince* hereupon with a few of his Friends prudently retired to the East-End of the Island, 'till the Ferment was over, and his Subjects agreed to give Liberty to the Ministers to preach the Gospel to as many of the People as were willing to hear it: And then after three Years he returned, and became himself a Preacher of Christianity to his Subjects, so that the whole Island in a little Time became Christian. The Day before his Death Mr. *Mayhew* visited him, and enquiring into his Hopes of a future Happiness; he replied, " *I have Hope in God, that when my Soul departs*  
" *out of this Body, God will send his Messengers who*  
*shall*

*Ann*  
1683

Anno  
 1683  
 “ shall conduct it to himself to be with Jesus Christ  
 “ where that everlasting Glory is. As for my Rea-  
 “ sons, said he, I myself have had many Wrongs of  
 “ Enemies, of whom I have sought no Revenge, nor  
 “ retained Evil in Thought, Word, or Deed, and  
 “ I also expect the same from God. But I proceed  
 “ no further, for God is very merciful. Mr. May-  
 hew then asking him concerning his Willing-  
 ness to dye; he answered, “ It is now seven  
 “ Nights since I was taken sick, and I have not yet  
 “ asked of God to live longer in the World; in this  
 “ World are some Benefits to be enjoyed, also  
 “ many Troubles to be endured, but with Respect to  
 “ the Hope I have in God, I am willing to dye;  
 “ here I am in Pain, there I shall be freed from all  
 “ Pain, and enjoy the rest that never endeth. Then  
 pointing to his Daughter, he said; “ And you  
 “ my Daughter, if you lose your Father, mourn not  
 “ for me, but mourn for yourself, and for your  
 “ Sins; mourn not for me, for tho’ you are unwilling  
 “ to spare me, and I might be helpful to you if  
 “ I should live longer in this World, yet to dye  
 “ is better for me.” He was a faithful Friend  
 and Ally of the *English*, and dyed universally  
 regretted by the whole Island, in the Month of  
*January*, 1683.

Anno  
 1684  
*New-England* began now to take Breath af-  
 ter a bloody and expensive War, Trade reviv’d,  
 Peace and Plenty flow’d in upon them; when,  
 on a sudden, the Affairs of the Country were  
 thrown into the utmost Confusion by the ar-  
 bitrary Proceedings of the *English* Court. King  
*Charles* the Second had ordered a *Quo Warranto*  
 to be issued out against the Charter of the City  
 of *London*, upon Pretence of their illegal exacting  
 of Tolls in the Markets, and framing a scanda-  
 lous Petition, wherein they charged the King  
 with obstructing the Justice of the Nation: Af-  
 ter a long Tryal at the Court of *King’s-Bench*,  
 wherein

wherein Council was heard on both Sides, Judge *Jones* declared it to be the unanimous Opinion of that Court, *That the Liberties and Franchises of the City of London be seized into the King's Hands*; and accordingly, *October* the 4th following the Attorney-General entred Judgment of Seizure, and the King nominated all the Magistrates of the City for the ensuing Year. The City of *London* having lost its Charter, almost all the Corporations in *England* influenced either by Fear or Flattery complimented the King with a Surrender of theirs, and the King granted them new ones, reserving always to himself the Power of confirming their Mayor, Aldermen, and other chief Officers.

It may easily be imagined after this, that the Plantations could not long maintain their Privileges. The Province of *New-Hampshire* never had a Charter, but the Proprietors finding themselves continually exposed to the Excursions of the *French-Indians* on the Borders laid Hold of this Opportunity to make a free Surrender of their Government to the Crown reserving the Soil to themselves for such Improvements as it was capable of, since which Time the Governour of *New-England* has had a special Commission to govern that Province independently of the *Massachuset-Bay*, and is represented in his Absence by a Lieutenant-Governour appointed by the Crown, who, with a Council of Twelve of the Inhabitants appointed likewise by the Crown, directs all the Affairs of the Province.

THE *Massachuset-Colony* had a *Quo Warranto* sent them in the Year 1683, and in the Year 1684 a Writ of *Scire facias*, by which they were required to make their Appearance at *Westminster* in *October* following, which they knew nothing of till a Month before, so that it was impossible



*Anno*  
1684 possible for them to answer at the Time appointed, and yet Judgment was entred against them.

*Plimouth-Colony* underwent the same Fate, without so much as a Pretence of Misgovernment alledged.

*Rhode-Island* submitted peaceably to his Majesty's Pleasure.

*Connecticut-Colony* received a *Quo Warranto*, with Letters from the King signifying, that in Case they resigned their Charter, they might take their Choice of being under *New-York* or *Boston*; upon which several of the Magistrates returned a most humble and supplicatory Answer, praying, that their former Government might still continue; but that if it must be taken from them, they had rather be under *Boston* than *New-York*: This was interpreted by some at Court as a Resignation of their Charter, and a Commission was sent to Sir *Edmund Andross*, who went with some armed Attendants to *Hartford* the Capital of the Province, and declared their Charter and former Government void. Thus was the ancient Constitution of *New-England* destroyed, and the whole Country made an absolute Province of the Crown of *England*.

A LIST of the Governours of the several Colonies of *New-England*, according to the Order of their Succession from the Beginning of the *English* Settlements to the Surrender of their Charters.

## PLIMOUTH.

*John Carver,*  
*William Bradford,*  
*Thomas Prince,*  
*Edward Winslow.*

## MASSACHUSET-BAY.

*Matthew Craddock,*  
*John Winthrop,*  
*Sir Henry Vane, jun.*  
*Thomas Dudley,*  
*John Endicott,*  
*Richard Bellingham,*  
*John Leverett,*  
*Simon Bradstreet.*

## CONNECTICUT.

*Edward Hopkins,*  
*John Haynes,*  
*George Willis,*  
*Thomas Wells,*  
*John Webster,*

## NEW-HAVEN.

*Theophilus Eaton,*  
*Francis Newman,*  
*William Leet.*

After the UNION of the TWO COLONIES,

*William Leet,* | *Robert Treat.*





## C H A P. X.

*Captain Phips's Expedition to the Spanish Wreck. The Rise of the War between the English and Indians, in which the French take Part. The Revolution of the Government of New-England. The Progress of the War. Examples of the deplorable Circumstances of the Prisoners taken by the Indians. The Reduction of L'Acadie, or New-Scotland, Sir William Phips's unfortunate Expedition against Quebec. The French and Indians fright away the Frontier-Garrisons, and ravage the Country. The English defeated at Wheelwright-Pond. A Truce concluded. The Death and Character of the Reverend Mr. John Eliot, the Apostle of the Indians.*

Anno  
1685



OUR Histories are full of Tragical Complaints of the Oppressions and Miseries of the *English* Nation under the Government of King *James* the Second. King *Charles* had broke in upon the Constitution, and his Brother resolved to overturn it, and had certainly accomplished



plished his Designs, if his Ministers had not precipitated him into rash and violent Measures; had he flatter'd the Church, he had made himself absolute Monarch of the State; but this must be said for the Honour of that unhappy Prince, that he never disguised his Principles; his Administration was all of a Piece, till within a Month or two of his Abdication, when the Fright of the Prince of *Orange's* Invasion made him undo in two or three Weeks what had been more than so many Years a doing.

THE King trod in his Brother's Steps, and pursued the very same Measures. He persecuted the Dissenters with the utmost Violence; inso-much that some who had rid out all the Storms of King *Charles* the Second, now fled their native Country; among these the most eminent was the Reverend Mr. *Samuel Lee*, Minister of a Dissenting Congregation in *London*, who fearing the Return of Popish Cruelties fled to *New-England* in the Year 1686, and preach'd to a Congregation at *New-Bristol* till the Year 1691, when as he was returning home, he was taken by the *French*, and dyed in one of their Prisons. He was a Person of great Learning and Reputation, but of a timorous Spirit, which put him upon those Measures, that brought him to the End he always feared.\* The King restored none of the Charters either in *Old* or *New-England*, but nominated such Magistrates in all the Corporations, as he and his Council thought most proper for their Purposes.

K. *Charles II.* upon the Seizure of the Charter of *New-England* had sent over *Henry Cranfield*, Esq; Governor, by Commission from himself, but King

Anno  
1685

---

\* Mather, Book III. page 22.

Anno  
1686  
w

*James* upon his Accession to the Crown, displaced him, and appointed *Joseph Dudley*, Esq; Son of Mr. *Thomas Dudley* to succeed him; this Mr. *Dudley* was a Native of *New-England*, and generally beloved, on the Account of his Father's Services and Merits, but his accepting a Commission founded upon the Ruin of the Laws and Liberties of his Country created him a great many Enemies, who ventured at length to depose him, and send him Prisoner to *England*; the People at the same Time resuming their Charter, and choosing their own Magistrates, as formerly; but the King soon put a Stop to their Proceedings, by sending over Sir *Edmund Andros*, a *Guernsey-Man*, with a Commission bearing Date *June 3. 1686*, constituting him Governour of the whole Country, and empowering him with four of his Council to make Laws, and raise Money on the King's Subjects without any Parliament, Assembly, or Consent of the People: Upon his Arrival he turn'd out all the Magistrates, Judges, and Officers of the Militia chosen by the People, and appointed others in their Room; he overturn'd by Degrees the whole Constitution, and stretch'd his Prerogative to such an Height, as made it impossible for the People to live under him, which prepared the Way for the Revolution, which soon after followed.

Anno  
1687

It was in the Time of this Gentleman, that Captain *William Phips*, a Native of this Country, being informed of a *Spanish Wreck*, near the *Port de la Plata*, \* wherein had been lost a vast Treasure of Silver, about fifty Years before, resolved to attempt the Recovery of it; he had been at Court in the Year 1683, and made such

a Representation of his Design to King *Charles*, that he made him Commander of the *Algier Rose*, a Frigot of 18 Guns and 95 Men; in this Vessel he sail'd to *Hispaniola*, and got Information from an old *Spaniard* of the true Spot where the Wreck lay, but when he had fished as long as the Patience of the Ship's Crew would hold out, he was forced to return home without any Prospect of Success. The Captain laid the Blame upon the Impatience of his Crew; but most Men looked upon the Project as impracticable, for which Reason it was a long Time before he could prevail with any considerable Persons either in Court or City to be at the Charge of a second Adventure.

BUT at last the Duke of *Albemarle* with some other Persons of Quality fitted him out, and furnished him with all Necessaries for his Expedition; Upon his Arrival at the *Port de la Plata*, with his Ship and Tender, he went up into the Woods, and built a stout Canoe out of a Cotton-Tree, large enough to carry eight or ten Oars; this Canoe and Tender with some select Men, and *Divers*, the Captain sent out in Search of the Wreck, whilst himself lay at Anchor in the Port; the Canoe kept busking up and down upon the Shallows, but could discover nothing but a Reef of rising Shoals, called the *Boylers*, within two or three Foot of the Surface of the Water: The Sea was calm; every Eye was employed in looking down into it, and the *Divers* went down in several Places without making any Discovery; till at last, as they were returning back weary and dejected, one of the Sailors looking over the Side of the Canoe into the Sea, spied a Feather under Water, growing, as he imagin'd, out of the Side of a Rock: One of the *Divers* was immediately order'd down to fetch it up, and look out, if there was any thing



Anno  
1687  
w

of Value about it: He quickly brought up the Feather, and told them, that he had discovered several great Guns, whereupon he was ordered down again, and then brought up a Pig of Silver of two or three hundred Pounds Value; the Sight of which filled them with Transports, and convinced them sufficiently, that they had found the Treasure they had been so long looking for. When they had buoyed the Place they made Haste to *Port*, and told the Captain the joyful News, who could hardly believe them till they shew'd him the Silver; and then, with Hands lift up to Heaven, he cried out, *Thanks be to God, we are all made!* All Hands were immediately ordered on Board, and sailing to the Place, the *Divers* happen'd to fall first into the Room where the Bullion had been stored, and in a few Days they brought up 32 Tun of Silver without the Loss of any Man's Life; when they had cleared the Store-Room, they searched the *Hold*, and among the Ballast of the Ship found a great many Bags of Pieces of Eight; tis observable that these Bags having lain so long under Water amongst Ballast, were crusted over with a hard Substance like Lime-stone, to the Thickness of several Inches, which being broken with Irons contrived for the Purpose, the rusty Pieces of Eight tumbled out in prodigious Quantities, besides these Things, they found vast Treasures of Gold, Pearls, Jewels, and every thing that a *Spanish* Galleon us'd to be laden with. There was one *Adderly* of *Providence*, who had been with Captain *Phips* in his former Voyage to this Place, and promised to assist him again if ever he should make a second Adventure, who met him with a small Vessel at *Port de la Plata*, and with the few Hands he had on Board took up six Tun of Silver for themselves; they both staid till their Provisions were spent, and then the

the Captain obliging *Adderly* and his Men not to discover the Place of the Wreck, nor come to it himself till next Year, they weighed Anchor, and returned; the Reason of this Obligation was, because the last Day of their fishing the *Divers* brought up twenty Sows of Silver, which made the Captain imagine that there was a great deal of Treasure yet behind, though it afterwards appeared, that they had in a Manner quite cleared the Ship of her Bullion before they left her. The Captain steered directly away for *England*, without calling at any Port by the Way, and arrived the latter End of the Year, with about Three Hundred Thousand Pounds *Sterling*, Sixteen Thousand of which, after all Charges paid, and Gratuities to the Sailors, came to his own Share, besides which the Duke of *Albemarle* made his Wife a Present of a Golden Cup of a Thousand Pounds Value.

SOME of King *James's* Courtiers would have perswaded him to have seized the Ship and its Cargoe, under Pretence, that the Captain had not rightly informed him of the Nature of his Project, when he was graciously pleased to grant him his Patent; but the King replied, that *Phips* was an honest Man, and that it was his Council's Fault that he had not employed him himself, and therefore he would give him no Disturbance in what he had got, but as a Mark of his Royal Favour, conferr'd upon him the Honour of Knighthood.

THE *Eastern-Indians*, \* by the Instigation of the *French*, invaded the Frontiers this Summer, and commenced a War, which all the Powers of *New-England* could not extinguish in ten Years;

ANNO  
1638

Tis hard to account for the Rise of this War, each Party throwing it off from themselves; the *Indians*, especially those of *Saco* and *Amnoscoggin* complained,

*First*, That the *English* refused to pay the yearly Tribute of Corn agreed upon in the Articles of Peace formerly concluded with them by the *English* Commissioners.

*Secondly*, That they were invaded in their Fishery at *Saco-River*, by certain Gentlemen who stopp'd the Fish from coming up the River with their *Nets* and *Sains*. This they were greatly affronted at, saying, they thought tho' the *English* had got away their Lands, yet the Fishery of the Rivers would have been left open to them.

*Thirdly*, That they were abused by the *English*, in suffering, if not turning their Cattle over to a certain *Island* to destroy their Corn.

*Fourthly*, That the *Governour* had granted or patented out their Lands to some *English*, at which they were so enraged, that they threatned to knock the Surveyor on the Head, if he came to lay out Lands there any more.

To these were added the common Abuses in Trading, of Drunkenness, Cheating, &c. which those that trade much with them are seldom innocent of.

THE *French* complained, That the *English* having unjustly seized a Parcel of Wines landed at a *French* Plantation to the Eastward, an Order was obtained from the King of *England*, by the Instances of the *French* Ambassador, for the restoring them; whereupon the *English*, by Way of Revenge, ran a new Line for the Bounds of the Province, which enclosed Monsieur *St. Casteen's* Plantation within the *English* Pale: Monsieur *St. Casteen* leaving his House upon this Occasion, the *English* seized upon his Arms and Goods,



Goods, and brought them away to *Pemmaquid*: He, to do himself Justice, perswaded the *Indians* to stand upon their Guard, and not suffer such Encroachments upon their Country, and having married one of their *Segamore's* Daughters, easily prevailed with them to begin Acts of Hostility against the *English*, promising them all the Assistance that the *French* at *Canada* could give them.

THE *English*, in answer to these Allegations of the *French* and *Indians*, complained of the insulting Behaviour of the *Indians* upon the Frontiers; who, if they had received any Injuries, ought first (say they) to have demanded Satisfaction from the Government in a legal Way, before they proceeded to do themselves Justice by an open War.

THE first Acts of Hostility began upon this Occasion: A Party of *Indians* came to *North Yarmouth*, and having killed some Cattle, threatened with the Assistance of the *French* to murder the People too; upon which Capt. *Blackman*, a Justice of Peace, with some of the Neighbourhood of *Saco*, ventured to seize 18 or 20 of the Ringleaders, and sent them under a strong Guard to *Falmouth* in *Casco Bay*, to be kept in Custody 'till he should receive Orders from *Boston* concerning them. The *Indians* hereupon made Reprizals, and took several of the *English* Prisoners, among whom was Capt. *Rowden*, and Capt. *Gendal*; *Rowden* never got out of their Hands, but *Gendal* and his Party were released upon the Return of *Blackman's* Prisoners. An Express was immediately sent away to Sir *Edmund Andros* at *New York*, to give him an Account of these Things; and in the mean Time the Gentlemen of *Boston* ordered some Soldiers to march towards *Falmouth* for the Security of the Country, and sent the Worshipful Mr. *Stoughton*,

Anno  
1688  
w

*Stoughton*, with some others, to endeavour to bring the *Indians* to a Treaty, and recover the Captives. The *Indians* seemed inclinable to an Accommodation at first, and promised to meet the *English* at a Place called *Macquoit*; but having advised with the *French* in the mean Time, they did not appear; but a few Days after fell upon the Town of *North Yarmouth*, and killed several of the Inhabitants. This was the first Blood that was drawn in this Quarrel. The *Indian* Prisoners were now sent up to *Boston*, and the Inhabitants of the Frontier Plantations ordered to secure themselves in the Garrisons, 'till they should receive further Orders from Sir *Edmund Andros*. But when Sir *Edmund* returned to *Boston*, he disapproved of Captain *Blackman's* Conduct, and ordered all the Prisoners to be set at Liberty, and their Arms to be restored, without insisting upon the Delivery of the *English* Captives, only he published a Proclamation requiring the *Indians* to surrender up those Persons to Justice who had murther'd the King's Subjects at *Yarmouth*; which they took no manner of Notice of. The Differences were too great to be amicably composed, and both Sides prepared for War.

IN the Month of *September* Capt. *Gendal* was order'd with a Party of Men to garrison *Yarmouth*, and palisadoe both Sides of the River for the Defence of the Town; but while his Men were at Work, an *English* Captive, who had run away from his Master, informed them, That 70 or 80 of the Enemy were just ready to fall upon them. The Soldiers, instead of standing to their Arms, crossed the River in their Boats, whereby they run into the Mouth of the Enemy, and were taken Prisoners to the Number of 12. The *Indians* with their Prisoners marched on towards *Casco*; the Inhabitants of which Town resolved

resolved not only to stand on their Defence, but to rescue their Friends out of the Hands of the Enemy. Accordingly they crossed the River in a Body, and released all their Friends except one or two, without coming to Blows: But one of the *Indians* holding his Prisoner faster than the rest, *Benedict Pulcifer*, an Inhabitant of *Casco*, struck him on the Shoulder with the Edge of his broad Ax, upon which ensued a warm Engagement, several being killed on both Sides: At last the *Indians* retired, and the *English* returned back into the Town; but Capt. *Gendal* venturing over the River again the same Evening in a Canoe with only one Servant, fell into an Ambuscade, wherein both of them were slain. Some Time after this the *Indians* marched Eastward, and falling upon the *English* at a Place called *Merry-Meeting*, from the Concourse of several Rivers, they plundered their Houses, and killed all they could lay their Hands upon. About the same Time they laid the Town of *Sheepscote* in Ashes, but the People saved themselves by retiring into the Fort. From thence they went to *Kennebunk* near *Winter Harbour*, where they murdered Mr. *Burroughs's* and Mr. *Buffy's* Families, and then retired.

SIR *Edmund Andros*, in order to put a Stop to these Excursions of the Enemy, raised an Army of near 1000 Men, and marched himself to the Frontiers at the Head of them in the very Depth of Winter, but the *Indians* were then retired into the Woods, not one of them appearing while the Army was in those Parts. The Governor's Conduct was very much censured for marching into the Field at this Time of the Year, and exposing his Men to the Hardships of a Winter Campaign, without the least Prospect of fighting the Enemy: However he built two Forts, one at *Sheepscote*, and another at *Pechypscote*



*Anno* *scote Falls*, where he put part of his Army into  
 1688 Winter Quarters, and marched back with the  
 W rest to *Boston*.

THE *English* Court had now changed their Measures with regard to the *Dissenters* from the Established Church; the King had published a Declaration for Liberty of Conscience to all his Subjects, he had dispenced with the penal Laws and Test, and admitted Persons of all Perswasions in Religion to Places of Profit and Trust, that by this Means he might the more easily introduce Popery and Arbitrary Power; for tho' there might be three or four Protestant Dissenters in Favour with the King, yet it is manifest that both the Court and Army were filled with Roman Catholick Officers, who were to be the Tools to enslave a free People; and how near they were to the accomplishing their Designs, our *English* Historians have informed us at large.

IN this Situation of Affairs Sir *William Phips* appeared at Court, and used all his Interest for the Service of his Country: He petitioned for the restoring of their Charter; but the King replied, *Any thing, Sir William, but that*. He then procured a Patent, constituting him High-Sheriff of *New-England*, hoping by this Means to be capable of supplying his Country with honest Juries. Furnished with this Commission, he went in Company with Sir *John Narborough*, to make a second Visit to the *Wreck*, and in his Return landed at *Boston* about *Midsummer*, 1688. But Sir *William's* Patent was of very little use to him; for the Governor and his Creatures were so enraged against him for it, that they attempted to assassinate him before his own Door, which made him take the first Opportunity of returning to *England*.

THE Government of Sir *Edmund Andros* was indeed become insupportable: He not only copied after his Master King *James*, but out-went him; for to all the Miseries that *England* groan'd under, this was superadded in *New-England*, *The Loss of their Freeholds*. The Gentlemen of the Country made the best Stand for their Liberties they could, they oppos'd the arbitrary Proceedings of the Governor by Petitions and Remonstrances, and when no Redress was to be expected at Home, they sent over Mr. *Increase Mather*, Rector of the College, with two other Gentlemen to the Court of *England*, with a Petition to the King, praying, *That the Right they had to their Freeholds might be confirmed; and that no Laws might be made, or Moneys raised, without an Assembly*. The King referred them to the Committee for Foreign Plantations, but absolutely refused to consent to the last Article of raising Money by an Assembly, nor durst the Committee so much as propose it to him.

THINGS went on after this Manner 'till the News of the Prince of *Orange's* Expedition into *England* reached *Boston*, which spread an universal Joy throughout the whole Country. The Governor took all imaginable Care to conceal the Success of it from the People; he imprisoned the Man that brought over a Copy of the Prince's Declaration, and published a Proclamation requiring all Persons to use their best Endeavours to hinder the Landing of any whom the Prince might send thither: But the Hearts of the People were turned against him, his Army deserted him, and his Counsellors began to think of shifting for themselves, Rumours were spread about Town of an intended Massacre, and several murdering Engines were said to be in the *Rose* Frigate, one of the King's Ships then in the Harbour. The People hereupon, both in Town

Anno  
1689  
w

Town and Country gathered together in Clubs, and resolved to stand by one another with their Lives and Fortunes; the wiser and more considerate Gentlemen were for letting Things go on in the present Course, till they should receive Orders from *England* how to behave themselves, but the common People, and several Gentlemen who were animated with a Zeal for the Recovery of their ancient Liberties, resolved to follow the Example of *England*, and put an End to the arbitrary Government they had so long groaned under: Accordingly on the 18th of *April*, 1689, about 8 a-Clock in the Morning a Report was raised at the South End of the Town of *Boston*, that at the North End the People were all in Arms, and the like Report was at the North End, with respect to the South; whereupon Capt. *George* was immediately seized, and about 9 a-Clock the Drums beat through the Town, and an Ensign was set up upon the Beacon; then Mr. *Bradstreet*, Mr. *Dantfort*, Major *Richards*, Dr. *Cook*, and Mr. *Addington*, were conducted to the Council-House, by a Company of Soldiers under the Command of Capt. *Hill*: In the mean while the People seized upon Justice *Bullivant*, Justice *Foxcroft*, Mr. *Randolf*, Sheriff *Sherluck*, Capt. *Ravenscroft*, Captain *White*, *Firewell*, *Broadvent*, *Crafford*, *Larkin*, *Smith*, and several others, and put them into Goal; they likewise turn'd out *Mercy* the Goal-Keeper, and put *Scates* the Brick-layer into his Place.

ABOUT Noon the following Message was sent by Mr. *Oliver* and Mr. *Eyres* to Sir *Edmund Andross*, who kept himself shut up in the Fort.



*At the Town-House in Boston, April 18, 1689.**Ann.  
1689*

S I R,

“ OURSELVES and many Others the In-  
 “ habitants of this Town, and the  
 “ Places adjacent, being surprized with the  
 “ People’s sudden taking of Arms; in the first  
 “ Motion whereof we were wholly ignorant,  
 “ being driven by the present Accident, are ne-  
 “ cessitated to acquaint your Excellency, that  
 “ for the quieting and securing of the People  
 “ inhabiting in this Country from the imminent  
 “ Dangers they many Ways lie open and ex-  
 “ posed to, and tendring your own Safety, we  
 “ judge it necessary that you forthwith surrender  
 “ and deliver up the Government and Fortifi-  
 “ cations to be preserved and disposed accord-  
 “ ing to Order and Direction from the Crown  
 “ of *England*, which suddenly is expected may  
 “ arrive; promising all Security from Violence  
 “ to yourself, or any of your Gentlemen or  
 “ Soldiers in Person and Estate: Otherwise  
 “ we are assured they will endeavour the tak-  
 “ ing of the Fortification by Storm, if any  
 “ Opposition be made.

To Sir EDMOND ANDROSS, Knt.

*Waite Winthrop,  
 Simon Bradstreet,  
 William Stoughton,  
 Samuel Shrimpton,  
 Bartholomew Gidney.  
 William Brown,  
 Thomas Danforth,  
 John Richards,*

*Elisba Cook,  
 Isaac Addington,  
 John Nelsen,  
 Adam Winthrop,  
 Peter Sergeant,  
 John Foster,  
 David Waterhouse.*

Sir

Anno  
1689  
W

Sir *Edmond* did not think fit to obey the Gentlemens Summons at first, but sent to the Frigate for Fire-Arms, Hand-Grenadoes and Match, but the Boat that was bringing them was seiz'd by the Soldiers in the Town, after which Mr. *John Nelson* at the Head of the Soldiers demanding the Fort a second Time, the Governour came down, and surrender'd himself and the Fort into their Hands, He was first conducted to the Council-House, and afterwards confined with Lieutenant-Colonel *Ledget* in the Fort till he was sent home to *England*, where instead of suffering for the many Irregularities of his Government, he made a Shift to justify his Conduct to the mild and gentle Administration of King *William* and Queen *Mary*, so far as to be intrusted with the Government of *Virginia* in the Year 1692, where after some Years he dyed. Mr. *Fairweather*, Mr. *West*, Mr. *Graham*, Mr. *Palmer*, and Capt. *Tryfoye* were imprisoned in the Castle; Mr. *Dudley* was then out upon the Circuit, but was seized at Major *Smith's* at *Narraganset*, and brought Prisoner to *Boston*.

THE whole Town of *Boston* was now in Arms, and the Country came in so fast, that there were twenty Companies of Soldiers in the Town, besides above a Thousand at *Charlestown*, that could not get over the Ferry; To this vast Concourse of People the Gentlemen in the Council-Chamber, who were at the Head of the Revolution, ordered the following Declaration to be read out of the Gallery.

THE

The DECLARATION of the Gentlemen,  
Merchants, and Inhabitants of Boston, and  
the Country adjacent, April 18, 1689.

“ I. **W**E have seen more than a Decad of  
“ Years rolled away, since the  
“ *English* World had the Discovery of an hor-  
“ rid Popish Plot; wherein the bloody Devotees  
“ of *Rome* had in their Design and Prospect  
“ no less than the Extinction of the Protestant  
“ Religion; which mighty Work they called;  
“ *the utter subduing of a pestilent Heresy*; wherein  
“ (they said) there never were such Hopes of  
“ Success since the Death of *Queen Mary*, as  
“ now in our Days: And we were of all Men  
“ the most insensible, if we should apprehend a  
“ Country so remarkable for the true Profession  
“ and pure Exercise of the Protestant Religion  
“ as *New-England* is, wholly unconcerned in the  
“ infamous Plot. To crush and break a Coun-  
“ try so entirely and signally made up of Re-  
“ formed Churches, and at length to involve it  
“ in the Miseries of an utter Extirpation, must  
“ needs carry even a Supererogation of Merit  
“ with it among such as were intoxicated with  
“ a Bigotry inspired into them by the great  
“ *Scarlet Whore*.

“ II. To get us within the Reach of the De-  
“ solation desired for us, it was no improper  
“ Thing that we should first have our Charter  
“ vacated, and the Hedge which kept us from  
“ the wild Beasts of the Field effectually broken  
“ down. The Accomplishment of this was  
“ hastned by the unwearied Solicitations, and  
“ scandalous Accusations of a Man, for his Ma-  
“ lice and Falshood well known unto us all.  
“ Our Charter was with a most injurious Pre-



Anno  
1689  
“ tence (and scarce that) of Law, condemned  
“ before it was possible for us to appear at *West-*  
“ *minster* in the legal Defence of it; and with-  
“ out a fair Leave to answer for ourselves, con-  
“ cerning the Crimes falsely laid to our Charge,  
“ we were put under a President and Council,  
“ without any Liberty for an Assembly, which  
“ the other *American* Plantations have, by a  
“ Commission from his Majesty.

“ III. The Commission was as illegal for the  
“ Form of it, as the Way of obtaining it was  
“ malicious and unreasonable: Yet we made  
“ no Resistance thereunto as we could easily  
“ have done; but chose to give all Mankind a  
“ Demonstration of our being a People suffici-  
“ ently dutiful and loyal to our King: And  
“ this with yet more Satisfaction, because we  
“ took Pains to make our selves believe as  
“ much as ever we could of the Wheedle then  
“ offer’d unto us; that his Majesty’s Desire was  
“ no other than the happy Increase and Ad-  
“ vance of these Provinces by their more im-  
“ mediate Dependance on the Crown of *England*.  
“ And we were convinced of it by the Courses  
“ immediately taken to damp and spoil our  
“ Trade; whereof Decays and Complaints pre-  
“ sently filled all the Country; while in the  
“ mean Time neither the Honour nor the Treas-  
“ ure of the King was at all advanced by this  
“ new Model of our Affairs, but a considerable  
“ Charge added unto the Crown.

“ IV. In little more than half a Year we saw  
“ this Commission superseded by another yet  
“ more absolute and arbitrary, with which Sir  
“ *Edmond Andross* arrived as our Governour:  
“ Who besides his Power, with the Advice and  
“ Consent of his Council, to make Laws and  
“ raise Taxes as he pleased, had also Authority  
“ by himself to muster and employ all Persons

“ residing in the Territory as Occasion shall  
 “ serve; and to transfer such Forces to any Ann<sup>o</sup>  
1689  
 “ *Englisb* Plantation in *America*, as Occasion  
 “ shall require. And several Companies of Sol-  
 “ diers were now brought from *Europe* to sup-  
 “ port what was to be imposed upon us, not  
 “ without repeated Menaces, that some Hun-  
 “ dreds more were intended for us.

“ V. The Government was no sooner in these  
 “ Hands, but Care was taken to load Prefer-  
 “ ments principally upon such Men as were  
 “ Strangers to, and Haters of the People: And  
 “ every one’s Observation hath noted, what  
 “ Qualifications recommended a Man to pub-  
 “ lick Offices and Employments, only here and  
 “ there a good Man was used, where others  
 “ could not easily be had; the Governour him-  
 “ self, with Assertions now and then falling from  
 “ him, made us jealous that it would be thought  
 “ for his Majesty’s Interest, if this People were  
 “ removed, and another succeeded in their  
 “ Room: And his far-fetch’d Instruments that  
 “ were growing rich among us, would gravely  
 “ inform us, that it was not for his Majesty’s  
 “ Interest that we should thrive. But of all  
 “ our Oppressors we were chiefly squeeze’d by  
 “ a Crew of abject Persons, fetch’d from *New-*  
 “ *York*, to be the Tools of the Adversary, stand-  
 “ ing at our Right-Hand; by these were ex-  
 “ traordinary and intolerable Fees extorted from  
 “ every one upon all Occasions, without any  
 “ Rules but those of their insatiable Avarice  
 “ and Beggary; and even the Probate of a  
 “ Will must now cost as many Pounds perhaps  
 “ as it did Shillings heretofore; nor could a  
 “ small Volume contain the other Illegalities  
 “ done by these Horse-Leeches in the two or  
 “ three Years that they have been sucking of us;  
 “ and what Laws they made, it was as impos-

Ann<sup>o</sup> 1689 *“* fible for us to know, as dangerous for us to  
*“* break \*; but we shall leave the Men of *Ipswich*  
*“* and of *Plimouth* (among others) to tell the  
*“* Story of the Kindness which has been shewn  
*“* them upon this Account. Doubtless a Land  
*“* so ruled as once *New-England* was, has not  
*“* without many Fears and Sighs beheld the  
*“* Wicked walking on every Side, and the vilest  
*“* Men exalted.

*“* VI. It was now plainly affirmed, both by  
*“* some in open Council, and by the same in  
*“* private Converse, that the People in *New-*  
*“* *England* were all Slaves, and the only Diffe-  
*“* rence between them and Slaves is their not  
*“* being bought and sold; and it was a Maxim  
*“* delivered in open Court unto us by one of the  
*“* Council, *That we must not think the Privileges*  
*“* *of English Men would follow us to the end of*  
*“* *the World*: Accordingly we have been treated  
*“* with multiplied Contradictions to *Magna*  
*“* *Charta*, the Rights of which we laid Claim  
*“* unto. Persons who did but peaceably object  
*“* against the raising of Taxes without an As-  
*“* sembly, have been for it fined, some twenty,  
*“* some thirty, and others fifty Pounds. Pack’d  
*“* and pick’d Juries have been very common  
*“* Things among us, when, under a pretended  
*“* Form of Law, the Trouble of some honest and  
*“* worthy Men has been aimed at: But when  
*“* some of this Gang have been brought upon  
*“* the Stage for the most detestable Enormities  
*“* that ever the Sun beheld, all Men have with  
*“* Admiration seen what Methods have been  
*“* taken that they might not be treated accord-  
*“* ing to their Crimes. Without a Verdict, yea

---

\* *He would neither suffer them to be printed, nor fairly published.*



*Anno*  
1689  
~

“ without a Jury sometimes have People been  
 “ fined most unrighteously; and some not of  
 “ the meanest Quality have been kept in long  
 “ and close Imprisonment without any the least  
 “ Information appearing against them, or an  
 “ *Habeas Corpus* allowed unto them. In short,  
 “ when our Oppressors have been a little out of  
 “ Money, ’twas but pretending some Offence  
 “ to be enquired into, and the most innocent of  
 “ Men were continually put unto no small Ex-  
 “ pence to answer the Demands of the Officers,  
 “ who must have Money of them, or a Prison  
 “ for them, tho’ none could accuse them of any  
 “ Misdemeanor.

“ VII. To plunge the poor People every  
 “ where into deeper Incapacities, there was one  
 “ very comprehensive Abuse given to us; Mul-  
 “ titudes of pious and sober Men through the  
 “ Land scrupled the Mode of Swearing on the  
 “ *Book*, desiring, that they might swear with an  
 “ uplifted Hand, agreeable to the ancient Cu-  
 “ stom of the *Colony*; and though we think we  
 “ can prove, that the *Common Law* amongst us  
 “ (as well as in some other Places under the  
 “ *English* Crown) not only indulges, but even  
 “ commands and enjoins the Rite of lifting the  
 “ Hand in Swearing; yet they that had this  
 “ Doubt were still put by from serving upon  
 “ any Juries; and many of them were most un-  
 “ accountably fined and imprisoned. Thus one  
 “ Grievance is a *Trojan* Horse, in the Belly of  
 “ which it is not easy to recount how many in-  
 “ sufferable Vexations have been contained.

“ VIII. Because these Things could not make  
 “ us miserable fast enough, there was a notable  
 “ Discovery made of we know not what Flaw  
 “ in all our Titles to our Lands; and though  
 “ besides our Purchase of them from the Na-  
 “ tives; and besides our actual peaceable un-

Anno  
1689

“ questioned Possession of them for near three-  
 “ score Years, and besides the Promise of King  
 “ *Charles* the Second, in his Proclamation sent  
 “ over to us in the Year 1683, That *no Man*  
 “ *here shall receive any Prejudice in his Free-hold or*  
 “ *Estate*; we had the Grant of our Lands un-  
 “ der the Seal of the Council of *Plimouth*, which  
 “ Grant was renewed and confirmed unto us  
 “ by King *Charles* the First, under the Great  
 “ Seal of *England*; and the General Court, which  
 “ consisted of the Patentees and their Associates,  
 “ had made particular Grants hereof to the se-  
 “ veral Towns, (though ’twas now deny’d by  
 “ the Governour, that there was any such thing  
 “ as a Town) among us; to all which Grants  
 “ the General Court annexed for the further se-  
 “ curing of them, a *General Act*, published  
 “ under the Seal of the *Colony*, in the Year 1684.  
 “ Yet we were every Day told, *That no Man was*  
 “ *Owner of a Foot of Land in all the Colony*. Ac-  
 “ cordingly, Writs of *Intrusion* began every where  
 “ to be served on People, that after all their  
 “ Sweat and their Cost upon their formerly  
 “ purchased Lands, thought themselves *Free-*  
 “ *holders* of what they had. And the Gover-  
 “ nour caused the Lands pertaining to these  
 “ and those particular Men, to be measured  
 “ out for his Creatures to take Possession of;  
 “ and the right Owners, for pulling up the  
 “ Stakes, have passed through Molestations e-  
 “ nough to tire all the Patience in the World.  
 “ They are more than a few, that were by  
 “ Terrors driven to take Patents for their Lands  
 “ at excessive Rates, to save them from the next  
 “ that might petition for them: And we fear,  
 “ that the forcing of the People at the Eastward  
 “ hereunto, gave too much Rise to the late un-  
 “ happy Invasion made by the *Indians* on them.  
 “ Blank Patents were got ready for the rest of  
 “ us,

Anno  
1689  
~

“ us, to be sold at a Price, that all the Money  
“ and Moveables in the Territory could scarce  
“ have paid. And several Towns in the Coun-  
“ try had their *Commons* begg’d by Persons (even  
“ by some of the Council themselves) who have  
“ been encouraged thereunto, by those that  
“ sought for Occasions to impoverish a Land  
“ already *peeled, meeted out, and trodden down.*

“ IX. All the Council were not engaged in  
“ these ill Actions, but those of them which  
“ were true Lovers of their *Country* were seldom  
“ admitted to, and seldomer consulted at the  
“ Debates which produced these unrighteous  
“ Things: Care was taken to keep them un-  
“ der Disadvantages; and the *Governour* with  
“ five or six more, did what they would. We  
“ bore all these, and many more such Things,  
“ without making any Attempt for any Relief;  
“ only Mr. *Mather*, purely out of Respect unto  
“ his afflicted Country, undertook a Voyage  
“ into *England*; which when these Men suspect-  
“ ed him to be preparing for, they used all  
“ Manner of Craft and Rage, not only to in-  
“ terrupt his Voyage, but to ruin his Person  
“ too. God having through many Difficulties  
“ given him to arrive at *White-hall*, the King,  
“ more than once or twice, promised him a  
“ certain *Magna Charta* for a speedy Redress of  
“ many Things which we were groaning under:  
“ And in the mean Time said, *That our Gover-*  
“ *nour should be writ unto, to forbear the Mea-*  
“ *sures that he was upon.* However, after this,  
“ we were injured in those very Things which  
“ were complained of; and besides what Wrong  
“ hath been done in our Civil Concerns, we  
“ suppose the Ministers, and the Churches every  
“ where have seen our Sacred Concerns apace  
“ going after them: How they have been dis-  
“ countenanced has had a Room in the Reflec-



Anno  
1689  
“ tions of every Man, that is not a Stranger in  
“ our *Israel*.

“ X. And yet that our Calamity might not  
“ be terminated here, we are again briar'd in  
“ the Perplexities of another *Indian* War; how,  
“ or why, is a Mystery too deep for us to un-  
“ fold. And though 'tis judg'd that our *Indian*  
“ Enemies are not above an Hundred in Num-  
“ ber, yet an Army of a Thousand *English* hath  
“ been rais'd for the conquering of them; which  
“ Army of our *poor Friends and Brethren* now  
“ under *Papish Commanders* (for in the Army as  
“ well as in the Council, *Papists* are in *Commission*)  
“ has been under such a Conduct that not an  
“ *Indian* hath been kill'd, but more *English* are  
“ supposed to have died through Sickness and  
“ Hardship than we have Adversaries there  
“ alive; and the whole War hath been so ma-  
“ naged, that we cannot but suspect in it a  
“ Branch of the *Plot to bring us low*; which  
“ we leave to be further enquir'd into in due  
“ Time.

“ XI. We did nothing against these Proceed-  
“ ings, but only cry to our God; they have  
“ caused the Cry of the Poor to come unto him, and  
“ he hears the Cry of the afflicted. We have been  
“ quiet hitherto, and so still we should have  
“ been, had not the Great God at this Time  
“ laid us under a double Engagement to do some-  
“ thing for our Security: Besides what we have  
“ in the strangely unanimous Inclination which  
“ our Countrymen by extreamest Necessities are  
“ driven unto. For, First, we are informed;  
“ that the rest of the *English America* is alarm-  
“ ed with just and great Fears, that they may  
“ be attack'd by the *French*, who have lately  
“ ('tis said) already treated many of the *Eng-  
lish* with worse than *Turkish* Cruelties; and  
“ while we are in equal Danger of being sur-  
“ prized

" prized by them, it is high time we should be *Anno*  
 " better guarded, than we are like to be while *1689*  
 " the Government remains in the Hands by *7*  
 " which it had been held of late. Moreover we  
 " have understood (tho' the Governour has ta-  
 " ken all imaginable Care to keep us all igno-  
 " rant thereof) that the Almighty God hath  
 " been pleased to prosper the noble Undertaking  
 " of the Prince of *Orange*, to preserve the Three  
 " Kingdoms from the horrible Brinks of Popery  
 " and Slavery, and to bring to a condign Punish-  
 " ment those worst of Men, by whom *English*  
 " Liberties have been destroy'd; in compliance  
 " with which glorious Action, we ought surely  
 " to follow the Patterns which the Nobility,  
 " Gentry and Commonalty in several Parts of  
 " those Kingdoms have set before us, tho' they  
 " therein chiefly proposed to prevent what we  
 " already endure.

XII. " WE do therefore seize upon the Per-  
 " sons of those few ill Men which have been,  
 " (next to our Sins) the grand Authors of our  
 " Miseries; resolving to secure them, for what  
 " Justice, Orders from his Highness, with the  
 " *English* Parliament shall direct, lest, 'ere we  
 " are aware, we find (what we may fear, being  
 " on all Sides in Danger) our selves to be by  
 " them given away to a Foreign Power, before  
 " such Orders can reach unto us; for which  
 " Orders we now humbly wait. In the mean  
 " time firmly believing, that we have endeavoured  
 " nothing but what meer Duty to God and our  
 " Country calls for at our Hands: We commit  
 " our Enterprize unto the Blessing of Him, *who*  
 " *hears the Cry of the Oppressed*, and advise all our  
 " Neighbours, for whom we have thus ventured  
 " our selves, to joyn with us in Prayers and all  
 " just Actions for the Defence of the Land."

THE Government being thus dissolved, the  
 Gentiemen in the Council-Chamber agreed to  
 call a General Assembly to meet as soon as possible, and in the mean time took the Government into their own Hands, under the Character of *A Committee of Safety*. The Assembly met towards the latter End of *May*, and after many Debates what Form of Government to set up, they resolved at length to resume their Charter, as appears by the following Declaration, published at *Boston May 24. 1689.*

*At a Convention of the Representatives  
 of the several Towns and Villages of  
 the Massachuset Colony in New-Eng-  
 land.*

“ WE the Representatives of the several  
 “ Towns and Villages of the *Massi-*  
 “ *chusets* Colony in *New-England*, convened at  
 “ *Boston, May 22, 1689.* having fully and deli-  
 “ berately examined the Minds and Instructions  
 “ of the several Towns belonging to the said  
 “ Colony, do find it to be the General Consent  
 “ and Concurrence of our several Towns to re-  
 “ assume the Government according to Charter-  
 “ Rights: Having also weighed and considered  
 “ the Propositions presented and tendered to us  
 “ by our honourable Governour, Deputy-Gov-  
 “ vernour and Assistants, chosen and sworn *Anno*  
 “ *1686*, do therefore, with Respect to the Di-  
 “ rections by our several Towns, and in Prose-  
 “ cution of our former Declaration presented,  
 “ declare our Minds and Resolutions for the Set-  
 “ tlement of Civil Government amongst us, ac-  
 “ cording to Charter-Directions: Having seri-  
 “ ously weighed the present Circumstances and  
 “ shattered Condition this Colony is in.

“ AND



“ AND being tenderly sensible of the afflict- Ann<sup>o</sup>  
1689  
W  
 “ ing Hand of God which is at present upon us  
 “ in regard of our Unsettlement and Want of  
 “ that Civil Jurisdiction that in former Days we  
 “ have rejoiced in; and knowing also the ear-  
 “ nest Desires and Expectations of the several  
 “ Places we belong unto, to receive a comforta-  
 “ ble Answer and Return in order to their Re-  
 “ instating and Settlement under their former  
 “ Patent-Rights, that so they might enjoy Tran-  
 “ quillity, as in former Days and pleasant Years  
 “ that are past. This Colony having likewise  
 “ solemnly addressed themselves to Almighty  
 “ God by Fasting and Prayer, for Pardon of our  
 “ manifold Wilderness-Provocations, and resto-  
 “ ring to us our pleasant Things; and for Di-  
 “ rection in this present Juncture to such Me-  
 “ thods and Ways of Settlement of Civil Rule,  
 “ as may most conduce to his Glory, and the  
 “ Peace, Safety and Prosperity of this our poor  
 “ distressed Land: And taking signal Notice of  
 “ a gracious Answer to our Prayers, in the un-  
 “ animous Agreement of our several Towns and  
 “ Villages, concurring in their Apprehensions  
 “ and Desires of the Reviving of our Charter-  
 “ Rights and Privileges, and that we do again  
 “ settle upon that firm Foundation that we have  
 “ already built upon, and have signally observed  
 “ the Presence of God attending the same.

“ WE do therefore so far prize our former  
 “ Liberties and Enjoyments both Civil and Sa-  
 “ cred, as to resolve (by the Help of God) to  
 “ venture our Lives and Estates for the Reviving  
 “ and Maintaining of them, knowing and belie-  
 “ ving such a Way of Settlement comfortable to  
 “ and safe for our selves, and correspondent to  
 “ the noble Undertaking of his Royal Highness  
 “ the Prince of *Orange*, in the late Settlement of  
 “ Affairs in the Renowned *English* Nation, &c.  
 “ whose

*anno*  
 1689 “ whose antient Liberties and Rights in their  
 “ several Cities and Corporations, he hath in-  
 “ vested them withal; and (we doubt not) will  
 “ encourage and commend us (in the midst of  
 “ our Oppression) for imitating so Noble and  
 “ Prince-like a Pattern, in using all due Means  
 “ for the Recovery of what was so unjustly and  
 “ unreasonably rent out of our Hands.

“ THE Reasons inducing us to these our  
 “ Resolutions premised, are,

(1.) “ *THAT* it is an Undertaking allowed  
 “ and countenanced by his Royal Highness our Re-  
 “ nowned Prince, that we be reinstated in our Patent-  
 “ Privileges, and be found in such a Method of Go-  
 “ vernment, according to our antient Charter-Rights,  
 “ which he hath given Patterns of and Directions to  
 “ in the Realm of England, which Realm we have  
 “ a Dependance upon, and stand in so near a Rela-  
 “ tion to.

(2.) “ *THAT* there is an absolute Necessity of  
 “ Settlement of Civil Government amongst our selves,  
 “ without which we cannot enjoy Peace, Safety and  
 “ Tranquillity.

(3.) “ *THAT* the Dependance and Method of  
 “ Settlement of the said Government in this present  
 “ Juncture, lieth wholly in the Voice of the People.

“ BEING sensible also of the great Disad-  
 “ vantage and Danger we are all in, in this pre-  
 “ sent Vacancy of Government, subject to Vio-  
 “ lence: Likewise understanding the great Dis-  
 “ advantages that Merchants and Traders, and  
 “ all honest Men are in, of recovering of their  
 “ honest Debts and Dues, whereby they may  
 “ maintain their Trading, and approve them-  
 “ selves faithful to those (not only at home, but in  
 “ Foreign Countries) they correspond withal.

“ WE do therefore trust in Almighty God  
 “ to carry on and prosper our Desires and En-  
 “ deavours, which God hath so far succeeded,

“ THE

“ THE Representatives of the several Towns  
 “ in the said Colony, having seriously weighed  
 “ the sad Circumstances that this our Country  
 “ is at present under, do hereby (in behalf of  
 “ our selves and Country) declare this to be our  
 “ Mind and full Resolutions (by Divine Assist-  
 “ ance) to settle a Government, according to  
 “ Charter-DireCTIONS and our Patent-Privileges;  
 “ and do hereby declare the Honourable *Simon*  
 “ *Bradstreet*, Esq; our Governour, *Thomas Dan-*  
 “ *forth*, Esq; Deputy-Governour, with the rest of  
 “ the Assistants chosen and sworn *Anno 1686*, to  
 “ be reinstated as formerly, and take the present  
 “ Care and Conduct of this People, together  
 “ with the Deputies sent from the respective  
 “ Towns of this Colony, according to ancient  
 “ Custom, and as need requires: And that there  
 “ be Acts of Jurisdiction put forth for the Pre-  
 “ servation of our Peace, Prosperity and Safety.  
 “ Likewise that there be a Choice made of a  
 “ Major-General, for the Regulating of Mili-  
 “ tary Affairs; and also Assistants for the Supply  
 “ of such as are wanting in Government; and  
 “ that this Method of Government may be found  
 “ amongst us when Order shall come from the  
 “ Higher Powers in *England*.

“ WE do therefore devolve the full Power of  
 “ Government upon, and intrust it in the Hands  
 “ abovesaid, fully confiding in the said Honour-  
 “ able Persons for the *Administration of Go-*  
 “ *vernment* for the ensuing Part of this Year,  
 “ ’till a further Choice be made according to  
 “ Charter-Direction as aforesaid: But in case  
 “ Order from Higher Power from *England* (up-  
 “ on whom we have Dependance) be transmit-  
 “ ted for any Alteration, then the said Govern-  
 “ ment thus constituted do signifie the same to  
 “ the respective Towns of this Colony, that so  
 “ they



*Anno* “ they may be consulted with, in Order to their  
*1689* “ Approbation and Compliance.

“ Further, We do expect, and signify our  
 “ Desires, (and that according to our several In-  
 “ structions from the several Towns, whose Re-  
 “ presentatives we are) that there be an Enlarge-  
 “ ment of Freemen for the Annual Choice of  
 “ Government, and all Votes relating thereun-  
 “ to, and that the Government thus reinstated  
 “ do faithfully endeavour the Confirmation and  
 “ Settling of Charter-Privileges.

“ And we do further declare our high Esteem  
 “ of those Honourable and Worthy Gentlemen  
 “ who have intervened in an Hour of our greatest  
 “ Extremity and Temptation, and implore Al-  
 “ mighty God to retaliate their great Kindness,  
 “ and grant them the Blessings of this and a  
 “ better Life, and hope we shall pay all honoura-  
 “ ble and due Respects to them, and perform  
 “ for them what may be justly expected at our  
 “ Hands.

“ *THIS* we present as a full and final Decla-  
 “ ration of our Minds and Votes, expecting the Con-  
 “ servation of our Peace from the Government thus  
 “ constituted, further depending upon your Honours  
 “ Compliance in such and no other Way of Settlement,  
 “ knowing in this our Act we have discharged our  
 “ Consciences to our Country, contrived the best Expe-  
 “ dient for the present Settlement, and must leave it  
 “ to your Honours Defect, if any evil Occurrence shall  
 “ for the future happen to this Country by your Non-  
 “ Compliance with us.

Unanimously voted by the Representa-  
 tives convened at *Boston, May 24. 1789.*

*Ebenezer Prout, Clerk to the Representatives.*

'Tis hard to determine whether the Assembly was right in this Vote; if indeed their Charter had been taken from them without Form of Law they might have resumed it, as the Colonies of *Connecticut* and *Rhode-Island* did, but when after a legal Tryal Judgment had been given against them in the *Court of Chancery*, none but the *Highest Powers in the Nation* could reverse it, which certainly were not the Assembly at *Boston*, but the Parliament of *England*. 'Tis certain the *Massachuset-Province* had hard Measure in the Loss of their Charter, and harder yet, in not having it restored at the *Revolution*, but whether they were in the Right in attempting to do themselves Justice before they had tried all Methods for a legal Recovery of their Charter, is what I will not venture to affirm: Nor was the Assembly itself fully satisfied with their own Vote, for when the Anniversary Election of Magistrates for the following Year came about, they had not the Courage to proceed to a *Choice*, but agreed to let Things continue as they were till they should receive Directions from the King and Queen of *England*.

IN this uncertain State of Things the People imagined the Government to be dissolved, and that there was no legal Authority to punish them for their Crimes, which gave Occasion to innumerable Disorders, the *Mob* met together in a riotous and tumultuous Manner, plundering the Favourers of the late Government, and committing Robberies in divers Places; the poor *Indian Converts* could hardly escape their Insults, for a Party of *English* attempting to carry off some Sheep from a little Island near *Martha's Vineyard*, in the Possession of the *Indian Converts*, under Pretence of their being stole from them; the Inhabitants drove them off the Island, and to prevent any false Impressions that the Governour might

*Ann* might receive from the *Report* of this Scuffle;  
*1689* the Sachem sent him the following handsome  
*Manifesto.*

“ **S** E V E R A L of your *English* have been on my  
 “ Island, and would have forcibly taken  
 “ Sheep from thence, and we are much threa-  
 “ ten’d therewith: I am doubtful; if they per-  
 “ sist in that Resolution it may occasion *Blood-*  
 “ *shed.* You know, that while your Grandfather  
 “ and my Father lived there never happened  
 “ any Difference in such Things, nor hope will  
 “ be Occasion given by me. I desire the same  
 “ Amity may be continued: Nor can the  
 “ *English* say that we have not manifested our  
 “ Allegiance to the King by a continued Sub-  
 “ jection.

“ A N D although ’tis true, we have desired  
 “ your Order should come to us, rather than  
 “ your Officer, which has generously been ob-  
 “ served, yet we are willing, in Case the *En-*  
 “ *glish* pretend any Thing ours have injured  
 “ them in, let an Officer by Writ from Au-  
 “ thority do his Duty, then we shall know how  
 “ in an orderly Way to be relieved: Yet shall  
 “ the least Boy bringing your Order, as in your  
 “ Grandfather’s Time command any Thing.  
 “ And if you see Cause on any Complaint about  
 “ our Sheep, you may command all of them,  
 “ hoping to find, as hitherto, a Decision by the  
 “ Rules of Justice. We hope, we shall not see  
 “ (as is too much practised in other Places) an  
 “ *English* Man pretending an *Indian* to be in  
 “ his Debt, to come to our Houses and pay  
 “ himself; or in other Cases beat our People,  
 “ but as hitherto, we may have equal Justice,  
 “ being the King’s Subjects; and Violence and  
 “ Riot committed on our People by the *English*,  
 “ may be esteemed of the same Nature and  
 “ Qua-



“ Quality, as ours against them; of which, *Amo*  
 “ with the Justices, we pray you would consider *1689*  
 “ and take effectual Care.”

BUT at length a Letter arrived from the King and Queen of *England*, bearing Date *August* the 12th, 1689; wherein their Majesties were pleased to testify their Allowance and Approbation of their late Proceedings, and to authorize the present Magistrates to continue the Administration of the publick Affairs, ’till their Majesties with the Advice of their Privy Council, should settle them upon such a Basis, as might satisfy all their Subjects in that *Colony*. Some Time before this, Sir *William Phips* returned to *New-England* by Advice of some of the *Lords* of the *Council*, who thought him capable of doing his Country Service in this *Crisis* of their Affairs, but before he left *London* a Messenger from King *James* offered him the Government of *New-England*, which he generously refused, and chose to come over without any Character, rather than accept of a *Commission* from a Prince who had so notoriously invaded the Rights of his Subjects. Sir *William* found his Country in the utmost Confusion; the Government being in a Manner dissolved, and the *Indians* at the same Time invading the Frontiers: The new Government had tried several Methods for renewing the Peace; they applied to one of the great *Sachems* of the East, and engaged him with a Sum of Money to employ his Interests to bring the *Indians* to a Treaty, but instead of being a Mediator, when he had got his Money he became a Party, and put himself at the Head of the Enemy: Captain *Greenleaf* was sent to treat with the *Indians* of *Penacook*, and to perswade them by all the Promises of Kindness and Civility to live in Peace;

ANNO

1689

W

but as soon as he was gone they joyned the *Indians* of *Saco*, and assisted them in the Attack of the Garrison of *Quechecho*, which they surprized by the Treachery of *Mesandouit*, a *Segamore*, whom Major *Walderen* the Governour had entertain'd that Night in his House as a Friend. The *Indians* lay in Ambush in the neighbouring *Woods* all Night, and about break of Day, *Mesandouit* opening the Gates, they rushed in upon the secure Garrison, killed the Major and twenty two of his Men, burn'd four or five of the best Houses, and carried away 29 People into Captivity; in their Retreat they killed Mr. *Broughton*, but Mr. *Emmerson* Minister of *Berwick*, by refusing to lodge with the Major that Night, though very much press'd to it, had a remarkable Deliverance.

As soon as the Government were informed of this Action, they ordered Captain *Noyes* with a strong Party to march to *Penacook*, and drive the *Indians* out of that Part of the Country; but they saved him the Trouble, for having slain several Persons at an Out-Farm on the North-side of *Merimack-River*, they retired into the *Woods*, and left the open Country to his Mercy; the Captain cut down all their Corn, burn'd their *Wigwams*, and laid their Plantation desolate. Captain *Wincal* with a small Party marched from *Piscataqua*, as far as *Winnopisseag-Ponds*, and killed one or two of the Enemy, but four young Men of *Saco*, who were to have joyned him, going into the *Woods* to fetch their Horses fell into an Ambush, and were killed; as soon as they were missing, 24 armed Men went out to look after them, and had a brisk Skirmish with the Enemy in the *Woods*, but venturing too far, they were surrounded by a vast Body of *Indians*, and forced to retire with the Loss of five or six of their Company. Immediately after this

lowed the Loss of the Fort and Garrison of *Pemmaquid*, by the following Accident: One Mr. *Starky* travelling early in the Morning, on the second of *August* from *Pemmaquid-Fort* to *New-Harbour*, happened to fall into the Hands of the *Indians*, who to save his Life and recover his Liberty, informed them, that *Pemmaquid-Fort* at that Time had but a very small Garrison in it, Mr. *Giles* with 14 Men being gone out to his Farm, and several others abroad upon their private Occasions; the *Indians* hereupon divided their Forces into two Parts, one of which went up to the *Falls*, and killed Mr. *Giles* and his Men at his Farm; the other immediately invested the Fort, and from a high Rock which overlooked it, gauged the Besieged so miserably, as obliged them to surrender the next Morning, only upon Condition of Liberty; but the *Indians* broke the Capitulation, and butcher'd the greatest Part of the Garrison: Capt. *Weems* the Governour was disabled by the blowing up of some Gunpowder by Accident in his Face; Captain *Skinner* and Captain *Farnham* who were abroad, attempting to get into the Fort from an Island about half a Mile off were both slain, as they landed upon the Rocks, and Mr. *Patteshall* who lay with his Sloop in the *Barbican* was taken and slain; these Losses caused the Inhabitants of *Sheepscoat* and *Kennebunk* to abandon those Places, and retire to *Falmouth*, as did several other Planters in other Parts of the East.

THE Flame of War spreading thus into the Heart of the Country, and the *French* engaging openly in it, since the late *Revolution*; 'twas Time for the Government to think of raising all the Forces they could, in Order to bring it to a speedy Issue; the *Massachuset-Colony* therefore sent out seven or eight Companies under the Command of Major *Swayne*, who were joyned



ANNO  
1689  
W

by a Party of *English* and *Indian* Converts from *Plimouth* Colony, under the Command of Major *Church*; but the Confusion of the Publick Affairs, occasioned by the late Change of the Government, not suffering them to march out 'till the latter End of *August*, they did nothing considerable in the Field: Besides, their Motions were discover'd to the Enemy by some *Indian* Auxiliaries, who being sent out with Lieutenant *Flag* to get Intelligence of the Enemy, consulted together in their own Language at *Winnopisseag*, and obliging the Lieutenant to return with but two *Indians*, 19 of them staid in those Parts 11 Days without an *Englishman* in their Company; in which Time they found out the Enemy, lay with them two Nights, and told them every thing they knew of the Numbers, Motions and Designs of the *English*: Upon which they retired into their inaccessible Woods and Swamps, and appeared no more in a Body while the Army was in those Parts; which was not very long, for when they had garrisoned *Wells*, *York*, *Berwick*, *Quechecho*, and some other Frontier Places, they returned.

THE *Indians* however did a great deal of Mischief by their flying Parties. A Body of them lying hid in the Woods took Notice how many Men belonged to Lieutenant *Huckins's* Garrison, and seeing them all go out to their daily Work, they intercepted them in their Return, and put 17 of them, which was all but one, to the Sword. They then attacked the Fort, in which were only two Boys and some Women and Children: The Boys defended themselves with great Bravery, wounding several of the *Indians*, 'till they found out a Way to set fire to the Fort, and even then they would not surrender but upon Condition of their Lives, which tho' these inhuman Wretches solemnly promised,  
yet

yet they killed three or four of the Children and one of the Boys, the other having the good Fortune to make his Escape. About the same Time another Party of them assaulted *Casco*, killed Captain *Bracket*, and had put the whole Town to the Sword, if Captain *Hull* had not come in the very Nick of Time to their Relief; who, after a warm Engagement of several Hours, wherein he lost 10 or 12 of his Men, put them to flight.

Anno  
1689

THE *English* Garrisons thinking themselves secure from the Enemy while the Country was covered with Frost and Snow, neglected their Guard, and allowed the Soldiers to mind their private Affairs; but the *French* and *Indians* made their Advantage of the hard Weather, and in the Beginning of *February* made a Descent from *Canada* upon a *Dutch* Town called *Schenectada* in the Province of *New-York*, killed 60 of the Inhabitants, and carried away 30 into Captivity. On the 18th of *March* they made another Descent upon *Salmon Falls* under the Command of Monsieur *Artell* a *Frenchman*, and one *Hoophood* a Leader of the *Hurons*: They burnt the greatest Part of the Town, killed 30 Persons, and took 50 Prisoners. The neighbouring Garrisons being alarmed with this, rallied their Forces, and pursued the Enemy with 140 Men; but after some small Skirmishes, wherein the Loss was pretty equal on both Sides, they were forced to return.

HARD was the Fate of those poor Wretches that fell into the Hands of these barbarous Savages; as the Reader will see by the following Relations taken from the Mouths of some \* who were afterwards redeemed out of Captivity.

---

\* Mather, Book VII. p. 69.

Anno  
1689  
w

Among the Prisoners taken at *Salmon Falls* was one *Robert Rogers*, a corpulent Man, who being tired with travelling under an insupportable Burthen which the *Indians* laid upon his Back, watched his Opportunity, and run away: As soon as he was missing his Masters went in pursuit of him, and tracking him by the Snow found him hid in an hollow Tree. When they had pulled him down they stript him and beat him, and then pricked him forwards with the Points of their Swords 'till they brought him back to the Place from whence he had deserted. It being then almost Night, they ty'd him to a Tree with his Hands behind him 'till they had refresh'd themselves, after which they cut down a Parcel of Fire-Wood, and bringing it into a plain Place laid it round the Trunk of a small red Oak-Tree; They then bid the Prisoner take Leave of his Friends; and having allowed him a few Minutes for his Prayers, they bound him to the Stake, the rest of the Prisoners being placed at some Distance round about the Stake ty'd Arm to Arm. Fire was then put to the Wood, which was at such a Distance as only to roast him. When the Criminal was almost suffocated they pulled back the Fire and gave him Air, and to add to his Torment they cut off Slices of his Flesh and threw them in his Face. Thus was he fry'd to Death with a slow Fire, the *Indians* all the while dancing round about him, and endeavouring to drown his Shrieks with their barbarous Hoopings. When he was dead they left him bound to the Stake, in which Posture the *English* found the Body next Day, and bestowed a Funeral upon it.

*ROGER S's* Case may, perhaps, be thought peculiar, because he was a Deserter; but it was the constant Practice of the *Indians* to strip their Prisoners, allowing them neither Stock-ings



ings nor Shoes, but only a slight Blanket to <sup>Ann.</sup> cover their Nakedness, except in the Winter, <sup>1689</sup> when they were sometimes favoured with a Pair of Leather-Stockings to keep their Feet from perishing with the Cold. They made them carry all their Baggage, feeding them with no other Provision than Ground-Nuts, Acorns, Purslain, Hogweed, Weeds, Roots, and sometimes Dogs-flesh, and of this no more than was just sufficient to keep Soul and Body together. They obliged them to travel in these Circumstances about 20 or 30 Miles a Day, and if any of them tired, or could not travel their Pace, it was their constant Practice to strike their Hatchets into their Brains.

THEY had no Regard either to Sex or Age ; for *Mary Ferguson*, who was taken Captive at the same time, and afterwards redeemed, declared that her Companion, a young Maid of about 15 or 16 Years of Age, had a heavy Burthen laid upon her Back, which she carried as long as she could stand under it ; but at last, bursting out into Tears, and crying she was able to go no further, her *Indian* Master took her aside into the Bushes, cut off her Head, and carried about the Scalp in Triumph. *James Key*, a Child of 5 Years of Age, was taken at the same Time, and fell to the Share of *Hoophood*, who observing him to cry for the Loss of his Parents, bound him to a Tree and whipt him unmercifully 'till he was all over of gore Blood from Head to Foot : The Child continuing still to cry, contracted a Soreness in one of his Eyes, at which his Master being enraged, thrust his Thumb into it, and forced it out of his Head ; telling him at the same Time, that if he did not leave crying he would serve the other so too : But about ten Days after, the Child being tired, and not capable of travelling so fast as he would have it, he buried the Blade of his Hatchet in

*Anno*  
1689  
irs Brains, and then chopped its Body into small  
Picces, and threw it into the River. Happy  
were those Captives that fell to the Lot of the  
*French*; for tho' they were forced to travel bare-  
foot thro' Frost and Snow, above 100 Miles to  
*Canada*, yet when they came thither they were  
used like Prisoners of War, and taken care of  
till they were exchanged.

*Anno*  
1690  
THE Government of *New-England* in this  
Exigency of their Affairs published a Proclama-  
tion for Reformation of Manners, dated *March*  
13, 1689-90. wherein it was ordered, " That  
" the Laws of the Colony against *Vice*, and all  
" Sorts of *Debauchery* and *Prophaneness* be put in  
" Execution, particularly the Laws against  
" *Blasphemy*, *Cursing*, *prophane Swearing*, *Lying*,  
" *unlawful Gaming*, *Sabbath-breaking*, *Idleness*,  
" *Drunkenness*, *Uncleannefs*, and all the Entice-  
" ments and Nurseries of such Impieties: And  
" as all Persons are hereby warned to avoid  
" those Vices, so all inferior Officers are en-  
" joyned to perform their Duty in finding and  
" bringing out Offenders against the aforesaid  
" Laws. 'Tis further desired, that all the Mi-  
" nisters of God, will to the publick Reading of  
" this Proclamation, adjoyn their own fervent  
" Labours; not only in rebuking these Evils,  
" but also to witness against more spiritual Sins,  
" which fall not so much under the Cognizance of  
" human Laws, as *Unbelief*, *Wordliness*, *Heresy*,  
" *Pride*, *Wrath*, *Strife*, *Envy*, and the Neglect of  
" *Publick Worship*. The Churches are likewise  
" advised to reflect seriously and frequently on  
" their Covenants, to sharpen their Discipline  
" against those that walk disorderly, and to com-  
" pose all Differences and Contentions among  
" themselves. Furthermore 'tis expected, that  
" the several Towns within this Jurisdiction do  
" speedily furnish themselves with Schools for  
" the

“ the good Education of Youth, and take special Anno  
 “ Care to avoid Factions and Quarrels in their 1690  
 “ Town-Affairs. All Plantations are strictly  
 “ commanded not to continue any longer with-  
 “ out a Ministry among them. And finally, All  
 “ the People are advertised, that if they do not  
 “ observe these Rules, they may expect that God  
 “ will punish them yet seven times more for their  
 “ Iniquities; but if they observe them, it will give  
 “ a greater Prospect of Prosperity than can arise  
 “ from the best Councils and biggest Armies.

D A Y S of solemn Fasting and Humilia-  
 tion were frequently observed throughout the  
 whole Province for a Blessing upon their Arms,  
 and several Councils were held at the same  
 Time to consider of the State of the War, and  
 concert proper Measures for carrying it on with  
 Success. It was generally agreed, That since  
 the *French* had joyned openly with the *Indians* in  
 making War upon the *English*, the greatest Dan-  
 ger was from *them*, for the *Indians* were a con-  
 temptible Body of themselves; but as they were  
 instructed in the Arts of War, and supplied with  
 all warlike Stores by the *French*, they were ca-  
 pable of doing a great deal of Mischief, and  
 might in time become very formidable. Sir  
*William Phips* therefore formed a Project to drive  
 the *French* out of their Settlements in *L'Acadie*,  
 since known by the Name of *New-Scotland*;  
 which the General Court of the *Massachusetts*  
 having approved, immediately ordered 700 Men  
 to be put on Board a small Fleet of Ships under  
 his Command for the Expedition.

*L'Acadie*, or *Nova Scotia*, is Part of the *Terra*  
*Canadensis*; it lies from 43 to 51 Degrees of  
 North Latitude, and from the River of *St. Croix*  
 in *Novembegua* to the great River of *Canada*;  
 has always 200 Leagues of Coast, but was never  
 much inhabited by the *Indians* themselves. The  
 Bounds



Annos  
1690  
w

Bounds of this Province are the *Atlantick Ocean* to the North, *Breton Island* and the *Bay of St. Lawrence* to the East, *Canada* to the West, and *New-England* to the South. When Sir *Ferdinando Gorges* was President of the *New-England Company*, he proposed to Sir *William Alexander*, one of the Secretaries of State for *Scotland*, and afterwards Earl of *Sterling*, the procuring a particular Patent for this Country; which Sir *William*, being in favour with King *James I.* easily obtained; it bears Date *September 10, 1621.* The next Year Sir *William* and some others who were concerned with him attempted to make a Settlement, but not being able to perfect their Design, it lay waste 'till the Year 1662, when the *French* took Possession of it, and fortified themselves at *Port-Royal* on the North Side of *Funda-Bay*, in 45 Degrees North Latitude. The *English* had so little an Opinion of this Territory that they abandoned it to the *French* by the Treaty of *Breda* in the Year 1667, and never attempted to recover it 'till this time, when they began to apprehend the Danger of the Neighbourhood of so potent an Enemy. Monsieur *Meneval* was now Governour of the Province, who had built a little Fort at *Port-Royal* for the Security of the Plantations along the Coast, where the Inhabitants drove a considerable Trade in Lumber, Fishing and Furs, and were encreased to the Number of 6 or 7000 Souls.

SIR *William Phips* sailed with his Fleet from *Nutascot* on the 28th of *April* 1690, and on the 11th of *May* arrived before *Port-Royal*. 'Twas then but a small Town, defended with nothing but single Palisadoes, but is since pretty much enlarged and fortified. It lies in the Latitude of 45 Degrees and 40 Minutes, upon the Edge of a Basin a League broad and two Leagues long, having at the Entry 16 or 18 Fathom Water

Water on one Side, and 6 or 7 on the other. *Ann*  
 The Garrison not being provided for a Defence, *1690*  
 surrendred after a short Resistance, upon Condi-  
 tion of a safe Conduct to *Canada*. Sir *William*  
 took Possession of the Country in the Name of  
 King *William* and Queen *Mary*, and having de-  
 molished the Fort, sent away the *French* Garrison  
 according to the Articles of Capitulation, and  
 administred an Oath of Allegiance to the King  
 and Queen of *England* to all that staid behind,  
 over whom he placed a Governour, and then  
 returned. In his Way home he destroyed ano-  
 ther *French* Settlement at *St. John's* River on the  
 South Side of *Funda Bay*, and arrived at *Boston*  
 the 30th of *May*. The *English* kept Possession of  
 this Country 'till the Peace of *Ryswick*, in the  
 Year 1697, when it was restored to the *French*;  
 but by the Treaty of *Utrecht* it was yielded to  
 the *English* Crown for ever, and *Port-Royal*  
 changed its Name into *Annapolis-Royal*.

THE Success of this Expedition encouraged  
 the Government of *New-England* to attempt the  
 Conquest of all *Canada*; where the *French* had  
 made such great Settlements, as were like to  
 prove a terrible Thorn in the Sides of the Coun-  
 try.

*Canada*, according to the *French* Account of  
 it, contains a Tract of Land of almost 2000  
 Miles in Length, and 840 in Breadth, situate  
 between the 39th and 65th Degrees of North  
 Latitude; but this Account takes in *Acadia*,  
*Newfoundland* and *Terra de Laborador*, which  
 belong now to the *English*. The *French* took  
 Possession of it in the Beginning of the last  
 Century, and made Settlements at *Quebec*,  
*Montreal*, and other Places upon the Banks of  
 the Great River of *St. Lawrence*; but the most  
 considerable Place for Strength is *Quebec*, which  
 is divided into the Upper and Lower City; 'tis  
 com-

*Ann<sup>o</sup> 1690* commanded by a Castle which stands on an Eminence. There are five Churches in the High City; and a Cathedral, which consists of a Bishop and 12 Prebendaries, who live together in the Chapter-House, the Architecture of which is truly wonderful; but the City has neither Key nor Fortification. This Place Sir *William Phips* was sent to reduce with a Fleet of 32 Sail of Ships, besides Tenders, on Board of which were 2000 Men. The Fleet was divided into three Squadrons; the first consisted of 13 Sail, under the Command of Capt. *Gregory Sugars*, Admiral, who hoisted his Flag on Board the *Six Friends*, a Ship of 44 Guns; the second consisted of 9 Sail, under the Command of Vice-Admiral *Gilbert*, on Board the *Swan*; and the third of 9, under the Command of Rear-Admiral *Eldridge*, on Board the *America Merchant*. The whole Fleet set sail from *Hull* August the 9th; but by reason of hard Weather and contrary Winds, did not come within Sight of *Quebec* 'till the 5th of *October*; a sad Time of Year to begin an Attempt of this Nature. It was agreed before Sir *William* left *Boston*, that while he attacked *Quebec* by Sea, an Army consisting of 1000 Men from the Western Plantations of *New-York*, *Albany* and *Connecticut*, with 1500 *Indians*, should march over Land and besiege *Mont Real* at the same Time, that the *French* might be obliged to divide their Forces for the Defence of both Places: But when the *English* had march'd as far as the great Lake of *Canada*, not finding Canoes to carry them over, nor the *Indians* ready to joyn them according to Promise, they return'd home; by which Means Count *Frontenac* had an Opportunity of recalling his Detachments, and drawing together the whole Strength of the Colony for the Defence of *Quebec*.



ON the 6th of *October* Sir *William* sent the following Summons to Count *Frontenac* in Writing. Anno  
1690

*Sir William Phips, Kt. General and Commander in Chief, in and over their Majesties Forces of New-England by Sea and Land,*

*To Count Frontenac, Lieutenant General and Governour for the French King at Canada; or in Absence, to his Deputy, or him or them in chief Command at Quebec.*

“ **T**HE War between the Two Crowns of  
 “ *England and France* does not only  
 “ sufficiently warrant, but the Destruction made  
 “ by the *French and Indians* under your Com-  
 “ mand and Encouragement upon the Persons  
 “ and Estates of their Majesties Subjects of  
 “ *New-England*, without Provocation on their  
 “ Part, hath put them under the Necessity of  
 “ this Expedition, for their own Security and  
 “ Satisfaction. And altho’ the Cruelties and  
 “ Barbarities used against them by the *French*  
 “ and *Indians* might upon the present Opportu-  
 “ nity prompt to a severe Revenge, yet being  
 “ desirous to avoid all Inhumanity and unchri-  
 “ stianlike Actions, and to prevent shedding of  
 “ Blood as much as may be, I the said Sir *Wil-*  
 “ *liam Phips, Kt.* do hereby, in the Name and  
 “ on the Behalf of their most Excellent Majesties  
 “ *William and Mary, King and Queen of En-*  
 “ *gland, Scotland, France and Ireland*, Defenders  
 “ of the Faith, and by Order of their said Ma-  
 “ jesties Government of the *Massachuset Colony*  
 “ in *New-England*, demand a present Surrender  
 “ of your Forts and Castles, and the King’s and  
 “ other Stores unembezzell’d, with a seasonable  
 “ Delivery of all Captives, together with a Sur-  
 “ render

Anno  
1690  
W “ render of all your Persons and Estates to my  
“ Dispose; upon the doing whereof you may  
“ expect Mercy from me, as a Christian, ac-  
“ cording to what shall be found for their Ma-  
“ jesty’s Service, and the Subjects Security,  
“ which if you refuse forthwith to do, I am  
“ come provided, and am resolved by the Help  
“ of God, in whom I trust, by Force of Arms  
“ to revenge all Wrongs and Injuries offer’d,  
“ and bring you under Subjection to the Crown  
“ of *England*, and when too late make you wish  
“ you had accepted of the Favour tendred.

“ Your Answer positive in an Hour, returned  
“ by your own Trumpet, with the Return of  
“ mine is required upon the Peril that will  
“ ensue.

THE Officer that brought the Summons was conducted to the Governour’s Chamber blindfold, who upon hearing the Letter was so enraged, that he ordered the Captain of his Guards to erect a Gibbet before the *Fort* to hang him, and he had certainly done it, if the Bishop had not interceded for him; for the Governour look’d upon them as Pyrates, because they had no Commission, as he said, from the True and Rightful King of *England*; but at last, being appeas’d by his Officers, he sent back the Major with the following Haughty and Insolent Answer.

“ THAT Sir *William Phips* and those with  
“ him were Hereticks, and Traitors to  
“ their King, and had taken up with that  
“ Usurper the Prince of *Orange*, and had made  
“ a *Revolution*, which if it had not been made,  
“ *New-England* and the *French* had been all one;  
“ and that no other Answer was to be expected  
from

“ from him, but what should be from the Mouth  
 “ of his Cannon. Anno  
1690

ON the 7th of *October* Sir *William* attempted to put his Land-Forces ashore, but the Weather proving very tempestuous, it could not be done till the next Day, when 1400 of them under the Command of General *Walley*, landed about a League and a half from the Town; the Enemy made a brisk Fire upon them at their first Landing, but as soon as the *Forlorn* were got ashore, and had formed themselves, they retreated. The *French* say, they retreated with no other Design than to draw the *English* into an Ambuscade, for having posted their *Confederate-Savages*, with 200 *Forrest-Rangers* and 50 Officers in a *Copse* of thick Brambles half a League from the Landing-Place, they drew them into it, and having made a general Discharge, they lay flat on the Ground while they received the Enemy's Fire, after which they sprung up, and drawing into Knots here and there repeated their Fire with such Success, that the *English* fell into Confusion, and retreated with the Loss of 300 Men dead on the Spot, without any other Loss on their Side, than 10 *Forrest-Rangers*, 4 Officers, and 2 *Savages*. Next Day the *English* landed 4 Pieces of Brass Cannon mounted like Field-Pieces, and made a fresh Attempt to force their Passage through the *Copse* by the Help of their Artillery, but were repuls'd again with the Loss of 2 or 300 Men, the *French* on their Side losing but 40, amongst whom was Monsieur *St. Helene*, who died of a Wound in his Leg. This second Victory animated them so much, that they pursued the *English* to their very Camp, and lay all Night within Sight of it, designing to attack it by break of Day, if they had not saved them the Trouble, by embarking about Midnight with such Haste and Confusion, that they lost 50  
 Men



Anno  
1690

Men as they were getting into their Boats. The *French* confess, that there was no want of Bravery in the Soldiers, but impute their ill Success to their Unacquaintedness with Military Discipline, to their being enfeebled by the Fatigues of the Sea, and to the ill Conduct of Sir *William Phips*, who upon this Enterprize could not have done the *French* greater Service, if he had been hir'd to stand still with his Hands in his Pocket.

BUT its plain Sir *William* did his Duty better than *Walley*, for it having been agreed in a Council of War, held on board the Admiral before their Landing, that *Walley* with his Land-Forces should attack the Town on the East-side, while Sir *William* battered it with his Ships on the West. Sir *William* accordingly brought his Ships to bear, and battered the Town all Night, and Part of the next Day ; but wondring that he could see no Signal of an Action ashore, he sent to enquire into the Condition of the Army, and was informed that *Walley* durst not venture within Sight of the Town, having been assured by a *French* Deserter, that Count *Frontenac* had 3000 Men with him in Garrison, and was prepared to give them a warm Reception. 'Tis certain the Army was grown very sickly, some being ill of the Small-Pox, and others almost frozen to Death with the Cold ; which made Sir *William* order them on board again, resolving to land them in the Face of the Town under the Shelter of his own Cannon; but before that could be done, a violent Storm arose, and separated the Fleet, and the Cold became so extream, that it was thought impossible to continue any longer in those Parts ; so after an Exchange of Prisoners on both Sides, they weighed Anchor, and returned home.

SIR *William Phips* with the greatest Part of the Fleet arrived at *Boston*, November the 19th, but

*Ann<sup>o</sup>  
1690*  
~

but some of the Ships were driven by contrary Winds as far as the *Summer* Islands, and three or four of them lost; Captain *Rainsford* in his Brigantine with Sixty Men being separated from the Fleet, struck upon the desolate Island of *Antecosta*, near the Mouth of *Canada* River, *October* the 28th, and had but just Time enough to land his Provisions before the Vessel sunk; The Captain and his Men finding they were like to winter upon the Island, built a Store-house and nine little Hutts to shelter them from the Cold with the Planks of the Wreck; but their Provisions were so short, that they agreed each Man's Allowance *per* Week to be no more than two Biskets, half a Pound of Pork, half a Pound of Flower, one Pint and a quarter of Pease, and two Salt-fish. It was not long before the dismal Effects of Hunger and Cold began to appear among them, for on the 20th of *December* their *Doct<sup>r</sup>* dyed, and after him 30 or 40 in a few Weeks; and though they were all convinced of the Necessity of keeping to their Allowance, unless they would at last eat one another, yet their *Store-House* was frequently broke open; an *Irish* Man once got to the Provisions, and eat no less than 18 Biskets, which swelled him to such a Degree, that he was forced to have his Belly stroked, and bathed before the Fire, to prevent its bursting; for which the Villain deserved, I am sure, to be hanged, if he was not. On the 25th of *March* five of the Company resolved to venture out to Sea in their Skiff, which they lengthen'd out so far as to make a Sort of Cabbin for two or three Men, and having got a little Sail, they shipp'd their Share of Provisions on board, and steered away for *Boston*; it was the 9th of *May* before these poor Wretches arrived there, through a Thousand Dangers, from the Sea and the Ice, and

H h

almost

*Anno* almost quite starved with Hunger and Cold;  
*1690* upon their Arrival, a Vessel was immediately  
 dispatched away to the Island; which in a few  
 Weeks brought off their Friends who were left  
 behind.

SUCH was the melancholy Conclusion of the  
*Canada-Expedition*, which cost *New-England* the  
 Lives of 1000 Men, and above 140000 *l.* in  
 Money, a Sum which must have infallibly ru-  
 ined them, if the *Assembly* had not passed an *Act*  
 for the raising it within a certain Number of  
 Years, and in the mean Time issued out Bills of  
 Credit, which passed currently among the  
 People.

WHILE these Things were doing in the *West*,  
 the War was carried on with Vigour in the  
*East*. About the beginning of *May* 4 or 500  
*Indians* and *French* cross'd the Bay of *Casco* in  
 their *Canoes*, and lay concealed in the *Woods*,  
 watching an Opportunity to surprize the Town.  
 The Inhabitants knew it, and were upon their  
 Guard, but none of them appearing for 3 or 4  
 Days together, Lieutenant *Clark* with 30 stout  
 young Men, resolved to venture out and look for  
 the Enemy; the *Wood* lay upon a rising Ground  
 about half a Mile from the Town, at the End of  
 a Lane fenced on each Side, with a *Black-House*  
 at the End of it; the *English* were afraid of the  
 Enemy's lying in Ambuscade behind the Fence,  
 but they ran up to it with a bold Huzza, when  
 the Enemy being prepar'd to receive them,  
 made such a terrible Fire as killed the Lieute-  
 nant and 13 of his Men at one Discharge; they  
 pursued the rest back to the Town, which the  
 Inhabitants defended as long as their Ammuni-  
 tion lasted, and then retired by the Advantage of  
 the Night into the *Fort*; the Besiegers burnt the  
 Town immediately, and having begun to under-  
 mine the Walls of the *Fort*, the Garrison surren-  
 der'd



der'd upon Condition of being safely conducted to the next *English* Garrison; but the *French* broke the Capitulation, and made them *Prisoners of War*, under Pretence of their being Rebels to their Lawful King, and taking up Arms for the Prince of *Orange*. The Governour Major *Davis*, and some of his Men were sent to *Quebec*, but the rest were murder'd by the Savages.

THE Fate of *Casco* made the smaller Garrisons of *Papoodack*, *Spurwink*, *Black-Point* and *Blue-Point* draw off immediately without Orders to *Saco*, which was 20 Miles within *Casco*, and a few Days after they retired 20 Miles farther to *Wells*, and frightned that Garrison so much, that half of them deserted, and fled as far as Lieutenant *Storer's*. *Hopehood* the Captain of the *Hurons* pursued them, and destroyed all the open Country; he burnt several Houses at *Berwick*, killed 13 or 14 Men at *Fox-Point*, and carried off 6 Prisoners; but meeting with Capt. *Floyd* and Capt. *Greenleaf*, they routed his Party, wounded *Hopehood* himself, and made him retire to a greater Distance. After this he marched with his Party Westward, with a Design to draw the *Aquadocta-Indians* to joyn him; but a Party of *French-Indians* meeting him by the Way fell upon him by Mistake, and in their blind Fury killed him and almost all his Company. At *Spruce-Creek* an Old Man was killed, and a Woman carried into Captivity. On the 4th of *July*, a Party of *Indians* surprized and killed 8 or 9 Persons working in a Field on the Banks of *Lampareel-River*, and carried a Lad into Captivity; all the open Country was so infested with Parties of the Enemy at this Time, that it was hardly safe for a Man to stir out of his House, or follow his Business in the Field; a Council of War was therefore called at *Portsmouth*, which ordered Captain *Wiswell* and Captain *Floyd* with a large

Annos  
1690

Body of Men to scour the *Woods* as far as *Casco*. They marched out of *Quechecho* on the 4th of *July* with above 100 Men, and on the 6th came up with a large Party of the Enemy at *Wheelwright-Pond*. It was observed, that there were several *French* Soldiers mix'd with these *Indians* to discipline and instruct them in a regular Way of Fighting. The Engagement lasted several Hours; but Victory declar'd at last for the Enemy; Captain *Wiswel*, Lieutenant *Flag*, Serjeant *Walker*, with 15 of their Men were killed, and a great many more wounded; when *Wiswel* fell, Captain *Floyd* retreated with the Remainder of the Army in the best Manner he could, leaving his wounded Men behind him, but next Morning Captain *Convers* with 20 Men being sent out towards the Place of Battle, found seven of the wounded *English* yet alive, and brought them back to the Camp. The *Indians* flushed with this Victory made a Descent upon *Amesbury*, surprized Captain *Foot*, and tortured him to Death; but the Townsmen taking the Alarm, secured themselves in their *Fort*; however the Enemy killed three Persons, burnt three or four Houses, destroyed their Cattle, and then retired.

THE resolute Behaviour of the *Indians* in the late Action under *French* Discipline, struck such a Terror into the *English*, as made them resolve never to hazard an Engagement for the future with such unequal Numbers; Major *Church* was therefore sent by Sea with 300 effective Men, in the beginning of *September*, to secure the Frontiers; he landed in the Night in *Casco-Bay*, and marched directly to *Pechypso* an *Indian-Fort*, which he found deserted; from whence he went to *Amonoscoggin-Fort*, 40 Miles up the River, but *Agamcus* the Commander with the greatest Part of the Garrison were fled; however, he burned the *Fort*, killed 20 *Indians* that were in it, and released

released 7 *English* Captives: After this, the Major scoured the neighbouring *Woods*, and then returned to *Casco*, where Mr. *Antony Bracket* who had run away from the Enemy had the good Fortune to joyn him; from *Casco* they went to *Winter-Harbour*, where a small Party sailing up the River met with a Company of *Mankeen-Indians* whom they put to Flight, and recovered an *English* Prisoner, who informed them, that the Savages had agreed to rendezvous upon *Pechypset-Plain*, in Order to attack the Town of *Wells*; upon this the Army reimbarc'd for *Casco-Bay*, and dividing themselves into three Bodies waited for the Enemy on *Pechypset-Plain*; but the *Indians* were too wise to hazard a Battle, but contented themselves with harrassing the Forces, and cutting off the Straglers; the Army therefore broke up, and returned to *Casco-Bay*, September the 20th, where five *Plimouth-Men* venturing to lye ashore at a small Village, called *Macquoit*, without setting a Watch at the Door of their Lodging, were destroyed in the Night. The Major after this separated his Forces, and put them all into Winter-Quarters, except 100 Men, who were left with Capt. *Convers* and *Playstead*, to scour the *Woods*, and prevent Surprizals from an Enemy, who rarely annoyed them any other Way.

THE Affairs of the Country were now at a very low Ebb, through the Losses and Disappointments of the last Campaign; for tho' they had conquered *Acadia*, the *Canada-Expedition*, and the ill Success of their Arms upon their Frontiers, had exhausted their best Blood and Treasure; besides the Government itself was unsettled, and the People ready to mutiny on the Account of their heavy Taxes; when in a happy Juncture, a Party of *Indians* came to *Wells* with a Flag of Truce, and proposed a Cessation of Arms



*Ann* Arms for six Months; Advice of which be-  
*1690* ing immediately sent to *Boston*, Major *Hutchinson* and Captain *Townsend* were dispatch'd away to joyn the Commissioners at *Wells*, in Order to bring this Affair to an Issue; they met the *Indians* by Appointment at *Sagademore*, *November* the 23d, and on the 29th signed Articles for a Cessation 'till the first of *May*, by which they engaged, "Not to do any Injury to the Per-  
 " sons or Estates of the *English* in any of the  
 " *English Colonies* 'till that Time; to give timely  
 " Notice of any *Plots* which they might know  
 " the *French* had laid against them; and on the  
 " said first of *May* to bring into *Storer's* Garri-  
 " son at *Wells* all the *English* Captives in their  
 " Hands, and there treat of a perpetual Peace." This Instrument was signed by the *English* Commissioners on the one Hand, and by *Edgeremet* and five *Segamores* or Noblemen on the other. Ten *English* Captives were released by this Treaty, among whom was *Mrs. Hall*, whom the *Indians* would fain have detained, because being able to write well, she served them in Quality of a Secretary; and *Nathaniel White*, whom the barbarous Wretches had already tied to a Stake, cut off one of his Ears, and made him eat it raw, and were going to roast the rest of him alive. And thus the *Indian War* ceased during the Winter of the Year 1690.

THE Beginning of this Year, or the latter End of the last, died old Mr. *John Eliot*, the Apostle of the *Indians*: He was born in the Year 1604, and educated at *Cambridge*; but his Parents dying before he had perfected his Studies, he was obliged to leave the University and become Usher to Mr. *Hoker*, a silenced *Nonconformist* Minister, at *Little Baddow* in *Essex*. He came over to *New-England* in the Year 1631, and joyned himself to Mr. *Wilson's* Church at  
*Boston*,

*Boston*, amongst whom he preached occasionally for some Time: But the next Year, several of his old Acquaintance coming over, he settled with them at *Roxbury*, about a Mile from *Boston*, and continued in the Exercise of the Pastoral Office among them almost 60 Years. His indefatigable Pains and Labours in converting the *Indians* are known to all the World, and the Reader has had some Account of them in the Course of this History. This Part of his Work was his greatest Delight; and tho' he travelled constantly among the *Indians* once a Fortnight, yet he did not neglect his Duty at *Roxbury*. He was a Man of great Piety and Zeal for Religion, and yet of universal Love and Charity to all Men. When he was in a Manner quite decayed with Age, being ask'd how he did? he reply'd, *Alas I have lost every thing; my Understanding leaves me, my Memory fails me, my Utterance fails me, but I thank God my Charity holds out still; I find that rather grows than fails.* He was a good Scholar, especially in the Languages; and one that would never allow himself to be idle. He had gained the Affections of the *Indian* Converts by his Affability and good Nature to such a Degree, that they would run all Hazards to serve him; and his Name is still mentioned by them with Honour. He lived till he was quite worn out; and used to say merrily, *That his old Acquaintance had been gone to Heaven so long before him, that he was afraid they would think he was gone the wrong Way because he staid so long behind.* But at last, after a Life of great Labour and Usefulness, he died in Peace at his House at *Roxbury*, in the 86th Year of his Age.

Anno  
1693  
w



## C H A P. XI.

*Sir William Phips returns to England, and joins with the New-England Agents at the Court of King William and Queen Mary in soliciting the Restoration of their Charter. They obtain a New One, not so agreeable to the People as their Old One. Sir William Phips appointed Governour. The War renewed. The Memorable Siege of Wells. Mr. Increase Mather created Doctor of Divinity. Pemnaquid Fort built. A Peace concluded with the Indians.*

Ann  
1691  
~



**I**R William Phips having refreshed himself a few Weeks at Home, after his unfortunate Expedition to Canada, embarked for England, and arrived at White-hall in the very Depth of Winter ; the Reason of his undertaking this Voyage was to solicit Succours for another Expedition to Canada, the Conquest



quest of which he apprehended necessary to the Safety of his Country ; and to induce the King to come into his Measures he humbly offered to his Majesty the following Considerations.

Anno  
1691  
W

“ *First*, THAT it was for the Interest of the *English* Crown and Nation, because thereby, they would not only engross the Beaver Trade, but secure the *Hudson’s Bay* Company, some of whose Factories had lately fallen into the Hands of the *French* ; it would likewise encrease the *English* Shipping, by gaining the Fishery of *Newfoundland* ; and consequently diminish the Number of *French* Seamen, and cut off a great Revenue from that Crown.

“ *Secondly*, THAT the Miscarriage of the late Expedition was not owing to the Difficulty of the Enterprize ; but to their waiting for Supplies of Ammunition from *England* till *August* ; to their long Passage up the River, together with the cold Weather’s coming in, and the Small-pox and Fever, being in the Army and Fleet, which obliged them to return home ; but if they could have staid fourteen Days longer, he does not doubt but they might have taken *Quebec*, the Strength of the *French* being small, and the Planters desirous to to be under the *English* Government.

“ *Thirdly*, THAT the Jesuits endeavour to draw the *Maqua’s* and other *Indians* into their Interest, by suggesting the Greatness of King *Lewis*, and the Inability of King *William* to do any thing against the *French* in those Parts, which in Time of War would not only be prejudicial to *New-England*, but to all our *American* Plantations.

BUT  
IF A C

*Ann*  
*1691* BUT the *French* War lay so heavy on the King at this Time, that he was obliged to defer the Consideration of Sir *William's* Petition for the present, His Majesty having need of all the Men and Money he could raise for the Defence of his own Kingdoms.

SIR *William* being thus detained in *England* employ'd his Interest among the Courtiers, in Conjunction with the *New-England* Agents to obtain the restoring of their Charter. The Rev. Mr. *Increase Mather*, Rector of *Harvard* College, had been at Court in the Year 1688, and laid before King *James* a Representation of their Grievances, which the King promised in part to redress, but was prevented by the Revolution. When the Prince and Princess of *Orange* were settled on the Throne, he with the Rest of the *New-England* Agents address'd their Majesties for the restoring of their Charter, and applied to the Convention Parliament, who received a Bill for this Purpose, and pass'd it in the lower House; but that Parliament being soon after dissolved, the Bill was lost.

THE weighty and important Affairs of *Europe* requiring his Majesty's Presence in *Holland*, the *New England* Agents were forced to defer their Applications for their Charter till his Majesty's Return. Thus the Business slept for about a Year; when the Agents agreed among themselves, instead of addressing the King for the restoring their old Charter, to petition his Majesty for a new One, with more ample Privileges; but before they could obtain an Answer the King went to *Holland* again, and referr'd them to his Council for the Determination of their Affair in his Absence. The Agents meeting with so many Disappointments from the Courtiers, and seeing no End of their Affairs, at last waited on the

the Queen herself to assure her Majesty “ of the  
 “ Duty and Loyalty of her *New England* Sub-  
 “ jects, and of the great Hardships they had  
 “ suffer’d for their being so ; and to beseech her  
 “ Majesty, that since the King upon his going  
 “ to *Holland* had referr’d the *New English* Affair  
 “ to the two Lord Chief Justices, with the At-  
 “ torney and Solicitor General, that what they  
 “ thought reasonable might be confirmed to  
 “ them.” The Queen reply’d, “ That the Re-  
 “ quest was reasonable ; that she had spoken di-  
 “ vers Times to the King on the Behalf of *New*  
 “ *England* ; and that for her own Part, she de-  
 “ sired that the People there might not only have  
 “ Justice, but Favour done them.” They  
 waited likewise upon most of the Lords of his  
 Majesty’s most honourable Privy-Council, with  
 a Paper of Reasons for the Confirmation of the  
 Charter Privileges granted to the *Massachusetts*  
 Colony ; but all their Applications were ineffec-  
 tual : Some Persons about the King had given  
 his Majesty such ill Impressions of the Religion  
 and Loyalty of his *New England* Subjects, that  
 there was Reason to fear they would never obtain  
 any Charter at all. The Agents however pur-  
 sued their Business with unwearied Application,  
 and improved all their Interest in Court and  
 City to accomplish it.

It being whisper’d at Court that the King  
 would certainly nominate a Governour for *New*  
*England* before his going to *Holland*, the Agents  
 fearing he might appoint one that was not agree-  
 able to the Country, obtained an Audience of  
 his Majesty by the Favour of the Duke of *De-*  
*vonshire*, April 28, 1691, wherein Mr. Mather  
 humbly pray’d his Majesty’s Favour to *New En-*  
*gland* in restoring their old Charter Privileges ;  
 adding at the same time these Words : *Sir, your*  
*Subjects there have been willing to venture their Lives*

Anno  
1691  
W



*Anno 1691* to enlarge your Dominions : The Expedition to Canada was a great and noble Undertaking. May it please your Majesty in your great Wisdom also to consider the Circumstances of that People, as in your Wisdom you have considered the Circumstances of England and of Scotland. In New England they differ from other Plantations ; they are called Congregational and Presbyterian ; so that such a Governour will not suit with the People of New England, as may be very proper for other English Plantations.

Two Days after this the King enquir'd, whether without Breach of Law he might appoint a Governour over New England? To which the Lord Chief Justice, and some other Lords of the Council, answer'd, *That whatever might be the Merits of the Cause, in as much as the Charter of New England stood vacated by a Judgment against them, it was in the King's Power to put them under what Form of Government he should think best for them.* The King reply'd, *He believed then it would be for the Advantage of the People of that Colony to be under a Governour appointed by himself ; nevertheless, because of what Mr. Mather had spoken to him, he would consent that the Agents of New England should nominate such a Person as should be agreeable to the Inclinations of the People there, but notwithstanding this, he would have Charter Privileges restored and confirmed to them.* The next Day the King went to Holland, and left Orders with his Attorney General to draw up a Draught of a Charter, according to his Majesty's Mind expressed in Council, to be ready for him to sign at his Return. The Attorney presented his Draught to the Council-Board June the 8th, which was rejected, and a new One ordered to be drawn up, which deprived the People of New England of several essential Privileges contained in their former Charter. Mr. Mather in his great Zeal protested against it ; but was told, that the Agents

gents of *New England* were not Plenipotentiaries from a Sovereign State, and therefore must submit to the King's Pleasure. Anno  
1691

THE Agents having obtained a Copy of this new Charter, sent over their Objections against it to the King in *Flanders*, praying that certain Clauses which they pointed out to his Majesty in their Petition might be altered : And the Queen herself with her own Royal Hand wrote to the King, that the Charter of *New England* might either pass as it was drawn by the Attorney General at first, or be deferred till his Return. But after all, it was his Majesty's Pleasure that the Charter of *New England* should run in the main Points according to the second Draught ; and all that the Agents could do, was to get two or three Articles, which they apprehended to be for the Good of their Country, added to it.

THE Expectations of the People of *New England* were very much disappointed by this new Charter, and their Agents were censured as Men not very well skill'd in the Intrigues of a Court. It was thought, that if they had apply'd themselves to proper Persons, and in a right Way, they might have made better Terms for their Country ; but they acted in the Uprightness of their Hearts, tho' the Success did not answer their Expectations. It was debated among them whether they should accept of the new Charter, or stand a Trial at Law, for reversing the Judgment against their Old one ; but upon Advice of some of the best Politicians and Lawyers, the Majority resolved to acquiesce in the King's Pleasure, and accept of what was now offered them, for the following Reasons.

*First*, BECAUSE if they should refuse this Charter, the King might possibly carry his Resentments so high, as never to offer them another

*Anno* another, which would be the Ruin of their  
 1691 Country.

*Secondly*, BECAUSE a Submitting to this new Charter was no Surrender of the old One, tho' the Judgment against the old Charter standing upon Record in the Court of Chancery, the Patent was thereby annihilated.

*Thirdly*, BECAUSE all Attempts to have the Judgment against the Old Charter revers'd would be altogether in vain, in the present Situation of Affairs.

*Fourthly*, BECAUSE the Old Charter was in the Opinion of Persons learned in the Law, defective, as to several Powers which are absolutely necessary for the Subsistence of the Plantation; for Example, It gave the Government no more Power than every Corporation in *England* has: Power in capital Cases was not expressed in it: It mentioned no House of Deputies, or Assembly of Representatives: The Government had thereby no Legal Power to impose Taxes on the Inhabitants that were not Freemen, nor to erect Courts of Admiralty: So that if the Judgment against this Charter should be revers'd, yet if the Government of *New-England* should exercise the same Powers as they had done before the *Quo Warranto*, a new Writ of *Scire facias* might undoubtedly be issued out against them. Besides, if the Old Charter should be restored without a Grant of some other Advantages, the Country would be very much incommoded, because the Provinces of *Main* and *Hampshire* would have been taken from the *Massachusetts*, and *Plimouth* would have been annexed to *New-York*, whereby the *Massachusetts* Colony would have been very much streightned, and have made a very mean Figure, both as to its Trade and Influence.

*Fifthly*,



*Fifthly*, BECAUSE the New Charter grants <sup>Ann<sup>o</sup> 1691</sup> a great many Privileges to *New-England*, which it had not before ; the Colony is now made a Province, and the General Court, has with the King's Approbation, as much Power in *New-England*, as the King and Parliament have in *England*. They have all *English* Liberties, and can be touched by no Law, by no Tax, but of their own making. All the Liberties of their Religion are for ever secured, and their Titles to their Lands, once for want of some Forms of Legal Conveyance contested, are now confirmed to them for ever. If an ill Governour should happen to be imposed upon them, he could do them no Hurt except they themselves are accessary to it ; for he can neither make a Councillor, Judge, Justice of the Peace, nor so much as a Sheriff, without their Consent.

UPON these Considerations the Agents thought it their Duty to accept of the new Charter, and return his Majesty their Thanks for it ; tho' it must be confessed, the Form of Government was very much alter'd by it, and several ample Privileges, which before were in the Hands of the People, were now reserv'd to the Crown. For Example :

IN this Charter the Nomination and Constitution of the Governour, Lieutenant-Governour, Secretary, and all Officers of the Admiralty, is wholly reserved to the Crown.

THE Power of the Militia is wholly in the Hands of his Majesty's Governour, as Captain General.

ALL Judges, and Justices of a Superior and Inferior Order, and Sheriffs, to whom the Execution of the Laws are entrusted, are nominated and appointed by the Governour, with the Advice and Consent of his Majesty's Council.

THE

Anno  
1691

THE Governour has a Negative upon all Laws, Elections, and Acts of Government, of the General Assembly and Council.

ALL Laws enacted by the General Assembly, and approved of by the Governour, are to be transmitted Home for the Royal Approbation; and if disallowed within the Space of three Years, to be utterly void.

THE new Charter having pass'd the Seals, his Majesty was pleas'd out of his great Goodness, and to keep the *New England* Agents in Humour, to compliment them for the first Time with the Nomination of their own Governour, desiring them to fix on such an one as would be acceptable to their Country. The Agents, after mature Consultation among themselves, agreed to name Sir *William Phips*; and being introduced to the King by the Earl of *Nottingham*, Mr. *Mather* made the following Speech:

S I R,

“ I Do in the Behalf of *New England* most  
 “ humbly thank your Majesty, in that  
 “ you have been pleas'd by a Charter to restore  
 “ *English* Liberties unto them, to confirm them  
 “ in their Properties, and to grant them some  
 “ peculiar Privileges; I doubt not but that your  
 “ Subjects will demean themselves with that  
 “ dutiful Affection and Loyalty to your Majesty,  
 “ as that you will see cause to enlarge your  
 “ Royal Favours towards them; and I do most  
 “ humbly thank your Majesty that you have  
 “ been pleas'd to give Leave to those that are  
 “ concerned for *New England* to nominate their  
 “ Governour.

“ Sir *William Phips* has been accordingly  
 “ nominated by us at the Council-Board. He  
 “ has done a good Service to the Crown by en-  
 “ larging your Dominions, and reducing *Nova*  
*Scotia*

“ *Scotia* to your Obedience; I know that he Anno  
 “ will faithfully serve your Majesty to the utmost 1691  
 “ of his Capacity; and if your Majesty shall W  
 “ think fit to confirm him in that Place, it will  
 “ be a further Obligation to your Subjects  
 “ there. ”

HEREUPON Sir *William Phips* was admitted to kiss his Majesty's Hand; and was, by Commission under the Broad Seal, appointed Captain General and Governour in Chief over the Province of the *Massachuset-Bay* in *New England*.

BUT to return to the War: At the Expiration of the Truce of *Sagadehock*, which was the Beginning of *May*, Mr. *Danforth*, Mr. *Moodey*, Mr. *Vaughan*, Mr. *Brattle*, and several other Gentlemen, with a Troop of Soldiers, came to *Wells* to renew the Peace with the *Indians*; but they not appearing at the Time appointed, Captain *Convers* went out with a Party and brought in some Prisoners, who pretended they had forgot the Time, but promised within 20 Days to deliver up all their Captives, and sign the Peace. The Captain having waited 22 Days, and hearing nothing from them, thought it high Time to recruit his Garrison, and be on his Guard: Accordingly he sent for a Reinforcement of Men from the County of *Essex*, which joyn'd him the 9th of *June*, to the Number of 35 Men. These Recruits had not entred the Garrison above half an Hour before *Moxus* with 200 *Indians* made an Attack upon it. This seasonable Supply of fresh Men saved the Place; for *Moxus* meeting with a bold Resistance, retired with the Loss of several of his Men: Upon which *Moduckawando* was heard to say, *My Brother Moxus has missed it now; but I will go my self the next Year, and have the Dog Convers out of his Hole.* About the same Time the *Indians* slew two Men at *Berwick*, two



*Anno*  
*1691* } more at *Exeter*, and five or six at *Cape Nidduck*.  
 About the latter End of *July*, *Capt. March*,  
*Capt. King*, *Capt. Sherburn*, and *Capt. Walten*,  
 landed with 3 or 400 Men at *Micquit*, and  
 marched up to *Pechypscot* to look out the Enemy,  
 but not finding them, they returned to their  
 Ships; but while they were embarking, a vast  
 Body of *Indians* poured down upon them from  
 the Woods, and put them into Disorder, part of  
 the Forces being already on Board, the rest were  
 not able to make Head against the Enemy, but  
 got on Board their Vessels as fast as they could,  
 leaving *Capt. Sherburn* and some others behind  
 them dead upon the Shore. They fired at one  
 another all Night, but to no other Purpose than  
 the Spending their Ammunition, and in the  
 Morning both Parties retired. On *September*  
 the 28th, seven Persons were surprized and killed  
 at *Berwick*, and the next Day 21 at *Sandy Beach*.  
*October* the 23d, one *Goodridge* and his Wife were  
 murdered at *Rowly*, and his Children carried  
 into Captivity; and the next Day a Family at  
*Haverhill* underwent the same Fate. The strong  
 Fort at *Cape Nidduck* was likewise deserted this  
 Year, for want of a sufficient Garrison to defend  
 it; after which the Enemy came, and burnt all  
 the Houses in it. These were all the Actions  
 that happened this Summer: By which it appears  
 that both the *English* and *Indians* were weary of  
 the War, or else reduced to such low Circum-  
 stances, as not to be capable of carrying it on  
 with Vigour.

*Anno*  
*1692* } BUT the next Winter the *Indians* acted with  
 new Life, and did prodigious Damage to the  
 Country. On the 25th of *January* they surprized  
 the Town of *Tork*, while the Inhabitants were  
 quiet and secure in their Houses; several Hun-  
 dreds at the Signal of a Gun rushing in upon  
 the Town, killed 50, and carried away 100 into  
 Captivity

Captivity. They summoned the barricadoed Houses; but finding the Inhabitants resolved to stand upon their Defence, they retired with their Booty into the Woods. Hard was the Fate of the Rev. Mr. *Shubael Dummer*, who was shot dead at his own Door, just as he was taking Horse to go into the Country! His Wife was carried into Captivity, where, thro' Sorrow and Hardship, she died. Many of his Church were likewise taken Prisoners, who had the Mortification next Lord's-Day, to see one of the Savages act the Part of a Preacher in their Ministers Cloaths. Upon the News of this Disaster a Ship was immediately dispatched to *Sagadehock*, with a Commission, and Effects to redeem the Captives, which they accomplished in some Measure, but the Inhabitants were in such a Consternation, that they talked of nothing but abandoning the Town; whereupon Capt. *Convers* and Capt. *Greenleaf* were sent immediately to their Assistance; and the next Month Major *Hutchinson*, with a strong Body of Troops, commanded under him by the Captains *Convers*, *Floyd* and *Thaxter*, effectually secured them from all future Excursions of the Enemy.

THE *English* Forces had several little Skirmishes with the *Indians* in the Spring, but the bravest Action was at *Wells*, where Capt. *Convers* was posted with only 15 Men, besides whom there were in the River two Sloops, with a Shallop, which had brought Ammunition and Provision for the Garrison. The Soldiers observed the Cattle to run home frightened and bleating out of the Woods one Evening, which was a certain Sign the Enemy were at hand. Hereupon Capt. *Convers* summoned in all his Garrison, and ordered the Sloops, commanded by *Gouge* and *Storer*, to give him all the Assistance they could. Next Morning before Day-light, *John Diamond*, a Stranger

Anno  
1692  
W

that came in the Shalloop on a Visit, came up to the Garrison, and was invited in by the Watch; but choosing to go on Board one of the Sloops, which lay about a Gun-shot from the Fort, he was seized by the Enemy, and haled away by the Hair of the Head, notwithstanding all the Attempts of the Garrison to rescue him. *Diamond* was examined by the Generals of the Enemy's Army, which consisted of about 500 Men, under the Command of Messieurs *Burniff* and *Labrocree*, French Men, and *Mudockawando*, *Monius*, *Egeremet* and *Warumbo*, Indian Segamores, concerning the Strength of the Garrison, which he acquainted them with, only instead of 15, he told them there were 30 Men in it. The *Indians* came on with a horrible Shout; but the Garrison made such a brisk Fire upon them with their Small Arms, as obliged them to retire out of the Reach of their Muskets. Upon this they turned their Fury upon the Sloops, which they raked most dreadfully with their Small Arms from behind a great Heap of Planks which lay upon the Shore, and a Hay-Stack, which they fortified with Posts and Rails, not above a Dozen Yards from the Sloops. They continued shooting all Day long, and set the Sloops on fire several Times with their *Fire-Arrows*, which the Defendants with a Swab at the End of a Rope tied to a Pole happily put out. At Night they ceased, but next Morning returned to the Assault; and because they found it impossible to board the Sloops without exposing themselves to their Fire, they contrived a Machine, which they brought out of the Woods upon a Pair of Wheels, upon which they built a Platform, Musket-proof in the Front, and placed their Men behind it. They pushed the Machine forwards upon the Shore till it came within 15 Yards of the Sloops, when one of the Wheels sunk into the Sands,  
and



and had like to overset it: A *French Man* stepping out to raise the Wheel, was shot dead upon the Spot; whereupon they let it stand as it was, and fired at the Sloop from behind the Platform, till the Tide rose and overturned it with all the Men, who thereby lay open to the Sloops, and received a general Fire from them before they were able to scamper away. Next Morning they returned to the Fort, and a large Body of them marching up to it in good Order, halted about Musket-shot from the Ramparts, and divided themselves into three Ranks, and having given three great Shouts, cryed out in *English, Fire, and fall on, brave Boys*; upon which they marched up to the Fort, and made a general Discharge upon it all at once. Capt. *Convers* ordered his Men to lye close behind the Ramparts, and not to make a Shot till they were sure of doing Execution; but when the Enemy had fired, the Garrison gave them such a Volley, as laid several of them dead upon the Spot, and disheartned them from making any further Attempts upon it. But the Enemy were ashamed to draw off after this Manner, and therefore resolved to try their Fortune once more upon the Sloops: Accordingly they built a Kind of Fire-ship, or Machine of Wood, and setting it on fire, thrust it out into the Tide; but the Wind veering about, carried it over to the opposite Shore, where it split in Pieces. The *Indians* having now almost spent all their Ammunition, and despairing to take the Garrison by Force, sent a Flag of Truce to invite them to surrender upon honourable Terms: But the Captain desired them; telling them, He was under no Necessity to capitulate: Upon which they threatened to cut him as small as Tobacco by the next Morning. But they had done their worst; and having destroyed all the Cattle about the Town,

*Anno* they went up to the Sloops, and made one farewell  
*1692* Discharge upon them, by which they killed the  
 only Man that was lost on Board them, and then  
 retired. The Enemy lost a great many Men in  
 this Assault, and among the rest *Monf. Labrocree*  
 himself, who had about his Neck a Pouch with  
 a Dozen Relicks, and a printed Paper of Indul-  
 gences, and several other Implements of that sort.  
 This memorable Action happened on the 10th  
 and 11th of *June*.

THE *Indians* being enraged at the Loss of  
 so many of their Men, resolved to take their  
 Revenge upon poor *John Diamond* their Prisoner,  
 whom they brought into the Plain, within Sight  
 of the Garrison, and after they had stript him,  
 they scalped him alive; they castrated him; they  
 slit him with Knives between his Fingers and  
 Toes; they made cruel Gashes in the most fleshy  
 Parts of his Body, and sticking lighted Firebrands  
 in them, they tortured him to Death. But tho'  
 the Soldiers in all the Garrisons behaved them-  
 selves well, they could not protect the open Coun-  
 try from the Invasions of the Enemy; so that  
 all the Eastern Plantations were ruined and de-  
 serted, it not being safe for them to Work in the  
 Fields, when they were in danger every Hour  
 of being surprized by the Excursions of the Sa-  
 vages from the Woods.

THIS was the State of the War when the  
 Governour Sir *William Phips* arrived at *New*  
*England* with the new Charter. He landed at  
*Boston* on the 14th of *May*; and tho' some of the  
 People were sullen and out of Humour with the  
 Abridgment of their Privileges, yet the Genera-  
 lity of them received him with loud Acclamations  
 of Joy. The General Court of the Province  
 appointed a Day of solemn Thanksgiving for the  
*safe Arrival of his Excellency the Governour, and*  
*the Reverend Mr. Increase Mather; who (say they)*  
 have

have industriously endeavoured the Service of this People, and have brought over with them a Settlement of Government, in which their Majesties have graciously given us distinguishing Marks of their Royal Favour and Goodness. Anno 1692

A N Address of Thanks was likewise sent over to his Majesty, and several private Letters to those Ministers of State, who had assisted the Agents, in bringing this important Affair to so good an Issue.

THE Rev. Mr. *Increase Mather* had a further Honour done him upon this Occasion ; \* for it being provided in the New Charter, that the General Assembly of the Province should have Power to incorporate the College, and invest it with Powers of conferring the Degrees of Masters of Arts and Doctors of Divinity on such as should merit them, the College had no sooner received their Charter from the General Assembly, but they expressed their Acknowledgments to their President Mr. *Mather*, by presenting him with a *Diploma* of Doctor of Divinity, under the Seal of the College with the Hands of the *Fellows* annexed to it, bearing Date from *Cambridge in New-England*, the 17th of *November 1692*.

A few Days after Sir *William Phip's* Arrival, he called a General Assembly of the Province of the *Massachusetts Bay* to meet at *Boston* on 8th of *June* following, which he opened with a very gracious Speech, urging them to make themselves happy by preparing a Body of good Laws as fast as they could, which he would be always ready to pass. *Gentlemen*, said he, *You may make yourselves as easy as you will for ever ; Consider what may have a Tendency to your Welfare, and you may*

---

\* *Mather*, B. iv. p. 134.



Anno  
1692 *be sure that whatever Bills you offer to me consistent with the Honour and Interest of the Crown, I'll pass them readily; I do but seek Opportunities to serve you, had it not been for the sake of this Thing, I had never accepted of this Province, and whenever you have settled such a body of Good Laws, that no Person coming after me may make you uneasy, I shall desire not one Day longer to continue in the Government.*

BUT for the Laws pass'd in this, and the other General Assemblies I shall refer the Reader to the Abstract of the Laws of *New-England* published in the Appendix.\*

TO return now to the War. When the *East-ern Indians* heard that Sir *William Phips* was appointed Governour of *New-England*, they were struck with Astonishment at the Fortune of the Man; for they knew his Original, and had fished and hunted many a wearisome Day with him in his Youth; they were sensible that he was capable of carrying on the War against them with greater Success than his Predecessors, because he was acquainted with the Country, and knew all their Haunts; but being buoyed up by the *French*, they made no Overtures of Peace.

THE *Indians* after the Action at *Wells* lay still till the Month of *July*, when a Party of them fell upon some Husbandmen at Work in the Meadows on the North side of *Merrimack-River*, and slew them: Upon Advice of this Sir *William Phips* marched with an Army of 450 Men to *Pemmaquid*, and gave Orders by his Majesty's Command for building one of the strongest Forts that was ever seen in *America*. Captain *Wing* and Captain *Bancroft* laid the Foundation, and Captain *March* finished it in a few Months. It was built of Stone in a

---

\* Appendix Numb. IV.

quadrangular Figure, being about 737 Foot in *Ann*  
 Compass without the outer Wall, and 108 Foot *1692*  
 square within the inner One; it had 28 Port-  
 holes eight Foot from the Ground, and 14 Guns  
 mounted, whereof six were 18 Pounders: The  
 South Wall facing the Sea was 22 Foot high,  
 and 6 broad; the round Tower at the West End  
 was 29 Foot high, the East Wall was 12 Foot  
 high, the North 10, and the West 18. The  
 Fort stood about 20 Rod from High-Water  
 Mark, and had a Garrison of 60 Men for its  
 Defence: It was called by the Name of *William*  
*Henry*; but the Charge of building and main-  
 taining it, was such a Tax upon the Country,  
 and caused such Murmurings among the People,  
 as created Sir *William* a great many Enemies,  
 and made him sit uneasy in his Government  
 ever after; tho' it must be allowed to be the  
 best Barrier the Province ever had, and being  
 built in the Heart of the Enemy's Country,  
 effectually broke all their Measures by preventing  
 their clanning with one another, and so brought  
 them in a little Time to beg a Peace. While  
 this was doing Major *Church* marched with a  
 Party of Men to *Penobscot* and took five *Indians*  
 Prisoners, after which he ravaged all the Coun-  
 try about *Taconet*, the *Indians* having deserted it,  
 and set their Fort on Fire.

THE next Spring Sir *William* sent 350 Men *Ann*  
 to *Wells*, to reinforce Captain *Convers*, to whom *1693*  
 he gave a Major's Commission, and the Com-  
 mand in Chief of all the Eastern Garrisons, for  
 his brave Defence of that Place the last Year.  
 The Major being informed of a Party of the  
 Enemy that lay lurking in the Woods, sur-  
 prized them all, and put the chief of them  
 to the Sword, by Way of Reprisal for a Fami-  
 ly which they had murdered at *Oyster River*;  
 from hence he marched with his new Reinforce-  
 ment

<sup>Anno</sup>  
<sup>1693</sup> ment to *Pemmaquid*, and sailing up *Sheepscote*-River, scowred the Woods as far as *Taconet*; but not meeting with any of the *Indians* he returned to *Saco*, and laid the Foundation of a Fort there; which was afterwards finished by Major *Hook* and Major *Hill*, and was of great Service to the Province. The *Indians* on the other hand plundered *Quabog*, a small Village in the Road to *Connecticut*, and carried off several Prisoners; but the neighbouring Towns upon the River, taking the Alarm, sent out a sying Party of Horse after them, who pursuing them by their Track to a great Swamp, dismounted, and leaving their Horses at the Entrance of the Swamp, surprized the secure Enemy, recovered the Prisoners, and put most of the *Indians* to the Sword,

BUT the low Circumstances of the Affairs of the *English* and *Indians* at this Time made both Sides incline to a Peace. The *English* Government was weakened, by the Confusions occasioned by pretended Witchcrafts which were come to such an Height that every one began to suspect his Neighbour; the Taxes were heavy, having been much encreas'd of late, for building and maintaining their new Fort; and Trade was very much decayed, so that the Hearts of the People began to fail. The *Indians* on the other Hand, were not only deserted by the *French*, who were not capable at this time of supplying them with Ammunition and Provisions as formerly, but were very much streightened, by the New Forts; and which was worst of all, they were afraid of an Invasion from the *Maquas*, a formidable Nation inhabiting the Regions towards the West, who having learn'd the Use of Guns before their Neighbours, are said to have destroy'd above 2 Millions of Natives inhabiting the Country between them and the River *Mississippi*.



*Mississippi.* The Reason of their Fear was be- Anno  
1693  
cause they found<sup>d</sup> some of their *Squa's* on that  
side of the Country murdered upon a Whortie-  
berry Plain. The *Indian* Segamores had a  
*French* Fryar among them at this time, who did  
whatever lay in his Power to persuade them to  
continue the War, but the melancholy Situation  
of their Affairs forced them to make Poposals of  
Peace, which after several Meetings of Commis-  
sioners on both Sides at Fort *Pemntaquid* was  
concluded on the following Conditions.

*The Submission and Agreement of the Eastern  
Indians at Fort William Henry in Pem-  
maquid, the 11th Day of August, in the  
Fifth Year of the Reign of our Sove-  
reign Lord and Lady William and Mary,  
by the Grace of God, of England, Scot-  
land, France and Ireland, King and  
Queen, Defender of the Faith, &c.  
1693.*

“ **W** H E R E A S a bloody War has for  
“ some Years now past been made  
“ and carried on by the *Indians* within the Eastern  
“ Parts of the said Province, against their Ma-  
“ jesties Subjects the *English*, thro’ the Instiga-  
“ tion and Influence of the *French*, and being  
“ sensible of the Miseries that we and our Peo-  
“ ple are reduced unto by adhering to their  
“ ill Counsel; We whose Names are hereunto  
“ subscribed, being Segamores, and Chief Cap-  
“ tains of all the *Indians* belonging to the several  
“ Rivers of *Penobscot* and *Kennebeck*, *Amonoscog-  
gin* and *Saco*, Parts of the said Province of the  
“ *Massachusetts* Bay, within their said Majesties  
“ Sovereignty, having made Application to his  
“ Excel-

Ann<sup>o</sup> 1693 W<sup>m</sup> “ Excellency Sir *William Phips*, Captain General and Governour in Chief, in and over the said Province, that the War may be put to an End, do lay down our Arms, and cast ourselves upon their said Majesty’s Grace and Favour. And each of us respectively for ourselves, and in the Name and with the free Consent of all the *Indians* belonging unto the several Rivers aforesaid, and of all other *Indians* within the said Province, of and from *Merrimack* River, unto the most Easterly Bounds of the said Province, hereby acknowledging our hearty Subjection and Obedience unto the Crown of *England*; and do solemnly covenant, promise, and agree to and with the said Sir *William Phips*, and his Successors in the Place of Captain General, and Governour in Chief of the aforesaid Province or Territory, on their said Majesty’s Behalf in Manner following. viz.

“ THAT at all Time and Times for ever, from and after the Date of these Presents, we will cease and forbear all Acts of Hostility towards the Subjects of the Crown of *England*, and not offer the least Hurt or Violence to them, or any of them, in their Persons or Estate, but will henceforward hold and maintain a firm and constant Amity and Friendship with all the *English*.

“ *Item*, WE abandon and forsake the *French* Interest; and will not in any wise adhere to, joyn with, aid or assist them in their Wars or Designs against the *English*; nor countenance, succour, or conceal any of the *Enemy Indians* of *Canada*, or other Places, that shall happen to come to any of our Plantations within the *English* Territory, but secure them, if in our Power, and deliver them up to the *English*.

“ THAT

Anno  
1693.  
W

“ THAT all *English* Captives in the Hands  
 “ or Power of any of the *Indians* within the  
 “ Limits aforesaid, shall with all possible Speed  
 “ be set at Liberty, and returned home without  
 “ any Ransom, or Payment to be made or given  
 “ for them, or any of them.

“ THAT their Majesty’s Subjects the *English*  
 “ shall and may peaceably and quietly enter  
 “ upon, improve, and for ever enjoy all and sin-  
 “ gular their Rights of Lands, and former Set-  
 “ tlements, and Possessions within the Eastern  
 “ Parts of the said Province of the *Massachuset-*  
 “ *Bay*, without any Pretensions or Claims by us;  
 “ or any other *Indians*, and be in no wise mo-  
 “ lested, interrupted, or disturbed therein.

“ THAT all Trade and Commerce which  
 “ hereafter may be allowed between the *English*  
 “ and *Indians*, shall be under such Management  
 “ and Regulation, as may be stated by an Act  
 “ of the General Assembly, or as the Governor  
 “ of the said Province for the Time being, with  
 “ the Advice and Consent of the Council shall  
 “ see Cause to direct and limit.

“ IF any Controversy or Difference at any  
 “ Time hereafter happen to arise between any  
 “ of the *English* and *Indians* for any real or sup-  
 “ posed Wrong done on one Side, or the other,  
 “ no private Revenge shall be taken by the *In-*  
 “ *dians* for the same, but proper Application  
 “ shall be made to their Majesty’s Government  
 “ upon the Place for Remedy hereof in a due  
 “ Course of Justice; we hereby submitting our-  
 “ selves to be ruled and governed by their Ma-  
 “ jesty’s Laws, and desire to have the Benefit of  
 “ the same.

“ FOR the more full Manifestation of our  
 “ Sincerity and Integrity in all that which we  
 “ have herein before covenanted and promised,  
 “ we do deliver unto Sir *William Phips*, their  
 “ Ma-



Anno  
1693  
W

“ Majesty’s Governor as aforesaid, *Abassombamett* Brother to *Edgeremett*, *Wenongahewitt* Cousin to *Madockawando* and *Edgeremett*, and *Bagatawarwongon*, also *Sheepscoat John*, to abide and remain in the Custody of the *English*, where the Governor shall direct, as Hostages or Pledges for our Fidelity, and true Performance of all and every the foregoing Articles, reserving Liberty to exchange them in some reasonable Time for a like Number to the Acceptance of the Governor and Council of the said Province, so as they be Persons of as good Account and Esteem among the *Indians*, as those which are to be exchanged. In Testimony whereof we have hereunto set our several Marks and Seals the Day and Year first above written.

THE above-written Instrument was deliberately read over, and the several Articles and Clauses thereof interpreted to the *Indians*, who said, they well understood and consented thereunto, and was then signed, sealed, and delivered in the Presence of us.

*Edgeremett*,  
*Madockawando*,  
*Wassambomet* of *Navidg-*  
*wock*,

*Wenobson* of *Teconnet*, in  
Behalf of *Moxis*.

*Keterramogis* of *Narridg-*  
*wock*,

*Ahanquit* of *Pencbscott*,

*Bomasseen*,

*Nitamemet*,

*Webenes*,

*Awanfomek*,

*Robin Doney*,

*Madaumbis*,

*Paquaharet*, alias *Ni-*  
*thaniel*.

*John Wing*,  
*Nicolas Manning*,  
*Benjamin Jackson*.

Interpreters.

*John Harnybrock*,  
*John Bagatawarwong-*  
*go*, alias *Sheepscoat-*  
*John*.  
*Phill Ounsakis*, Squa.

CHAP.



## CHAP. XII.

*Of the suspected Witchcrafts of New-England.*

*The Circumstances of the Afflicted. Tryals of several of the Accused (viz.) of the Reverend Mr. George Burroughs, Clerk, Bridget Bishop, and Susanna Martin, the Number of the Condemned, and of those that were Executed, with their Dying Behaviour. Several of the Accused make their Escape. Indirect Methods used to promote Accusations. The Recantation of some of the Confessing Witches; and of the Jurors.*



NEW-ENGLAND was never in such Distress since the first Settlement of the *English* in it, as when Sir *William Phips* entred on his Government; for the *French* and *Indians* were ravaging the Frontiers, while the Inhabitants were hanging one another for suspected Witchcrafts and Sorceries. Strange were the Mistakes that some

*Anno*  
*1692*  
~

Anno

1692

w

some of the wisest and best Men in the Country committed on this Occasion, which must have been fatal to the whole Province, if God by his Providence had not mercifully interposed; but this Affair having been variously reported to the World, as well as debated with some Warmth among themselves: I shall content myself only with relating the several Facts, as I find them attested by good Witnesses, without entring very far into the Merits of the Cause.

THE Distemper began the latter End of the Year 1691, in the Family of the Reverend Mr. *Paris*, Minister of *Salem*, whose Daughter and Neice of about nine and eleven Years of Age began on a sudden to play some odd Pranks, which neither themselves nor others could account for, such as getting into Holes, creeping under Chairs and Stools, &c. After some Time they fell into Convulsion-Fits, and complained of being bitten and pinched by invisible Agents; sometimes they were struck dumb, their Mouths and all their Limbs being distorted, in a Manner that moved Compassion in all that saw them; a Consultation of Physicians being called in to give their Judgments upon this extraordinary Case, some were of Opinion, that they were under an *evil Tongue*, which presently spread all over the Town. Mr. *Paris* himself being of this Mind, kept several Days of Fasting and Prayer on his Family's Account; and 'twas observed, that during the Time of Prayer the *Afflicted* were very quiet, but in the Intervals of Duty they would fall into Fits, and act and speak very ridiculously: Mr. *Paris* had some Suspicion of an *Indian* Man and his Wife that lived in his House, who, after some Severities had been used upon them, confessed thus much, *That being concerned at the Childrens Disorder, and desirous to know the Causes of it, they had, according to an Old Custom,*  
*taken*



taken some of the afflicted Person's Urine, and mixing it with Rye-Meal, had made a Cake, and baked it, to find out the Witch: Immediately after this, the Children cryed out of the Indian Woman's pinching, pricking, and tormenting them in an invisible Manner; they pretended to see her when no-body else could, nay, to tell what she was doing when out of Sight: The Children complained likewise of two other Women in the Town, *Sarah Good* a melancholy Person, and one *Osburn* who was bed-rid; these, with *Tituba* the Indian Woman, were examined by the Magistrate, and committed; *Tituba* being frightened out of her Wits confessed every thing her Master would have her, as, that she was a Witch, and that in Conjunction with two or three others, whom the Afflicted had accused, she had tormented the Complainers. *Tituba* lay in Prison 'till the Storm was over, and was then sold for the Payment of her Fees; but upon her Enlargement she declared, *That her Master had beat her, and other Ways abused her, to make her confess and accuse (such as he called) her Sister Witches, and that whatsoever she had said by Way of confessing, or accusing others was the effect of such Usage.* But *Tituba* had no sooner confessed herself a Witch, but she was afflicted herself, and complained of her Fellow-Witches tormenting her for her Confession; several others likewise in the Town were taken with Fits at the same Time, and complained of *Tituba*, and her Confederates tormenting them. From these small Beginnings the Distemper spread like a pestilential Sickneſs thro' several Parts of the Province, 'till the Prisons were hardly capable to contain the Number of the Accused.

Ann<sup>o</sup>  
1692

'TIS a surprizing Account, that Dr. *Mather* gives of the Circumstances of these afflicted Persons; he says, \* " That their Limbs were horribly distorted and convulsed, that they were pinched black and blue, that Pins were invisibly run into their Flesh, and that they were scalded 'till they had Blisters raised in them. One of them (says he) was assaulted by a Spectre with a Spindle in its Hand, which no-body else in the Room could see, 'till the Afflicted in one of her Agonies snatched it out of the Spectre's Hand, and then all the Company saw it. Another was haunted by a Spectre in an invisible Sheet; but the Afflicted in one of her Fits, tearing a Piece of it away, it became visible; sometimes Poison has been forced on the Afflicted by an invisible Hand, which when they have drank they have presently swollen, and afterwards been relieved by the Medicines usually given in such Cases; sometimes they have complained of burning Rags forced into their Mouths, which no-body else could see, yet the Burns have remained on their Mouths afterwards; sometimes they have complained of Irons heating in the Fire to brand them, the Marks of which they have carried to their Graves; the Spectres (says he) usually personated some Persons whom the Afflicted knew, and (which is very strange, if true) when they wounded the Spectre, the Person whom the Spectre represented was wounded too: For Example, one of the afflicted said, that the Spectre that tormented her was D—— H—— and pointing to a certain Place in the Room, she cried out, there is D—— H——, upon

---

\* *Mather, Book II. page 69*

“ which

“ which a Man with his Rapier struck at the Anno  
1692  
 “ Place, and the *Afflicted* told him, that he had  
 “ given her a small Prick about the Eye; soon  
 “ after which *D—— H——* being apprehended,  
 “ confessed herself a Witch, and that in troub-  
 “ ling the Girl that had impeached her she had  
 “ received two Wounds, one about the Eye,  
 “ which she shewed the Magistrates, and ano-  
 “ ther in the Side. If the *Accused* cast their  
 “ Eye on the *Afflicted*, the *Afflicted*, tho’ their  
 “ Faces were turned another Way would fall  
 “ into a Swoon, and continue in it ’till the  
 “ Hands of the *Accused* came to touch them;  
 “ and it was often found, that the Flesh of the  
 “ *Afflicted* was bitten, so that the Print of Teeth  
 “ was very visible, and there would appear just  
 “ such a Set of Teeth as was in the *Accused*,  
 “ even such as might be clearly distinguish’d  
 “ from other People’s: In a Word, the afflicted  
 “ (as the *Doctor* observes) in a few Days Time  
 “ arrived to such a refining Alteration upon their  
 “ Eyes, that they could see their Tormentors;  
 “ they saw a Devil of a little Stature, and of a  
 “ tawny Colour, attended with Spectres that  
 “ appeared in more humane Circumstances;  
 “ these Tormentors used to tender the afflicted  
 “ a Book, requiring them to sign, or touch it at  
 “ least, in Token of their consenting to be list-  
 “ ed in the Devl’s Service, which, if they refused,  
 “ the Spectres under the Command of the *Black*  
 “ *Man*, tortured them with prodigious Molesta-  
 “ tions.”

BUT Mr. *Calef* of *Boston* in his Book, entitled,  
 \* *More Wonders of the invisible World*, has endea-  
 vour’d to invalidate the *Doct r’s* Account of  
 Things; he declares, that the Story of the *Sheet*

---

\* Part v. p. 103.



*Ann*  
*1692* was a known Forgery, it having been provided by the *Afflicted Person* the Day before; and he does not doubt, but the *Spindle* was so too. He adds, that the Print of the *Set of Teeth* was nothing but the *Afflicted's* biting themselves; and that sometimes instead of finding a *Set of Teeth*, the *Afflicted* have not had a Tooth in their Heads; \* And to shew yet farther the Wickedness of these *Afflicted Persons*, he mentions an Accident at the Trial of *Sarah Good*, which, if true, ought alone to have invalidated their Evidence for the future; the Story is this, While *Sarah Good* was upon her Trial, one of the afflicted fell into a Fit, and cried out, that the Prisoner's Spectre was stabbing her with a Knife, but had broke it in her Body; and to confirm the Truth of her Relation, she pluck'd a Piece of the Blade out of her Breast, and shewed it in Court; but there was a young Man present, who seeing the Blade, had the Honesty and Courage to claim it for his, and to declare before the Judges, that he broke his Knife but the Day before, and threw away that Part of the Blade in the Presence of the *Afflicted Person*, but that he had the Handle with the other Part of the Blade in his Pocket, which he deliver'd into Court, and upon comparing them together they were found to be Parts of the same Knife; upon which the Judge only reprimanded her, and bid her tell no more Lies. †

'Tis certain, that these suspected *Wizzards* and *Witches* were convicted on very slender Evidence; for the Court allow'd the Witnesses to tell Stories of 20 or 30 Years standing, about over-setting of Carts, the Death of Cattle, Unkindness to Relations, or unexpected Accidents

\* *Mr Calef, Part V. p. 154.* † *Ibid. p. 101, 102.*

befalling after some Quarrel, all that was alleged against them to the *Purpose* being either from the distemper'd Persons themselves, or from those, who had been frighted into a Confession of their being Witches, by the Threatnings of the Magistrates, or encourag'd to it with Hopes of Mercy.

BUT that the Reader may judge for himself, I'll set before him two or three of the Trials of these unhappy Persons, out of *Dr. Cotton Mather's Wonders of the invisible World*, published by Command of his Excellency *Sir William Phips* with the Recommendation and Thanks of Lieut. Gov. *Stoughton*, and the Approbation of the Judges and Ministers, with some few Abbreviations.

Essex II.      *The Indictment of George Burroughs, Clerk.*

*Anno Regni Regis & Regine Wilhelmi & Mariæ, nunc Angliæ, &c. quarto.*

The Jurors for our Sovereign Lord and Lady the King and Queen, present,

**T**HAT George Burroughs, late of Falmouth, in the Province of the Massachusetts-Bay in New-England, Clerk, the 9th Day of May, in the fourth Year of the Reign of our Sovereign Lord and Lady William and Mary, by the Grace of GOD, of England, Scotland, France, and Ireland, King and Queen, Defenders of the Faith, &c. and divers other Days and Times, as well before us after, certain detestable Arts called *Witchcrafts*, and *Sorceries*, wickedly and feloniously hath used, practised, and exercised at, and within the Township of Salem, in the County of Essex aforesaid, in, upon, and against one Mary Wolcott, of Salem Village in the County of Essex, single Woman, by which said wicked Arts

Anno the said Mary Wolcott, the ninth of May in the  
1692 fourth Year aboveſaid, and divers other Days and  
Times, as well before as after, was, and is tortured,  
afflicted, pined, conſumed, waſted and tormented, a-  
gainſt the Peace of our Sovereign Lord and Lady the  
King and Queen, and againſt the Form of the Statute  
in that Caſe made and provided.

Endorſed by the Grand-Jury.

Witnesses.

*Billa Vera.*

Mary Wolcott,  
Sarah Vibber,  
Mercy Lewis,  
Anne Putnam,  
Elizabeth Hubbard.

THERE was alſo a Second Indiſtment for  
afflicting *Elizabeth Hubbard*.

A Third Indiſtment for afflicting *Mercy Lewis*,

AND a Fourth for afflicting *Anne Putnam*.

THE Witnesses the ſame as above, only *Mary Warren* was added to the laſt.

THE Judges at this and the other Trials  
were Lieutenant Governour *Stoughton*, Major  
*Saltonſtall*, Major *Richards*, Major *Gidny*, Mr.  
*Wait Winthrop*, Capt. *Sewall*, and Mr. *Serjeant*,  
or a *Quorum* of them.

Mr. *Burrughs* was brought upon his Trial  
'*Auguſt 5, 1692*; and to ſupport the Charge there  
appeared the five or ſix diſtempered Perſons men-  
tion'd in the Indiſtment, and about eight Con-  
feſſing *Witches*, who ſwore, that he was a Head-  
Actor at ſome of their Hellish Rendezvous, and  
had the Promiſe of being a King in Satan's  
Kingdom now going to be erected. He was ac-  
cuſed by nine Perſons, for Feats of extraordinary  
Strength, which could not be done without a  
Diabolical Aſſiſtance.

THE



Ann  
1692  
~

THE *Bewitched Persons* unanimously charg'd the Spectre of the Prisoner to have a Share in their Torments; one of them said, that in her Agonies a little black-hair'd Man came to her saying, his Name was B——, and bid her set her Hand to a Book which he shew'd her, bragging, that he was a Conjuror above the ordinary Rank of Witches; that he often persecuted her with the Offer of that Book, saying, she should be well, and fear no-body, if she would but sign it, and that he inflicted cruel Pains and Hurts upon her, because of her denying so to do.

OTHERS of them testify'd, that in their Torments the Prisoner tempted them to go to a Sacrament, to which they perceiv'd him with the Sound of a Trumpet summoning other Witches, who quickly after the Sound came from all Quarters to the Rendezvous; one of them falling into a kind of Trance, afterwards affirm'd, that the Prisoner had carried her unto the Top of a very high Mountain, where he shew'd her Mighty and Glorious Kingdoms, and said, he would give them all to her, if she would write in his Book, but she refused.

SEVERAL of the *Bewitched* declared, that they had been troubled with the Apparitions of two Women, who said, they had been the Prisoner's Wives, and that he had been the Death of them, and that the Magistrates must be told of it, and if he denied it upon his Trial they did not know but they should appear in Court. Now while he was upon his Trial one of the *bewitched Persons* was cast into an Horror at the Ghosts of the Prisoner's two Wives then appearing before him, and crying for Vengeance against him; hereupon several of the *bewitched* were successively called in, who all not knowing what the former had seen and said, concurred in

*Anna*  
1629 the Horror of the Apparition, which they affirmed the Prisoner had before his Eyes; but he utterly denied that he discerned any Thing of it.

It cost the Court a great deal of Trouble to hear the Testimonies of the *Afflicted*, for when they were going to give in their Evidence they would be taken with Fits which hinder'd their speaking a considerable Time; the Chief Judge asked the Prisoner, Who he thought hindered these Witnesses from giving in their Testimonies? And he answer'd, he supposed it was the Devil. The Judge replied, How comes the Devil so loth to have any Testimony born against you? Which cast him into a very great Confusion.

THE *Confessing - Witches* testified, that the Prisoner had been at Witch-Meetings with them, and had seduced and compelled them to the Snares of Witchcraft, that he promised them fine Cloaths for doing it, that he brought Poppets to them, and Thorns to stick into those Poppets for the afflicting other People, and that he exhorted them to bewitch all *Salem-Village*, but to do it gradually.

BUT besides the Testimonies of the *Afflicted*, several Persons of Credit and Honour appeared in Court, and witnessed, that tho' the Prisoner was but a puny Man, yet he had done Things beyond the Strength of a Giant; that he made nothing of taking up a Gun of about seven Foot Barrel behind the Lock with one Hand, and holding it out at Arms-end. The Prisoner in his Vindication said, that there was an *Indian* in the Company that did the same Thing, but the Court supposed the *Black Man* might be the Person that gave him that Assistance. There were two Witnesses that swore, that with only putting the Fore-Finger of his Right-Hand into the Muzzle of a Fowling-Piece of about six or seven Foot Barrel, he lifted it up, and held it

out at Arms-end. Another testified, that he made nothing of taking up whole Barrels filled with Melasses or Cyder, in very disadvantageous Postures, and carrying them through the difficultest Places out of a Canoe to the Shore.

OTHERS testified, that he had been a cruel Husband to his Wives, that he used all Means to make them write, sign, seal, and swear a Covenant never to reveal any of his Secrets; and that his Wives had often complain'd to their Neighbourhood, of their House being troubled with evil Spirits.

MR. *Ruck* Brother-in-Law to the Prisoner testified, that Mr. *Burroughs* and his Wife going out with him two or three Miles to gather Strawberries; he with *Burroughs's* Wife rid home softly to keep Company with the Prisoner who was on Foot; but the Prisoner stepp'd aside a little into the Bushes, whereupon they halted, and hallowed for him, but he not making them any Answer they went homewards with a quickned Pace, not expecting to see him in a considerable Time, but when they were near home, to their Astonishment they found him on Foot with them with a Basket of Strawberries; the Prisoner immediately chid his Wife for what she had said of him to her Brother on the Road, which when they wondred at, he said, he knew their Thoughts; *Ruck* replied, that was more than the Devil himself knew, but the Prisoner answered, *My G O D makes known your Thoughts to me*: The Prisoner making no Reply to this worth considering, Dr. *Mather* says, the Court were of Opinion, *That he then stepp'd aside only that by the Assistance of the Black Man he might put on his Invisibilty; and in that fascinating Mist gratify his own jealous Humour to hear what they said of him*; but *Burroughs* had said, that



Anno

1692

THE Prisoner, it seems, made but a weak Defence full of Contradictions and Falshoods, reflecting on the Reputation of some of the Witnesses; he also delivered in a Paper to the Jury, wherein he endeavoured to prove, *That there neither are, nor ever were Witches, that having made a Compact with the Devil can send a Devil to torment other People at a Distance*; but notwithstanding this, or any Thing else he could say for himself, the Jury brought him in guilty; when Sentence of Death was pass'd on him, he denyed again what the Witnesses had all swore against him, but added, that he did not so much blame the Judges and Jury for condemning him, as the false Witnesses that brought him to his Death.

BRIDGET BISHOP, alias OLIVER, Wife of *Edward Bishop* of Salem, Sawyer, was tryed upon 5 several Indictments, June 2, 1692, for using certain detestable Arts called Witchcraft, in, upon, and against *Mercy Lewis, Abigail Williams, Mary Wolcott, Elizabeth Hubbard, and Anne Putnam*; to all which she pleaded, Not guilty.

THE Witnesses produced to support the Charge were, *First*, the Bewitched Persons themselves, who testified, that the Shape of the Prisoner did oftentimes pinch them, choak them, bite, and afflict them, urging them to write their Name in a Book which the Spectre called *Ours*. That when the Prisoner was first examin'd, in Order to her Commitment, they (*viz.*) the Afflicted were struck down into a Fit, and could not recover 'till she came and touched them, and several of them fell into Fits while she was now at the Bar.

Secondly, *Deliverance Hobbs*, who had confessed herself a Witch, testify'd, that the Prisoner tempted her to sign the Book again, and to deny what she had confessed, and that the Shape of the Prisoner whipp'd her with Iron Rods to force

force her to it, and that the Prisoner was at a <sup>Ann</sup> General Meeting of Witches in a Field near <sup>1692</sup> *Salem-Village*, and there partook of the Sacrament with them.

Thirdly, *John Cook* testify'd, that about five or six Years ago he was assaulted with the Shape of the Prisoner in his Chamber, and so terrify'd, that an Apple that he had in his Hand flew strangely from him into his Mother's Lap six or eight Foot Distance.

Fourthly, *Samuel Gray* testify'd, that about fourteen Years ago he waked one Night, and saw his Room full of Light, and a Woman between the Cradle and Bed-side, he got up but found the Doors fast, and the Apparition vanish'd, however the Child in the Cradle was so frightened that it pined away, and in some Time dyed. He confessed he had never seen the Prisoner before, but was now satisfy'd that it was her Apparition.

Fifthly, *John Bly* and his Wife testify'd, that he bought a Sow of the Prisoner's Husband, but being to pay the Money to another, she was so angry that she quarrelled with *Bly*, and soon after the Sow was taken with strange Fits, jumping, leaping, and knocking her Head against the Fence, which made the Witness conclude, that the Prisoner had bewitched it.

Sixthly, *Richard Coman* testify'd, that eight Years ago he was terrify'd with the Spectre of the Prisoner and others, who so oppress'd him in his Bed that he could not stir Hand nor Foot, but calling up some-body to come to his Assistance, as soon as the People of the House spoke, the Spectre vanished, and all was quiet.

Seventhly, *Samuel Shattock* testify'd, that in the Year 1680, the Prisoner often came to his House on frivolous Errands; soon after which his Child was taken with strange Fits, and at last lost his Understanding, the Fits were manifestly Epilep-  
tick,

*Anno* tick, but the Witness verily believed it was be-  
*1692* witch'd by the Prisoner.

~ Eighthly, *John Louder* testify'd, that upon some little Controversy with the Prisoner about her Fowls, going well to Bed, he awoke in the Night, and saw the Likeness of this Woman grievously oppressing him. Another Time he was troubled with a black Pig, but going to kick it, it vanish'd. Another Time as he was sitting in his Room, a black Hobgoblin jump'd into the Room, which spake to him these Words, *I understand you are troubled in Mind, be ruled by me, and you shall want nothing in this World.* But when he endeavour'd to strike it there was nothing; upon this he ran out of his House, and saw the Prisoner in her Orchard, but had not Power to speak to her, but concluded his Trouble was all owing to her.

Ninthly, *William Stacy* testify'd, that the Spectre of the Prisoner had play'd him several Pranks of the same Nature with the former; for Example, having receiv'd some Money of the Prisoner for Work, he had not gone above three Rods from her, but it was gone from him; some Time after, discoursing with the Prisoner about grinding her Grist, he had not gone above six Rods from her with a small Load in his Cart, but the Off-Wheel sunk into a Hole on plain Ground, that the Deponent was forc'd to get Help for the Recovery of it, but stepping back to look for the Hole, there was none to be found. Another Time, as he was going home in a dark Night he was lifted up from the Ground, and thrown against a Stone-Wall, and after that, he was hoisted up, and thrown down a Bark at the End of his House.

Lastly, *John* and *William Bly* testify'd, that being employ'd by the Prisoner to take down her Cellar-Wall, they found several Poppets made



made of Rags and Hogg's Bristles with head-<sup>Ann</sup>  
less Pins in them, the Points being outwards. <sup>1692</sup>  
Besides all this, a Jury of Women was empan-  
nelled to search her, who found a preternatural  
*Teat* upon her Body, but upon a second Search  
three or four Hours after, there was none to be  
found.

UPON this Evidence, the Prisoner, notwith-  
standing any thing she could say in her own De-  
fence, was convicted, and executed.

*SUSANNA MARTIN* indicted *June 29,*  
1692, of the like Crimes of Witchcraft and Sorcery  
on the Bodies of *Mercy Lewis, Anne Putnam, &c.*  
to which she pleaded, Not guilty. At her  
Commitment she was asked by the Justice,

*Magistrate.* Pray what ails these People?

*Martin.* I don't know.

*Magist.* But what do you think ails them?

*Martin.* I don't desire to spend my Judgment  
upon it.

*Magist.* Don't you think they are bewitched?

*Martin.* No. I don't think they are.

*Magist.* Tell us your Thoughts about them.  
then?

*Martin.* No. My Thoughts are my own  
when they are in, but when they are out they  
are another's. Their Master ———

*Magist.* Their Master; who do you think is  
their Master?

*Martin.* If they deal in the Black Art, you  
may know as well as I.

*Magist.* Well, what have you done towards  
this?

*Martin.* Nothing at all.

*Magist.* Why, 'tis your Appearance?

*Martin.* I can't help it.

*Magist.* Is it not your Master? How comes  
your Appearance to hurt them?

*Martin.*

*Anno* *Martin.* How do I know? He that appeared  
*1692* in the Shape of *Samuel*, may appear in any one's  
 Shape.

BUT the *Afflicted* falling into their Fits when she did but look upon them, she was asked the Reason of it, and answered, *she could not tell, it may be the Devil bore her more Malice than another.* So she was committed, and being brought to her Trial, the following Witnesses appeared to support the Charge of Witchcraft against her, besides the Accusations of the *Afflicted*.

*John Allen* of *Salisbury* testified, That he refusing to cart some Staves at the Request of the Prisoner, because of the Weakness of his Oxen, she was angry, and told him it had been as good he had, for his Oxen should not do him much more Service: He replied, *Do you threaten me, you old Witch? I will throw you into the Brook.* Upon which she run away; but his Oxen soon after run wild, and being pursued, ran into the Sea, and were all drowned except one, near the Mouth of *Merrimack* River.

*Bernard Peache* testified, That as he lay in his Bed one Night the Prisoner jumped in at Window, took hold of his Feet, and drawing his Body into a Heap, lay upon him for two Hours, so that he could neither speak nor stir; but at last he caught hold of her Hands, and bit three of her Fingers to the Bone, whereupon she went down Stairs, and out of Doors; but the People of the House saw nothing, only there was a couple of Footsteps on the Outside of the Door.

*John Kembal* testified, That upon a small Disgust, the Prisoner had told him his Cow should not do him any more Good, and it died next Morning: And another Time refusing to buy one of the Prisoner's *Puppeys*, he was soon after frightened with a black Dog as he was coming out

of the Woods, which flew upon him, and as he thought would have tore out his Throat, but naming the Name of *Christ* it vanished away; which he judged to be a Piece of the Prisoner's *Black Art* to revenge herself on him for not buying her Puppy.

*Anno*  
1692  
W

*Sarah Atkinson* testify'd, that the Prisoner came from *Amesbury* on Foot to her House at *Newbury* in an extraordinary Season, when it was not fit for any one to travel, and yet the Soles of her Shoes were hardly wet, *Atkinson* was amazed, and said, she should have been wet up to the Knees, if she had come so far, but the Prisoner replied, she scorned to be drabled. *Dr. Mather* says, it was observed this Evidence put her into singular Confusion.

*John Pressy* testify'd, that being one Night bewildered near a Field of the Prisoner's, he saw a marvellous Light about the Bigness of a half Bushel about two Roods out of the Way. He struck at it with all his Might, and felt it a palpable Substance, but going from it his Heels flew up, and he thought he had been falling into a Pit, but afterwards upon Search there was really no Pit in the Place, having after his Recovery gone five or six Roods further he saw the Prisoner on his Left-Hand, but exchanged no Words with her: He was so frightened with all this, that he could scarce find his Way home, but he heard next Day that the Prisoner was sadly hurt. He said further, that having given in some Evidence against the Prisoner some Years ago, she had told him, he would never prosper, nor never have above two Cows, which accordingly came to pass, for he never could get more in twenty Years.

THE chief Defence the Prisoner made for herself was, that she knew nothing of all these Things, but had led a virtuous and holy Life;  
Dr.



<sup>Ann</sup>  
<sup>1692</sup> Dr. Mather says, she was one of the most impudent, scurrilous, and wicked Creatures in the World; which Mr. Culef denies, \* The Jury however brought her in Guilty.

I can't forbear making one Remark upon these, as well as upon all the Trials that Dr. Cotton Mather has published to the World on this Occasion; that when he has given us the Depositions of the Witnesses against the Prisoners at large, he passes over their Defence in such general Words as these, *They said nothing worth considering; their Discourse was full of Tergiversations and Contradictions; they were confounded, and their Countenances fell, &c.* whereby his Reader is left in the dark, and rendred incapable of judging of the Merits of the Cause; if the Defence of the Prisoners was so weak and confused as the Doctor represents, it had been for the Advantage of the Court to have exposed it at large to the World; but if not, 'tis very hard that it should be smother'd.

BUT upon such Evidence as this, 28 Persons receiv'd Sentence of Death, of which 19 were executed, and one (namely) *Giles Cory* was press'd to Death; the Names of them that were executed were, *Bridget Bishop*, executed June the 10th. *Sarah Good*, and *Rebecca Nurse* of *Salem Village*, *Susannah Martin* of *Amesbury*, *Elizabeth How* of *Ipswich*, *Sarah Wildes* of *Topshields*, executed the 19th of July.

THE Reverend Mr. *George Barroughs*, *John Prester*, *John Willard* of *Salem Village*, *George Jacobs Sen.* of *Salem*, *Martha Carrier* of *Andover*, executed the 19th of August.

*Martha Cory*, *Mary Easty*, *Alice Parker*, *Anne Pudeater*, *Margaret Scott*, *Wilmet Redd*, *Samuel Wardwell*, and *Mary Parker*, executed the 22d of September.

---

\* Culef, p. 139.

THEIR Characters, and dying Behaviour was as follows. Anno  
1692  
W

*Bridget Bishop*, alias *Oliver*, had long undergone the Repute of a Witch, occasion'd by the Accusations of one *Samuel Gray*, who about 20 Years before had charged her with such Crimes ; but tho' *Gray* upon his Death-Bed testify'd his Sorrow and Repentance for such Accusations as being wholly groundless, yet the Report never wore off, and being now accused afresh, and upon Search, a Teat, being found upon her, as some say, tho' others it seems a few Hours after could see nothing of it ; she received Sentence of Death, but went out of the World without the least Confession of any thing relating to Witchcraft.

*Sarah Good* had been accounted a melancholy distemper'd Woman for a long Time. At her Execution Mr. *Noyes* urged her to confess, telling her she was a Witch, and she knew she was so ; to which she replied, You are a Liar, I am no more a Witch than you are a Wizzard, and if you take away my Life, God will give you Blood to drink.

\* *Rebecca Nurse* vehemently asserted her Innocence both when she was apprehended, and brought upon her Trial ; and the Jury were so dissatisfy'd with the Evidence produced against her, that they brought her in, *Not Guilty* ; whereupon all the *Accusers* in Court, and a little after all the *Afflicted* out of Court made a hideous Outcry to the Amazement of all the Spectators ; the Court also was strangely surprized ; the Chief Judge said, he would not impose upon the Jury, but intimated, as if they had

---

\* *Calef, &c.* p. 102, 103.

Anno  
1692  
~

not well consider'd one Expression of the Prisoner's, namely, that when one *Hobbs* a confessing Witch was brought in as Evidence against her, she turned her Head about, and said, *What do you bring her, she is one of us*. This, together with the Clamours of the *Accused*, induced the Jury to go out again; but not agreeing upon their Verdict, they came into Court, and desired the Prisoner at the Bar to explain that Expression; but the poor old Woman being hard of hearing, and in a very great Fright, said nothing; upon which they immediately brought her in Guilty. But when she was inform'd what Use was made of her Silence, she put in the following Declaration into Court.

**T**HESE Presents do humbly shew to the Honoured Court and Jury, that I being informed, that the Jury brought me in Guilty, upon my saying, that Good-Wife Hobbs and her Daughter were of our Company; but I intended no otherwise, than as they were Prisoners with us, and therefore did then, and yet do judge them not legal Evidence against their Fellow-Prisoners; and I being something hard of hearing, and full of Grief, none informing me how the Court took up my Words, and therefore had not an Opportunity to declare what I intended when I said they were of our Company.

Rebecka Nurse.

BUT it was now too late, the Governour indeed was so moved with her Case, that he granted her a Reprieve, but such were the dismal Clamours of the *Accusers*, that he was forced to recall it; so she was first excommunicated, and then executed with the rest. She was a pious Woman, a Member of the Church of *Salem*, and had innumerable Testimonials of her



her Christian Behaviour thro' the whole Course of her Life under the Hands of most credible Persons; her Behaviour in her Family was very exemplary, her Care in the Education of her Children, and setting them good Examples very extraordinary, and at her Execution she behav'd herself with all the Gravity and Seriousness of a Christian.

Anno  
1692  
W

IT was at her Trial that one of the Accusers cried out publicly of the Reverend Mr. *Willard*, Minister in *Boston*, as afflicting her, but she was sent out of Court, and it was told about, that she was mistaken in the Person.

THE Reverend Mr. *Burroughs* had been formerly Minister at *Salem*, but some Differences arising between him and his People, he left them and retired to *Falmouth*, which perhaps might be one Reason of his being fix'd upon by these *Salemites* for a Wizzard; Dr. *Mather* says he was a puny Man, but Mr. *Calef* \* says, that his Contemporaries at School during his Minority could have testified, that his Strength was then as much superior to theirs, as ever it was discovered to be since. Upon the Day of Execution, he was carried with the others in a Cart thro' the Streets of *Salem* to the Gallows; when he was on the Ladder † he made a Speech for the clearing of his Innocency, with such solemn and serious Expressions as were to the Admiration of all present; his Prayer (which he concluded by repeating the Lord's Prayer) was so well express'd, and utter'd with such Composure and Fervency of Spirit, as drew Tears from the Spectators, insomuch that some were afraid they would hinder the Execution; but the Ac-

---

\* *Calef in the Pref.*

† *Ibid.* p. 103, 104.

Ann<sup>o</sup>  
1692  
W

cusers said, the *Black Man* stood by and dictated to him; when he was cut down, he was dragged by the Halter to a Hole or Grave between the Rocks about two Foot deep, his Shirt and Breeches being pulled off, and an old Pair of Trousers put on in their Room; he was tumbl'd in with *Willard* and *Curryer*, one of his Hands and his Chin, and a Foot of another of them being left uncovered.

WHEN *John Procter* and his Wife were carried to Prison, the Sheriff seized all their Household - Goods, \* Provisions, and Cattle, which he sold, and put the Money in his Pocket; he threw away the Beer out of a Barrel, and carried away the Barrel, emptied a Pot of Broth, and took away the Pot, and left nothing in the House for the Support of the Children. *Procter* begg'd hard for a Reprieve, as appears by the moving Letter he writ to the Ministers of *Boston*, which the Reader will see by and by, but it was not granted. At his Execution, he earnestly requested *Mr. Noyes* to pray with, and for him, but it was denied, because he would not confess himself a Witch. His Wife was condemn'd with him, but escaped by pleading her Belly.

*John Willard* had been employed as a Messenger † to fetch in, several that were accused, but being unwilling at last to apprehend some that he had better Thoughts of, he declined the Service, and presently after, was himself accused of the same Crime, and that with such Vehemency, that they sent after him as far as *Nashawag* 40 Miles from *Salem*, where they overtook him as he was making his Escape out of the Country, 'tis said, the *Accusers* told the exact Time when

\* *Ibid.* p. 104, 105.† *Ibid.* p. 104.

he was apprehended, saying, *Now Willard is taken*; he was convicted by the Spectral Evidence, and executed with Mr. *Burroughs* and the rest. *Anna*  
*1693*

*George Jacobs*, Sen. being condemned, the Sheriff's Officers \* came and seized all he had, even to his Wife's Wedding-Ring; Hard was the Case of this Old Man ! who was convicted by the Evidence of his own Grand-Daughter, who to save her own Life, confessed herself a Witch, and was forced to appear against her own Grand-Father, and Mr. *Burroughs*; the Day before their Executions she came to Mr. *Burroughs*, and acknowledging her Guilt, begg'd his Pardon on her Knees, who not only forgave her, but also pray'd with, and for her. The Day after their Executions she wrote the following Letter to her Father.

*Honoured Father,*

AFTER my humble Duty remembred to you, hoping in the Lord of your good Health, as blessed be GOD I enjoy, tho' in abundance of Affliction, being close confined here in a loathsome Dungeon, the Lord look down in Mercy upon me, not knowing how soon I shall be put to Death, by Means of the Afflicted Persons; my Grand-Father having suffered already, and all his Estate seized for the King. The Reason of my Confinement is this, I having, thro' the Magistrates Threatnings, and my own vile and wretched Heart confessed several Things contrary to my Conscience and Knowledge, tho' to the wounding of my own Soul, the Lord pardon me for it; but, oh! the Terrors of a wounded Conscience who can bear! but blessed be the Lord, he would not let me go on in my Sins,

---

\* Calcf, p. 105.



*Anno* but in Mercy, I hope, to my Soul, would not suffer  
*1692* me to keep it in any longer, but I was forced to confess  
 the Truth of all before the Magistrates, who would not  
 believe me, but 'tis their Pleasure to put me here,  
 and God knows how soon I shall be put to Death.  
 Dear Father, let me beg your Prayers to the Lord on  
 my Behalf, and send us a joyful and happy Meeting  
 in Heaven. My Mother, poor Woman, is very crazy,  
 and remembers her kind Love to you, and to Uncle,  
 viz. D — A —, so leaving you to the Pro-  
 tection of the Lord, I rest your dutiful Daughter,

*From the Dungeon*  
*in Salem-Prison,*  
*Aug. 20, 1692.*

Margaret Jacobs.

THIS poor young Woman had certainly been hanged, as *Wardwell* was, for her Recantation, if an Imposthume had not broke in her Head at the Time appointed for her Trial, by which she escaped. Her Father was likewise accused, but fled; \* her Mother, a crazy, sickly Woman, was likewise accused, and imprisoned; she had four small Children with her in the House, when the Officer came, and perswaded her to go with him, telling her, she should speedily return; when she came into the Presence of the *Afflicted*, they said, they did not know her, but at length one of them saying, Don't you know *Jacobs* the old Witch? they all fell down into their Fits, and accused her; she was then sent to Prison, and lay there 10 Months; and the Neighbours in the mean Time kept the Children from starving.

At the Tryal of *Martha Carrier*, several of her own Children frankly confessed themselves

---

\* *Ibid.* p. 109.

Witches, and that their Mother had made them so; they gave an Account of several Journeys, Meetings, and Mischiefs by them performed; Dr. *Mather* adds this Memorandum concerning her. "This Rampant Hag *Martha Carrier* was the Person of whom the Confessions of the Witches and of her own Children among the rest, agreed, that the Devil had promised her, she should be "Queen of Hell." But tho' the Children's Evidence was very credible, the Court did not make Use of it for her Conviction.

WHEN the last eight Prisoners were going to Execution the Cart was set, as it was going up the Hill; upon which the *Afflicted*, and others said, the Devil hindered it; but the Prisoners all dyed with strong Protestations of their Innocence.

*Samuel Wardwell* \* had been prevail'd with to confess himself a Wizzard, to save his Life, but his Conscience not suffering him to do the Drudgery of taking away the Lives of his innocent Neighbours, he resolved to renounce his former Confession before the Magistrate; whereupon he was soon brought to his Trial: And his former Confession, with the *Spectre-Evidence* being produced against him, he was presently condemned. At Execution, while he was speaking to the People, protesting his Innocence; the Smoke of the Executioner's Tobacco came into his Face, and interrupted his Discourse a little; the Accusers said, *The Devil hindered him with Smoke.*

† *Mary Easty*, Sister of *Rebecca Nurse*, being sensible of the blind Fury of the People, and of the innocent Blood the Magistrates were bring-

---

\* *Ibid.* p. 106. † *Ibid.* p. 67.

Anno ing on themselves, presented the following Pe-  
 1692 titution.

To the Honourable Judge and Bench now sitting in Judicature in *Salem*, and the Reverend Ministers, the Petition of *Mary Easty* humbly sheweth,

**T**HAT whereas your humble poor Petitioner being condemned to dye, doth humbly beg of you to take it into your judicious and pious Consideration, that your humble and poor Petitioner knowing her own Innocence, and seeing plainly the *Wiles* and *Subtilty* of my Accusers by myself, cannot but judge charitably of others that are going the same *Way* with myself; I was confined a whole Month on the same Account that I am now condemned fir, and then cleared by the afflicted Persons, as some of your Honours know, and in two Days Time I was cried out upon again, and have been confined, and am now condemned to dye; the Lord above knew my Innocence then, and likewise does now, as at the great Day will be known to Men and Angels. I petition your Honours not for my own Life, for I know I must dye, and my appointed Time is set; but (the Lord he knows it is) if it be possible that no more innocent Blood may be shed, which undoubtedly cannot be avoided in the *Way* and Course you go in. I question not but your Honours do to the utmost of your Powers in the Discovery and Detection of *Witchcraft* and *Witches*, and would not be guilty of innocent Blood fir the World; but by my own Innocency I know you are in the wrong *Way*, the Lord in his infinite Mercy direct you in this great Work, if it be his blessed Will, that innocent Blood be not spied; I would humbly beg of you, that your Honours would be pleased to examine some of those Confessing *Witches*,

I



Anno  
1692

*I being confident there are several of them have belied themselves and others, as will appear, if not in this World, I am sure in the World to come, where I am going; and I question not but yourselves will see an Alteration in these Things: They say, my self and others have made a League with the Devil; we cannot confess; I know, and the Lord knows (as will shortly appear) they belye me, and so I question not but they do others: The Lord alone who is the Searcher of all Hearts, knows that as I shall answer it at the Tribunal-Seat, that I know not the least thing of Witchcraft, therefore I cannot, I durst not belye my own Soul. I beg your Honours not to deny this my humble Petition from a poor dying innocent Person, and I question not but the Lord will give a Blessing to your Endeavours.*

Mary Easty.

WHEN she took her last Farewell of her Husband, Children, and Friends, she was so serious and affecting, as drew Tears from the Eyes of almost all present.

\* *Martha Cory* Wife of *Giles Cory* was apprehended, and examined at the Meeting-House in *Salem*, *March 21*, before a Croud of Spectators; when *Mr. Noyes* one of the Ministers of the Town had been at Prayer, she desired that she likewise might go to Prayer, but was denied. *Mr. Paris's* Daughter, and two other Children, with about half a Dozen more were present, and accused her of afflicting them by biting, pinching, strangling, &c. They said, they saw her Likeness in their Fits coming towards them, and

---

\* *Ibid.* p. 91, 106.

bring

Anno  
1692

bringing them a Book to sign. Mr. *Hathorn* the Magistrate asked her, Why she afflicted those Children? She replied, she did not. He asked her, Who did then? She answered, She did not know, but thought they were poor distracted Creatures, and no Heed was to be given to what they said; Mr. *Hathorn* and *Noyes* replied, it was the Judgment of all present, that they were bewitched. The *Afflicted* said, that the *Black Man* whisper'd her in her Ear, and that she had a yellow Bird that used to suck between her Fingers, and was now there; Orders being given to see if there was any Sign, the Girl said, *It was now too late, for she had removed a Pin, and put it on her Head;* and upon Search there was found a Pin sticking upright there. When Mrs. *Cory* had any Motion of her Body, the *Afflicted* would cry out; when she bit her Lip, they would cry out, of being bitten; if she grasped one Hand with the other, they would cry out, of being pinched; so she was committed to Prison, and condemned, on the Spectral Evidence. When she came to dye, she concluded her Life with an excellent Prayer on the Ladder, protesting her Innocence to the very last.

HER Husband Mr. *Giles Cory* \* was apprehended, and committed upon the same Evidence; When he came to the Bar, he pleaded, *Not guilty* to his Indictment, but refused to be tried by a Jury, that had cleared none that had been brought before them. He was a bold stout Man, and knowing there would be the same Witnesses against him, as had been against the rest, he resolved to undergo any Kind of Death; rather than submit to their Verdict; so they ordered him to be press'd to Death, agreeably to

the Custom of *England* in such Cases, which was accordingly executed. He was the first in *New-England* that ever suffered this Kind of Death. Anno  
1692

ALL the rest of the Criminals that suffered Death on this Occasion went out of the World without the least Acknowledgment of their Guilt, laying their Blood at the Door of false Witnesses. But by these Examples, the Reader sees that neither Integrity of Manners, nor the strongest Protestations of Innocence with their dying Breath were sufficient to move Compassion, nor stop the Tide of the People's Zeal against these unhappy Persons at this Time.

THE Names of those that were condemned, but were first reprieved, and then pardoned were, *Abigail Falkner* of *Andover*, who pleaded Pregnancy, *Percas Hoar* of *Beverly*, *Mary Bradberry* of *Salisbury*, *Rebecca Eames* of *Boxford*, *Mary Lacy*, *Anne Foster* of *Andover*, *Abigail Hobbs* of *Topshild*, and *Elizabeth Procter*, who likewise pleaded her Belly.

BUT these were far from being all that were in Danger of losing their Lives for *Witchcraft* at this Time; there being 150 now in Prison, and above 200 more under Accusation by the *Afflicted*: Indeed the whole Country was in Confusion, every one being jealous of his Neighbour.

Several of the \* *Accused* made their Escape out of the Country, who had otherwise been truss'd up with their Neighbours, as

Mrs. *Mary Cary* of *Charles-Town*, who was committed to *Cambridge-Prison*, and laid in Irons; her Husband going to the Trials at *Salem*, and observing, that the Spectral Evidence was received, together with idle and malicious Stories

---

\* *Ibid.* p. 95.



*Ann.* against Peoples Lives came home, and contriv'd  
 1692 his Wife's Escape, they fled first to *Rhode-Island*,  
 and from thence to *New-York*, where they staid  
 'till the Storm was over.

Mr. *Edward Bishop* and his Wife; whose Goods and Chattels were immediately seized by the Sheriff, and afterwards redeemed for 10*l*.

\* Mr. *Philip English* and his Wife; whose Estate Mr. *Corwin* the Sheriff seized to the Value of 1500*l*. which was wholly lost, except about 300*l*. which was afterwards restored.

Mr. *Dudley Bradstreet*, a Justice of Peace in *Andover*, who having granted out Warrants against 30 or 40 for supposed Witchcraft, and seeing Cause at length to refuse granting any more, was with his Wife accused of killing nine Persons by Witchcraft, and forced to fly the Country.

Mr. *John Bradstreet*, Brother to the Justice, who being accused of afflicting a poor Dog, and riding upon him thro' the Air to Witch-Meetings, was forc'd to fly for his Life into *Piscataqua-Government*; but the Dog was put to Death.

Capt. *John Aldin*, a Man of good Reputation and Esteem, who being examined at *Salem*, and committed to *Boston* Goal, May 31, after 15 Weeks Imprisonment made his Escape; but the Captain having given the World an Account of his own Examination and Commitment, I shall transcribe it in his own Words. †

“ **J**OHAN ALDIN, *Sen.* of *Boston*, in the County  
 “ of *Suffolk*, Mariner, on the 28th of *May*  
 “ 1692, was sent for by the Magistrates of *Sa-*  
 “ *lem*, in the County of *Essex*, upon the Accusa-  
 “ tion of a Company of poor distracted, or pos-  
 “ sessed Creatures, or Witches, and being sent

---

\* *Ibid.* p. 103. † *Ibid.* p. 98.

“ by Mr. *Stoughton*, arrived there *May 31*, and <sup>Anno</sup>  
 “ appeared at *Salem-Village* before Mr. *Gidney*, <sup>1692</sup>  
 “ Mr. *Hathorn*, and Mr. *Corwin*.

“ THOSE Wenches being present who play’d  
 “ their juggling Tricks, falling down, crying  
 “ out, and staring in People’s Faces; the Ma-  
 “ gistrates demanded of them, Who it was of  
 “ all the People in the Room that hurt them?  
 “ one of these Accusers pointed several Times  
 “ at Capt. *Hill* there present, but spake nothing;  
 “ the same Accuser had a Man standing at her  
 “ Back to hold her up; he stoop’d down to her  
 “ Ear, then she cried out, *Aldin*, *Aldin* afflicted  
 “ her; one of the Magistrates asked her, if she  
 “ had ever seen *Aldin*? She said, *No*. He asked  
 “ how she knew it was *Aldin*? She said, the  
 “ Man told her so.

“ THEN all were ordered to go down into  
 “ the Street, where a Ring was made, and the  
 “ same Accuser cried out, *There stands Aldin, a*  
 “ *bold Fellow, with his Hat on before the Judges;*  
 “ *he sells Powder and Shot to the Indians and*  
 “ *French, and lies with the Indian Squas, and*  
 “ *has Indian Papooses.* Then was *Aldin* com-  
 “ mitted to the Marshal’s Custody, and had his  
 “ Sword taken from him; for they said, he  
 “ afflicted them with his Sword. After some  
 “ Hours *Aldin* was sent for to the Meeting-  
 “ House in the Village before the Magistrates,  
 “ who required *Aldin* to stand upon a Chair to  
 “ the open View of all the People.

“ THE Accusers cried out, that *Aldin* did  
 “ pinch them then, when he stood upon a Chair  
 “ in the Sight of all the People, a good Way  
 “ distant from them. One of the Magistrates  
 “ bid the Marshal to hold open *Aldin*’s Hands,  
 “ that he might not pinch those Creatures.  
 “ *Aldin* asked them, why they should think  
 “ that he should come to that Village to afflict  
 those

Annals

1692

W

“ those Persons that he never knew, or saw before ; Mr. *Gidney* bid *Aldin* confess, and give Glory to God ; *Aldin* said, he hoped he should give Glory to God, and hoped he should never gratify the Devil ; but appealed to all that knew him, if they ever suspected him to be such a Person ; and challenged any one that could bring in any thing upon their own Knowledge, that might give Suspicion of his being such an one. Mr. *Gidney* said, he had known *Aldin* many Years, and had been at Sea with him, and always look’d upon him to be an honest Man, but now he did see Cause to alter his Judgment. *Aldin* answered, he was sorry for that, but he hoped God would clear up his Innocency, that he would recall that Judgment again, and added, that he hoped he should with *Job* maintain his Integrity ’till he dyed. They bid *Aldin* look upon the Accusers, which he did, and then they fell down. *Aldin* asked Mr. *Gidney*, What Reason could be given, why *Aldin’s* looking upon him did not strike him down as well, but no Reason was given, as I heard ; but the Accusers were brought to *Aldin* to touch them, and this Touch, they said, made them well. *Aldin* began to speak of the Providence of God, in suffering these Creatures to accuse innocent Persons. Mr. *Noyes* asked *Aldin*, Why he would offer to speak of the Providence of God ? God by his Providence (said Mr. *Noyes*) governs the World, and keeps it in Peace ; and so went on with Discourse, and stopp’d *Aldin’s* Mouth as to that. *Aldin* told Mr. *Gidney*, that he could assure him, that there was a lying Spirit in them, for I can assure you there is not a Word of Truth in all they say of me. But *Aldin* was again committed to the Marshal, and his *Mittimus* made to the Prison of *Boston*.

THE



THE Captain having made his Escape, as I <sup>Anno</sup> observed before, returned again when the Storm <sup>1692</sup> was over, and surrendred himself to the Superior Court at *Boston*, where he was cleared by Proclamation the last *Tuesday* in *April*, 1693, none of his former Accusers appearing against him: But Examples of this Kind are without Number. There was a Gentleman of *Boston*, who being accused by the *Afflicted* at *Andover*, ventured to stand his Ground, and sent a Writ by some particular Friends to arrest his Accusers in 1000 *l.* Action for Defamation, with Instruction to inform themselves of the Certainty of the Proof, which so frightened the poor Creatures, that from that Time the Accusations at *Andover* generally ceased.

THINGS were indeed come to a wretched Pass, no Man being sure of his Life or Fortune for an Hour; and no Wonder, considering the infamous Methods that were made Use of to bring People into the Snare; there was a Society of Gentlemen at *Salem*, like that for the Reformation of Manners in *London*, who engag'd to find out, and prosecute all suspected Persons, and many were imprison'd by their Means; but the Proceedings of these Gentlemen were fair and honourable, in Comparison to the Methods that were taken at *Andover* for the finding out of Witches, which if God in his Providence had not put a speedy Stop to, must inevitably have dissolv'd the Government itself; the Case was this; Mr. *Joseph Ballard's* Wife of *Andover* falling sick of a malignant Fever, of which she dyed. Her Husband fancied her bewitch'd, and sent Horse and Man 40 Miles to *Salem* to fetch some of these distemper'd Wretches that pretended to the Spectral Sight, to tell him who it was that afflicted her: When they came they fell into their Fits, and accused one Person, as sitting on the  
Head

*Anno*  
1692  
~ Head, and another on the lower Parts of the Afflicted; no sooner was the Scene open'd but the whole Town was alarmed, and more than 50 were complain'd of for afflicting their Neighbours in a few Weeks; here it was that many were made to accuse themselves of riding upon Poles through the Air to Witch-Meetings; many Parents believ'd their Childre:n to be Witches, and Husbands their Wives.

FROM *Andover* \* these *Accusers* were sent for to *Glocester*, and occasioned four Women to be sent to Prison, but *Salem-Prison* being so full that it could hold no more, they were sent to *Ipswich*. In *November* the *Accusers* were sent for again by Lieutenant *Stephens*, who was told, that a Sister of his was bewitch'd; they told him, they saw three Persons sitting on his Sister 'till she dyed, but Bond was accepted for them, the Spectral Evidence beginning now to be called in Question.

BUT before Things were come to this Extremity, the Governour had summon'd an Assembly of Ministers to meet *June 15*, and give their Opinions concerning the Validity of the Spectral Evidence, several of whom, after due Consideration, gave it as their Opinion, “ That  
“ the Apparitions of Persons afflicting others  
“ was no Proof of their being Witches, nor  
“ was it inconsistent with the holy and righteous Government of God to permit the Devil to assume the Shape of good Men, and that  
“ a good Name obtain'd by a good Life ought  
“ not to be forfeited by meer Spectral Accusations; and that Alterations made in the Sufferers by a Look, or a Touch of the Accused,  
“ was no infallible Evidence of Guilt, but liable

---

\* *Ibid.* p. 110.

“ to be abused by the Devil’s *Legerdemains*, but  
 “ at the same Time humbly recommended to  
 “ the Government, the speedy and vigorous  
 “ Prosecution of such as had rendred themselves  
 “ obnoxious, according to the Directions given  
 “ in the Laws of God, and the wholesome Sta-  
 “ tutes of the *English* Nation, for the Detection  
 “ of Witchcraft.

Anno  
 1693

HAD the Opinion of these Ministers been  
 strictly follow’d, all the above-mention’d Calamities  
 had been prevented; for then the Jury  
 must have acquitted all that were accused on the  
 Spectral Evidence only, and the Spectral Evi-  
 dence being discountenanced, would quickly  
 have vanished, and the People have return’d to  
 their right Minds, as they did some Months  
 after.

BUT Things went on in the old Channel, ’till  
 the afflicted over-acted their Parts so far, as to  
 accuse some of the nearest Relations of Dr. *In-  
 crease Mather*, and of the Governour himself; it  
 was Time then to make a Stand: Accordingly  
 we find, the very next Sessions, which was *Ja-  
 nuary 3, 1692-3*, when 56 Bills were preferr’d  
 against Persons for Witchcraft, the Grand Jury  
 brought in 30 *Ignoramus*; and of the remaining  
 26, the Petty Jury convicted but three, whom  
 the Governour pardon’d: Nay, the People’s  
 Eyes were so far open’d by this Time, that they  
 would not convict People upon their own Con-  
 fessions, for when *Mary Watts’s* Confession was  
 produced as Evidence against her, the Grand  
 Jury would not accept it, but looking upon her  
 as a distemper’d Person, brought in the Bill *Ig-  
 noramus*; and tho’ the Court sent them out a  
 second Time, they return’d again with the same  
 Verdict.

AND indeed all the Confessions that were  
 made, seem to me either the Effects of a di-  
 M m stemper’d



Anno  
1693  
{

stemper'd Brain, or extorted from Persons to save their Lives; Dr. Mather has given us the Confession of *W. B.* a Man of 40 Years of Age writ with his own Hand in Prison, and sent to the Magistrates of his own Accord to confirm his former Confessions: But whether the Act of a Man in Prison, and under Apprehension of Death may be called free, I leave others to judge. However, I'll gratify the Reader's Curiosity with it, without being accountable either for the Sense, or *English* of it.

**G**OD having called \* me to confess my Sin and Apostacy in that Fall, in giving the Devil Advantage over me, appearing like a Black in the Evening to set my Hand to his Book, as I have own'd to my Shame; he told me, that I should not want, so doing. At Salem-Village there being a little off the Meeting-House about an Hundred fine Blades, some with Rapiers by their Sides, which was called, (and might be for ought I know) by B. and Bu. and the Trumpet sounded, and Bread and Wine, which they called the Sacrament; but I had none, being carried over all upon a Stick, never being at any other Meeting. I being at Cart last Saturday all the Day, of Hay and English Corn, the Devil brought my Shape to Salem, and did afflict M. S. and R. F. by clitching my Hand. And on Sabbath-Day, my Shape afflicted A. M. and at Night afflicted M. S. and A. M.: E. J. and A. F. have been my Enticers to this great Abomination, as One has own'd, and charg'd her other Sister with the same; and the Design was to destroy Salem-Village, and to begin at the Minister's House, and to destroy the Churches of God, and to set up Satan's Kingdom,

---

\* C. Mather, *Book* vi. p. 81.

and

and then all will be well. And now, I hope, God <sup>Anno</sup> has in some measure made me sensible of my Sin <sup>1693</sup> and Apostacy, begging Pardon of God, and of the honourable Magistrates, and all God's People; hoping and promising, by the Help of God, to set to my Heart and Hand to do what in me lyes to destroy such wicked Worship, humbly begging the Prayers of God's People for me, that I may walk humbly under this Affliction, and that I may procure to myself the sure Mercies of David.

BUT far the major Part, if not all the Confessions of the *Penitent Witches* (as they were called) were extorted from them, purely with the View of saving their Lives; hence it was, that the Husbands and Children of some upon their bended Knees have prevail'd with them to confess every thing that was laid to their Charge; Others have been wearied out with long and tedious Examinations before private Persons for many Hours together, 'till they yielded to any thing; the Question being then asked, Were you at such a Witch-Meting? Or, have you sign'd the Devil's Book? If they replied *Yes*, the whole was drawn out into the Form of a *Confession*. That this was really the Case will appear by the following *Certificate*, sign'd by the Hands of half a dozen honest Women, whose Consciences would not suffer them to disguise the Truth any longer. \*

WE whose Names are underwritten, Inhabitants of Andover, whereas that horrible and tremendous Judgment beginning at Salem-Village in the Year 1692, by some called *Witchcraft*, first breaking forth at Mr. Paris's House; several

---

\* Calef's *More Wonders*, &c. Part V. p. 111, 112.

Anno  
1693 young Persons being seemingly afflicted did accuse several Persons for afflicting them, and many there believing it to be so; we being informed, that if a Person were sick, the Afflicted Persons could tell what or who was the Cause of that Sickness; Joseph Ballard of Andover's Wife being sick at the same Time, he either from himself, or the Advice of others fetch'd two of the Persons, called the afflicted Persons from Salem-Village to Andover, which was the beginning of that dreadful Calamity that befell us in Andover; and the Authority in Andover believing the said Accusations to be true, sent for the said Persons to come together to the Meeting-House in Andover (the afflicted Persons being there); after Mr. Bernard had been at Prayer, we were blind-folded, and our Hands were laid upon the afflicted Persons, they being in their Fits, and falling into these Fits at our coming into their presence, as they said, some led us, and laid our Hands on them, and then they said, they were well, and that we were guilty of afflicting them; whereupon we were all seized as Prisoners by a Warrant from the Justice of Peace, and forthwith carried to Salem; and by Reason of that sudden Surprizal, we knowing ourselves altogether innocent of that Crime, we were all exceedingly astonished, and amazed, and consternated, and afrighted out of our Reason, and our dearest Relations seeing us in that dreadful Condition, and knowing our great Danger, apprehending, that there was no other Way to save our Lives, as the Case was then circumstantiated, but by confessing ourselves to be such and such Persons, as the afflicted represented us to be; they out of tender Love and Pity perswaded us to confess what we did confess; and indeed that Confession that is said we made, was no other than what was suggested to us by some Gentlemen, they telling us, that we were Witches, and they knew it, and we knew it, and they knew that we knew it; which made us think that we were so, and our Understanding, and our Reason, and our Faculties being almost



almost gone, we were not capable of judging of our *Condition*; as also the hard Measures they used with us, rendred us uncapable of making our Defence, but we said any thing, and every thing they desired, and most of what we said was but in Effect a consenting to what they said. Some Time after, when we were better composed, they telling of us what we had confessed, we did profess, that we were innocent, and ignorant of such things, and we hearing, that Samuel Wardwell who had renounced his Confession, was condemn'd, and executed, some of us were told, that we were going after Wardwell.

Anno  
1693  
W

Mary Osgood,  
Mary Tiler,  
Deliverance Dane,  
Abigail Baker,  
Sarah Wilson,  
Hannah Tiler.

IF this *Confession* had been made a little sooner, while the *Spectral Evidence* was in Repute, it had cost the *Confessors* their Lives; for 'tis impossible to express the blind Fury and Zeal of the People against the Prisoners, who believed every thing the *Afflicted* said, and disbelieved every thing the *Accused* offered in their own Vindication.

WHEN neither Promises nor Threatnings could bring Persons to *Confession*, they sometimes made Use of Violence and Force, as appears by the moving Letter that Mr. *Procter* sent to the Ministers of *Boston* a few Days before his Trial, which because it gives a clear Account of this Matter, I will transcribe in his own Words.

Anno  
1693

To the Reverend Mr. Mather, Moody,  
Baily, Allen, Willard.

Reverend Gentlemen,

**T**HE Innocence of our Case, with the Enmity of our \* Accusers, and our Judges and Jurors, whom nothing but our innocent Blood will serve their Turn, having condemned us already before our Trials, being so much incensed, and enraged against us by the Devil, makes us bold to beg and implore your favourable Assistance of this our humble Petition to His Excellency, That if it be possible our innocent Blood may be spared, which undoubtedly otherwise will be shed, if the Lord does not mercifully step in; the Magistrates, Ministers, Juries, and all the People in general being so much incens'd, and enrag'd against us, by the Delusion of the Devil, which we can term no other, by Reason we know in our own Consciences we are all innocent Persons; here are five Persons, who have lately confess'd themselves to be Witches, and accuse some of us of being along with them at a Sacrament, since we were committed to close Prison, which we know to be Lyes. Two of the five are Carrier's Sons, young Men, who would not confess any thing 'till they tied them Neck and Heels, 'till the Blood was ready to come out of their Noses, and 'tis credibly believ'd and reported, that this was the Occasion of making them confess that they never did; by Reason they said, one had been a Witch a Month, another five Weeks, and that their Mother had made them so, who has been confin'd here these nine Weeks. My Son William Procter, because he would not con-

---

\* Callef p. 104.

*feſs, when he was examin'd, that he was guilty, they* *Anno*  
*1693*  
*tyed him Neck and Heels 'till the Blood gushed out of*  
*his Noſe, and would have kept him ſo 24 Hours, if*  
*one more merciful than the reſt had not taken Pity on*  
*him, and cauſed him to be unbound. Theſe Actions*  
*are very like the Popiſh Cruelties; they have already*  
*undone us in our Eſtates, and that will not ſerve*  
*their Turns without our innocent Blood. If it can't*  
*be granted, that we may have our Tryals at Boſton,*  
*we humbly beg, that you would endeavour to have*  
*theſe Magiſtrates changed, and others put in their*  
*Room; begging alſo, and beſeeching, that you would*  
*pleaſe to be here ſome of you, if not all, at our Trials,*  
*hoping thereby you may be the Means of ſaving our*  
*innocent Bloods, deſiring your Prayers to the Lord on*  
*our Behalf, we reſt your poor afflicted Servants.*

John Procter, &c.

BUT this Letter had no Effect, *Procter* and his Fellow-Prisoners being convicted and executed a little after. Such Methods as theſe being made Uſe of, 'tis no Wonder that the Number of *Confefſing Witches* amounted to fifty, not one of whom were put to the Trial, whether they would abide by their Confessions when they came to dye; Unhappy Creatures! who were forc'd to do the Drudgery of taking away the Lives of their Neighbours, to ſave their own. But upon the *Afflicted's* over-acting their Part, as I obſerv'd before, the Tide of the People's Affections began to turn, and they who a little before were in Danger of being torn in pieces by the Mob, were now univerſally lamented and pity'd. All further Proſecutions were now ſtopp'd, the *Accuſations* of the *Afflicted* were entirely diſregarded; the Priſon-Doors were ſet open to all that were under Confinement, by the *Accuſations* of the *Afflicted*, and Sir *William Phips* after ſome



*Anno* Time he pardoned all that were under Sentence  
 1693 of Condemnation.

BUT besides the Blood that was spilt upon this Occasion, several Persons and Families were ruin'd in their Estates and Reputations, partly by long Imprisonment, and partly by the Avarice of the Officers who took Possession of their Houses in their Absence; and though I am fully satisfied, that the Zeal of the Government in this Affair proceeded from their Regard to the Glory of God, yet I must say, that the Magistrates were too partial in their Behaviour towards the *Accused*, and that Sir *William Phips* himself treated them with too much Severity, by ordering them to be laid in Irons, and countenancing the popular Cry against them.

THE whole Country were by Degrees made sensible of their Mistake, and most of the Actors in this Tragedy repented the Share they had in it. One of the Honourable Judges that sat on the Bench at these Trials, on a Fast-Day in a full Assembly at the *South Meeting in Boston*, delivered in a Paper to be read to all the People; acknowledging his having fallen into some Errors in the Trials at *Salem*, and begging the Prayers of the Congregation, that the Guilt of such Mis-carriages might not be imputed to the Country in general, or to him and his Family in particular. And while this Paper was reading, he stood up in the View of the whole *Assembly*.

THE Jury likewise publish'd a Paper sign'd with their own Hands in the following Words. \*

---

\* *Calef*, p. 144.

**WE** whose Names are underwritten, being in the Year 1692, called to serve as Jurors in Court at Salem, on Trial of many who were by some suspected of doing Acts of Witchcraft upon the Bodies of sundry Persons.

*WE* confess, that we ourselves were not capable to understand, nor able to withstand the mysterious Delusions of the Powers of Darkness, and Prince of the Air, but were, for Want of Knowledge in ourselves, and better Information from others, prevail'd with to take up with such Evidence against the Accused, as on further Consideration and further Information, we justly fear was insufficient for the touching the Lives of any, Deut. xvii. 6. whereby we fear, we have been instrumental with others, though ignorantly and unwittingly, to bring upon ourselves and this People of the Lord the Guilt of innocent Blood, which Sin the Lord saith in Scripture, he would not pardon, 2 Kings xxiv. 4. That is, *We* suppose in Regard of his temporal Judgments, we do therefore hereby signify to all in general, and to the surviving Sufferers in especial, our deep Sense of, and Sorrow for our Errors, in acting on such Evidence to the condemning of any Person.

*AND* do hereby acknowledge, that we justly fear that we were sadly deluded and mistaken, for which we are much disquieted and distressed in our Minds, and do therefore humbly beg Forgiveness first of God for Christ's Sake for this our Error, and pray, that God would not impute the Guilt of it to ourselves, nor others; and we also pray, that we may be consider'd candidly and aright by the living Sufferers, as being then under the Power of a strong and general Delusion, utterly unacquainted with, and not experienced in Matters of that Nature.

*WE*

Anno  
1693 *WE* do heartily ask Forgiveness of you all whom we have justly offended, and do declare according to our present Minds, we would none of us do such things again for the whole World ; praying you to accept of this, in Way of Satisfaction for our Offence, and that you would bless the Inheritance of the Lord, that he may be entreated for the Land.

Thomas Fisk, Foreman,	}	Thomas Perly, Sen.
William Fisk,		John Pebody,
John Batcheler,		Thomas Perkins,
Thomas Fisk, Jun.		Samuel Sayer,
John Dane,		Andrew Elliot,
Joseph Evelith,		Henry Herrick, Sen.

AND Dr. C. Mather who writ the forementioned Trials, has since declared it as his Opinion, that Things were carried too far ; as appears to him,

1. From the great Number of Persons accused.
2. From the Quality of the Persons accused, some of whom were Persons of blameless and holy Lives.
3. From the Number of the *Afflicted*, which encreas'd to about fifty. This ( says he ) gave just Ground to suspect some Mistake.
4. From the Execution of the Prisoners, not one of which confess'd their Guilt at their Death ; though several of them were Persons of good Knowledge, of sober Lives, and dyed in a serious, affecting Manner. And as for the Confessors ( says he ) we had no Experience whether they would abide by their Confessions when they came to dye ; they being all reprieved and pardoned.
5. Because when the Prosecutions ceased, the *Afflicted* grew presently well ; the *Accused* are generally quiet, and we have had no Disturbance since that Time for these five Years.



THE *Doëtor* adds further, that the Proceed-  
ings at *Salem* were owing to some mistaken Prin-  
ciples, as that Satan cannot assume the Shape of  
an innocent Person, and in that Shape do Mis-  
chief to the Bodies and Estates of Mankind ;  
that when he does Mischief to Persons in their  
Bodies or Estates, it is most commonly by the  
Instrumentality of our Neighbour, some Witch  
in Covenant with the Devil ; and that when the  
Party suspected looks upon the Parties supposed  
to be bewitched, and they thereupon fall into a  
Fit, it is a Proof of such a Covenant, &c. \*

THUS in about fifteen Months Time ended  
an Affair, which not only confounded the Minds  
of the good People of *New-England*, but struck  
all *Europe* with Surprize and Astonishment : Nay,  
the *Indians* themselves improved it to the Disad-  
vantage of the *Protestant* Religion, for one of  
the *French-Indians* in Conversation with Captain  
*Hill* at *Saco-Fort* told him, that the *French* Mi-  
nisters were certainly better than the *English* ; for  
before the *French* came among them, there were  
a great many Witches among the *Indians*, but  
now there were none ; and there were many  
Witches among the *English* Ministers, as *Bur-  
roughs*, who was hang'd for it. †

I have often wondred, that no publick Notice  
was ever taken either of the *Afflicted Persons* or  
*Confessing Witches* ; if the Agitations of the *Afflicted*  
were voluntary and artful, the Blood of the in-  
nocent certainly lay at their Door ; but if not,  
they should have been treated as Lunaticks, or  
as Persons who being possess'd by an evil Spirit  
had been the unhappy Instruments of taking a-  
way the Lives of their honest Neighbours. The  
*Confessing Witches* may possibly deserve a little

---

\* Mather, Book VI. p. 82. † Calef, p. 23.

*Ann*  
1693 more Compassion, if their Confessions were extorted by Violence, or arose from the pure Necessity of saving their Lives this Way, and no other (as I believe was the Case of most of them); but yet their bearing false Witness against their Neighbours, and dipping their Hands in their innocent Blood, ought not to have been pass'd over in Silence: If the Confessions of any were voluntary, and free from Restraint, as *Dr. Cotton Mather* says, *W—— B——*'s was, and many others; if they confirm'd them afterwards in cool Blood with very strong Circumstances, such as, relating the Times when they covenanted with the Devil, and the Reasons that moved them to it; their Mock-Sacraments, their signing the Devil's Book, and shewing the Place in their Bodies where they drew Blood to sign it with, &c. They ought at least to have been put to the Trial, whether they would have own'd their Confessions with their dying Breath; but Things were in such Confusion at this Time, that nothing of this Nature was attempted. There was a discontented Party in the State that clogg'd the Wheels of Sir *William Phips's* Government, and at length got him recalled: But before Sir *William* went for *England*, being willing to make all Parties easy, he publish'd a General Pardon, for which (says my Author) he received the Thanks, not only of his Country, but of the Queen of *England* herself.

*MR. Paris* indeed, in whose House this Tragedy began, and who had himself been a Witness, and a zealous Prosecutor of the *Accused*, felt the Effects of the People's Resentment some Time after; for his People not only withdrew from his Communion, but presented several Petitions and Remonstrances to the Magistrates and Ministers of *Boston* to obtain his Removal; they declared, " That *Mr. Paris's* believing the Devil's Accu-  
" sations,

“ fations, and readily departing from all Charity  
 “ to Persons of blameless Lives and Conversa-  
 “ tions upon such Suggestions; his promoting  
 “ Accusations, and his Partiality therein, stifling  
 “ some, and encouraging *others*; his going to  
 “ *Mary Walut*, and *Abigail Williams*, to know  
 “ who afflicted the People in their Illnesses, and  
 “ his taking an Oath, that the Prisoners by  
 “ their Looks knock’d down the pretended Suf-  
 “ ferers, though ’tis certain he knew nothing of  
 “ the Matter”, obliged them to refuse him for  
 their Minister; the Ministers of *Boston* did every  
 thing they could to make up the Difference, and  
 Mr. *Paris* himself in the Year 1694, made a  
 publick Acknowledgment of his Error, begging  
 Pardon both of God and Man; but the People  
 insisting, that they neither could, nor would sit  
 under the Ministry of a Man, who had been an  
 Instrument of the Misery and Ruin of so many  
 of their Relations and Friends, he was at last  
 removed.

Anno  
 1693  
 ~

---

\* Calef, p. 57, 63.



CHAP.

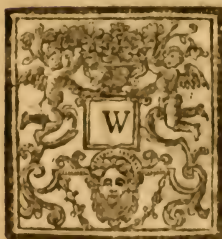




## C H A P. XIII.

*Sir William Phips recalled. His Death and Character. The War with the Indians renewed. Pemmaquid-Fort taken, and demolished. The Bravery of Mr. Dunstan and his Wife. The Death and Character of Simon Bradstreet, Esq;. The Earl of Bellamont arrives Governour, and concludes a Peace with the Indians.*

Anno  
1654



**W**HILE the Peace of *Pemmanquid* with the *Indians* continued, *Sir William Phips* did all that was in his Power to remove their Grievances, and bring them off from their Attachments to the *French*; for this Purpose he took a Journey into the *East*, in the midst of a very hard Winter, and sending for the several *Sachems*, made them Presents, and treated them with great Civility and Respect; he likewise opened a free Trade

Trade with them, and offered to leave *Nahauton* an *Indian* Preacher behind him to instruct them in the *Protestant* Religion. The *Indians* were well enough pleased with the Governour's Presents, and made him large Promises of Friendship, but shewed no great Inclination to his Religion, for the *French* Priests had been before-hand with him, and had not only proselyted the People to the *Roman-Catholick* Religion, but fill'd their Minds with the most inveterate Prejudices against the Religion of the *English*, by telling them, that they were *English* Men by whom our Saviour was Crucify'd; so that *Nahauton* could make no Converts: Nor were Sir *William's* Endeavours to separate them from the *French* Interest any more successful. If indeed he had distributed large Supplies of Ammunition among them, and engaged to support them effectually against the *French* for the future, they might possibly have changed Sides; but the Country was so far from being capable of this in the present Circumstances, that it was ready to sink under its own Weight; so that the Peace was like to be of no long Continuance.

NAY the Discontents of the People were at such a Height, that Sir *William* himself began to sit uneasy in his Government; they complain'd of the Charges of building and maintaining *Pemmaquid-Fort*, and were possess'd with the Belief, that their heavy Taxes and growing Poverty, which were the necessary Consequences of a long War, were owing to his Male-Administration: At last a Party sprung up, who made it their Business to render him odious to the People, and set him out not only as a weak, but a wicked Man: Nay, so resolutely bent were they upon his Ruin, that they drew up Articles of Impeachment against him, and sent them over to the King and Council, beseeching his Majesty, that he

*Anno*  
1694 he might be displaced from his Government, and a Committee appointed to hear Depositions against him for Male-Administration; but the King was too merciful a Prince to leave his Governour in the Hands of his Enemies. But to satisfy their Complaints he declared, that he would hear the Cause himself; and accordingly sent for Sir *William* and his Accusers to *White-Hall*; Sir *William* embark'd for *England*, *November* 17, 1694, having obtained an *Address* from the General Assembly, in Commendation of his faithful Services to his Country, and beseeching his Majesty, that they might not be deprived of the Happiness of such a Governour: When Sir *William* appeared at Court with this *Address* his Accusers vanished, and he had all imaginable Assurances given him of being restored to his Post, and of returning back in a few Weeks, with new Marks of the King's Favour, when on a sudden he was seized with a malignant Fever, which in a few Days put an End to his Life.

SIR *William Phips* was born of mean and obscure Parents at a small Plantation in the Eastern Parts of *New-England*, on the Banks of the River *Kennebeck*, *February* 2, 1650; his Father was a Gun-Smith, and left his Mother a Widow, with a large Family of small Children: *William* being one of the youngest, kept Sheep in the Wilderness 'till he was 18 Years of Age; and was then bound Apprentice to a Ship-Carpenter; when he was out of his Time he took to the Sea, and after several small Adventures, at last made his Fortune, by finding a *Spanish* Wreck near *Port de la Plata*; which got him a great deal of Reputation at the *English* Court, and introduced him into the Acquaintance of the greatest Men in the Nation: Though King *James II.* gave him the Honour of Knighthood, yet he always opposed



opposed his Arbitrary Measures, as appears by *Anno*  
 his refusing the Government of *New-England* 1694  
 when offered him, by a Messenger from  
 the Abdicated King, Sir *William* joyn'd heartily  
 in the Revolution, and used his Interest at the  
 Court of King *William* and Queen *Mary*, for ob-  
 taining a Charter for his Country, in Conjuncti-  
 on with the rest of the Agents, for which, and  
 his other great Services, they nominated him to  
 the King, as the most acceptable and deserving  
 Person they could think for their Governour. Sir  
*William* was no Scholar, nor a Person of deep  
 Penetration, but a perfectly honest, and good-  
 natur'd Man, a true Lover of his Country, and  
 one that endeavour'd to serve it to the best of  
 his Capacity. He was strictly virtuous himself,  
 and endeavour'd to promote the Practice of Vir-  
 tue in others; *Dr. Mather* says, that if he would  
 have connived at some Arbitrary Oppressions too  
 much used by some kind of Officers on the King's  
 Subjects, few or none of those Articles of Im-  
 peachment had been preferr'd against him; but  
 not being versed in the Arts of Government, he  
 lay open to the Intrigues of designing Men, who  
 envying his Greatness, made it their Business to  
 perplex his Affairs, and were never quiet 'till  
 they got him displaced; he had formed a Project  
 for supplying the Kingdom with Naval Stores  
 from the Eastern Parts of the *Massachuset-Colony*,  
 and was laying it before the King, when Death  
 put an End to all his Purposes by a malignant  
 Fever, which carried him off in a few Days at  
*London*, February 18, 1694-5, in the 45th Year  
 of his Age.

DEPUTY-GOVERNOUR *Stoughton* was now  
 the Chief Magistrate of the Province, a Gentle-  
 man, who had made himself popular, by en-  
 larging *Harvard-College* with an additional Build-

*Ann*  
1694 *ton-Hall.* ing, which he call'd after his own Name, *Stough-*  
 ~~~~~  
 stration of Affairs the War with the *Indians* broke out again; for the *French* having received a Supply of all Sorts of Warlike Stores from *Europe*, distributed them among the *Indians*, and obliged them to break the Peace with the *English*, within less than a Year after it had been made: Being push'd forwards by the Instigations of the *French*, and joyn'd with a Party of their Men, they fell upon *Oyster-River-Town*, *July 18*, by Break of Day, and killed, and took Prisoners, about 100 Persons, of whom 20 belonged to the Train'd-Bands of the Town. *Thomas Bickford* whose House was pallisado'd, by the River-Side, defended it alone against a Party of *Indians* that assaulted it, and thereby saved his Family and Effects, when others who surrender'd on Promise of Quarter were barbarously murder'd: *Saturday* following they killed *Mrs. Cutt* and three of her Servants at Work in her Farm, on the South-Side of *Piscataqua-River*: On the 27th about Break of Day, they assaulted *Groton*, but were repulsed by *Lieut. Lakin*, with the Loss of one of their Men; however, they plunder'd several of the Plantations thereabouts, killed 20 Persons, and carried about a Dozen more into Captivity; *Mr. Gershom Hobart* Minister of the Place made his Escape with Part of his Family, but the *Indians* took Possession of his House, killed one of his Children, and carried another into Captivity. *August 20*, they killed three Persons at Work in a Field at *Spruce-Creek*; the same Day they killed another at *York*, and carried a Lad into Captivity. On the 24th they killed and took eight Persons at *Kittery*; among whom was *Mr. Dowling's* Daughter, a Child of seven Years old, whom they used in a barbarous Manner, for after they had scalped her, they left her  
 to

to dye on the cold Ground, but she was found Anno  
1694  
 alive next Morning, and by the Use of proper  
 Medicines recover'd, and lived many Years after  
 tho' the Wound that was made in her Skull could  
 never be closed. *September 4*, Mr. *Joseph Pike* of  
*Newbury* Deputy-Sheriff of *Essex* travelling with  
 one *Long* between *Amesbury* and *Haverhill* in the  
 Execution of his Office fell into an Ambuscade  
 of the Enemy, and both he and his Companion  
 were murder'd. *November 19*, *Bomaseen* an *Indian*  
*Segamore*, who had signed the late Treaty, came  
 with two other *Indians* to *Pemmaquid*, pretending  
 to be just arrived from *Canada*, to concert proper  
 Measures for the putting a Stop to the Effusion  
 of more Blood; but it being known that he had  
 been a principal Actor in the late Excursions of  
 the *Indians*, he was look'd upon as a Spy, and  
 arrested by Capt. *March* Governour of the Place,  
 and sent Prisoner to *Boston*, where he was kept  
 under Confinement several Years.

THERE was an odd Event that happened at  
*Casco* about this Time, a Company of *Indians*  
 passing through the deserted Town, and discover-  
 ing some Horses in Capt. *Bracket's* Orchard; re-  
 solved to make a Feast of them; but some of  
 the young Men having a Mind first to a little  
 Diversion, drove one of them into a Pond, and  
 took it, and with the *Main* and *Tail* of the Ani-  
 mal, which they cut off, made a kind of a Halter  
 for him: A Son of the famous *Hegon* had a Mind  
 to mount the fiery Steed, but being a sorry  
 Horseman, ordered them to tye his Legs under  
 the Horse's Belly, but as soon as the Horse found  
 himself at Liberty, he ran full Speed with his  
 Rider into the Woods, and neither Horse nor  
 Man were ever seen any more; only a few Days  
 after, they found one of the Rider's Legs, which  
 they buried in Capt. *Bracket's* Cellar with great  
 Howlings and Lamentations.



*Anno* THE *New-Engliſh* Affairs were all this while  
*1695* miſerably embarrasſed, partly by a Faction who  
 ſet themſelves to traverſe all the Government's  
 Meaſures, and partly by the Diviſions occaſioned  
 by the late Executions of the pretended Witches;  
 for tho' *Sr William Philips* before his embarking for  
*England* had pardon'd all that were under Condem-  
 nation, yet the Diſcontents of the People ran ſo  
 very high, that they ſeemed more diſpoſed to a  
 Civil War, than to concert proper Meaſures a-  
 gainſt the common Enemy; the *Indians* however  
 lay pretty ſtill all the Winter, a contagious Diſ-  
 ſtemper having ſwept away great Multitudes of  
 them, nor did the *Engliſh* ſuſtain any greater  
 Loſs than of two Soldiers of the Garrifon of *Saco*,  
 who were ſurprized by a Party out of the Woods,  
 one of whom was killed, and the other taken  
 Priſoner.

*Anno* IN the Spring ſome new Propoſals were made  
*1696* for an Accommodation, by the Mediation of  
*Sheepscoat John*, once an *Indian* Convert, after-  
 wards a *Pagan*, and now a *Papiſt*; for on the  
 20th of *May* a Fleet of Canoes came to an Iſland  
 about a League from *Fort-Pemmaquid*, and ſent  
 to the *Engliſh* in that Garrifon Propoſals of  
 Peace: They owned their Guilt in breaking  
 the former Articles, but as a Pledge of their Sin-  
 cerity at this Time, they delivered up eight Cap-  
 tives, and promiſed to diſcharge all the reſt upon  
 ſigning the Peace. A Truce was therefore grant-  
 ed them for 30 Days, and Colonel *John Philips*,  
 Lieutenant Colonel *Hawthorn*, and Major *Convers*  
 were ſent to *Pemmaquid* to bring this Affair to a  
 Conclusion, but the Commiſſioners demanding a  
 Surrender of all the *Engliſh* Captives, according  
 to the former Articles of Peace, before they  
 would enter upon any new Propoſals, and not  
 having brought *Bommaſcen* with them from *Bo-*  
*ſton* to be exchanged, as they expected; the *In-*  
*dians*

*dians* broke off the Conference, and went away in Disgust. Anno  
1695  
~

ADVICE of this was immediately sent to all the Eastern Garrisons, that they might stand upon their Guard; notwithstanding which, Major *Hammond* of *Ketterly* fell into an Ambuscade, and was taken Prisoner, but the Major had the good Fortune to be transported to *Canada*, where he received extraordinary Civilities from the Governour Count *Frontenac*, who purchased him of his Tawny Master, and then generously sent him home to *Boston*, by a Vessel which came thither for Exchange of Prisoners. About the middle of *July* two Men were killed at *Exeter*. In *August* a Party of *Indians* came down to *Billerica* on Horse-back, plunder'd the House of one *Rogers*, and killed and took about 15 Persons Prisoners; this was the first Time that the *Indians* ever made Use of Horses any other Way than to eat them; about the same Time Serjeant *Haley* venturing a little Way out of his Fort at *Saco* was killed; *September* the 9th Serjeant *March* and three Men were killed, and six more wounded at *Pemmaquid*, as they were rowing a *Gondula* round an high rocky Point above the *Barbican*; *October* 7, a Party of *Indians* entred Mr. *Brown's* House at *Newbury*, and carried away nine People into Captivity, but being pursued by Captain *Greenleaf*, were forced to make their Escape over a River in the Night, and leave all their Prisoners behind them; 'twas a Wonder they had not buried their Hatchets in their Brains before they left them, but the Captain coming upon them in the Night every one was glad to shift for himself, and yet at parting, they beat them so unmercifully upon the Head with their Clubs, that they all dyed of their Wounds within a Year, except one, who was hurt only on the Shoulder.

Anno  
1695

TOWARDS the End of this Year Capt. *March* Governour of *Pemmaquid-Fort* desiring to lay down his Commission, was succeeded by Captain *Chub*, a Traitor to his Country, and a Man void of all true Courage and Honour; one of his first Exploits after taking Possession of the Fort was his murdering *Edgeremet*, and *Abenquid*, two of the principal *Segamores* of the *Indians*, with one or two of their Friends, who met him on the Faith of a Treaty; an Action so base, as no Gentleman, or Man of Honour could be guilty of; but the Reader will quickly observe something worse of him, for which he deserved to have been made an Example to Posterity: How this Fellow came to be prefer'd to this Post is a Mystery! but the Country was so divided within itself, that no Care was taken of the publick Safety; the General Assembly met, but made no Provision for the War; no Money was rais'd, no Soldiers list'd, nor any Enquiry made into the Condition of the Frontier-Garrisons; so that if the *French* and *Indians* had been in a Condition to have acted with Vigour, they might have ravaged the best Part of the Country, but they were out of Breath; for the *French* wanted a fresh Supply of Stores from *Europe*, and the *Indians* would do nothing without their Assistance; so that there was a Cessation of Action for several Months.

Anno  
1696

BUT the next Summer they acted with new Life; May 7, *John Church* of *Quochecho*, who had been a Prisoner seven Years before, and made his Escape, was retaken, and put to Death. June 24, *Thomas Coles* of *Wells* and his Wife were slain, as they were travelling home from *York*, where they had been making a Visit to some of their Friends. Two Days after, 14 Persons were killed near *Portsmouth*, and four taken Prisoners, among whom was an old Woman whom they



they scalp'd and left for dead, who yet recovered, and lived several Years after; *July 26*, as the People of *Quochecho* were coming from Church, a Party of *Indians* killed three, wounded three, and carried away three more Prisoners to *Penobscot*.

BUT the most fatal Blow that the *English* received this Year was the Loss of *Pemmaquid-Fort*, which happen'd after this Manner, the *French* having taken an *English* Man of War called the *Newport*, landed some Officers and Soldiers on the Banks of the River *Pemmaquid*, who being joyn'd by a Party of *Indians* over Land, summoned the Governour to surrender the Fort into their Hands, *Chub* was so frightened with seeing a Man of War in the River, and some *French* Men ashore with the *Indians*, that he thought it his best Way to secure himself and his Garrison by a Capitulation, and so basely surrender'd the Fort, without firing a Gun in its Defence, tho' he had 95 Men double-armed, and the *French* not furnished with any Materials to besiege the Place in Form; the Enemy immediately demolished the Fort, and then retired.

WHEN this Piece of News came to *Boston* the whole Province was alarmed, for they had now no Barrier left to hinder the Enemy's penetrating into the Heart of the Country. Deputy-Gov. *Stoughton* and his Council began therefore to think it necessary to take some effectual Measures to put a Stop to the Triumphs of the Enemy, and prevent their doing any further Mischief: Accordingly he fitted out 3 Men of War, and sent them out in Pursuit of the *French* Man of War, but meeting with contrary Winds they could never get Sight of it; Colonel *Gidney* was likewise sent by Land at the Head of 500 Men to secure the Frontiers, but the Enemy having done their Business were retired, so that the Colonel had nothing to do but to strengthen the

Anna  
1696  
~

remaining Garrisons, and return home; the Colonel by Order of the Lieutenant-Governour arrested *Chub*, and brought him up to *Boston*, where he was kept in Custody for some Time, but after several Examinations, nothing treasonable appearing against him, the Governour only took away his Commission, and sent him home to his House at *Andover*, where he lived about a Year, and was then killed with his Wife, and two or three other Persons in the Midst of a very hard Winter by a Party of *Indians*.

TOWARD the latter End of the Summer, the Governour dispatched Col. *Hawthorn* with some Soldiers and Frigates to joyn Major *Church*, who was ordered to attack *St. John's Fort*, the Place from whence the *Indians* received all their Supplies of Men and Ammunition from the *French*. It lyes upon a River between *Port-Royal* and the great River of *Canada*, by which (says *La Fontan*) the Inhabitants of those Places may hear from one another in 16 or 17 Days, which they can't do by Way of the Sea in a Month, nor then without Danger. But the Winter was so far advanced before the Col. arrived, that his Soldiers were ready to mutiny, for Fear of being shut in, with the Ice, which obliged the Major after he had summoned the Place, and made a few Shot at it, to return home.

THUS all the Projects of the *English* this Year miscarry'd, their Measures were broken, and nothing but Murmurings and Complaints were to be heard from one End of the Province to the other. The *Indians* on the other Hand were strangely exalted with their late Success, and threatned to ruin the whole Country next Summer: In the mean Time they posted themselves so advantageously, that it was hardly safe for the People on the Borders to stir out of their Houses; five Soldiers of the Garrison of *Saco* were surpriz'd  
and

and kill'd on the 13th of *October*, and single Persons, as they were at Work in the Fields without Number. And to crown the Calamities of the Year, there was a very great Scarcity of all Sorts of Grain in this, as well as in most other Countries of *Europe*, whereby the Poor were ready to mutiny for Want of Bread.

*Anno*  
1696  
~

IN the Winter the Enemy were pretty quiet, but upon the 15th of *March* they made a Descent upon the Skirts of *Haverhill*, burnt about half a Dozen Houses, and killed and took 39 Persons; among the Prisoners was one *Hannah Dunstan*, a Woman of a masculine Spirit, who had lain in about a Week, and was in her Bed with only her Nurse and eight small Children in the House, when the *Indians* surrounded it; her Husband was at Work in the Field, and seeing the Enemy at a Distance ran home, and bid 7 of his 8 Children get away as fast as they could to some Garrison in the Town; he then informed his Wife of her Danger, but before she could rise the Enemy were so near, that despairing to carry her off, he took his Horse and Arms, resolving to live or dye with his Children; he overtook them about 40 Rod from his House, and drove them before him, like a Flock of Sheep, as fast as their little Legs would carry them, 'till they got to a Place of Safety about a Mile or two from his House; the *Indians* pursued him all the while, but he kept in the Rear of his little Flock, and when any of them came within Reach of his Gun, he presented it at them, which made them retreat.

*Anno*  
1697

BUT his House in the mean Time was rifl'd, and burnt, his Wife, Nurse, and new-born Infant, with about ten or a Dozen of their Neighbours carried into Captivity; the *Indians* had not gone many Paces from the House before they dispatched the Child, dashing out its Brains against



*Anno* against a Tree, but Mrs. *Dunstan* and her Nurse  
*1697* travelled 12 Miles the first Night, and kept up  
 with their new Masters 'till they had travelled  
 150 Miles in a few Days; those that tired by the  
 Way had, according to Custom, the Hatchet bu-  
 ried in their Brains. The *Indian* Family that  
*Dunstan* and her Nurse were to serve consisted  
 of 12 Persons, two Men, three Women, and se-  
 ven Children, all *Roman-Catholick* Converts, who  
 said their Prayers according to the *French* In-  
 structions constantly three Times a Day; their  
 Master was tolerably civil to them, but resolved  
 notwithstanding to carry them to a Rendezvous  
 of *Savages* beyond *Penacook*, about two hundred  
 Miles from the Place where he lived, in or-  
 der to their running the Gauntlet through the  
 whole Army, which is the Discipline that all new  
 Prisoners undergo. The whole Family were to  
 have the Pleasure of this Sight, but as they were  
 on their Journey, on the 30th of *April*, a little  
 before Day-break, Mrs. *Dunstan* observing them all  
 in a profound Sleep, encouraged her Nurse, and an  
*English* Youth who had been taken from *Wor-*  
*cester* a Year and half before to stand by her,  
 and assist her in putting them all to Death; so  
 each of them furnishing themselves with a Hat-  
 chet, they struck it into the Brains of ten of them  
 in the dark, before they could make the least  
 Resistance; one of the Women and a Boy got  
 away, but they cut off the Scalps of the rest,  
 and brought them to *Boston*; for which heroick  
 Action they received a Reward of Fifty Pounds  
 from the General Assembly, besides several Presents  
 from private Hands to a considerable Value.

THE *Savages* continuing their Excursions,  
 killed one Man at *York*, another at *Hatfield*, a  
 third at *Groton*, and two or three more at *Exe-*  
*ter*, from whence they carried two Children into  
 Captivity; they also surprized and shot Major  
*Frost*

*Frost* and two of his Company as they were coming from Church at *Berwick* on a Lord's-Day to their own House which was about five Miles distant; and two others that were in Company having rid Post to the Garrison of *Wells* with the unwelcome News, as they were returning back, fell into an Ambuscade of the Enemy, and were killed. About the latter End of *June* they killed three Men at *Newichawanick* as they were mowing in the Meadows; A little after a Party of *Indians* killed a Man that stood Centinel for his Neighbours while they were at Work in the Marshes at *Wells*, and having taken another Prisoner, they carry'd him a Mile and a half off, and roasted him to Death. Three Soldiers of *Saco-Fort* as they were cutting Fire-Wood for the Use of the Fort on *Cow-Island* were shot dead on the Spot, while Lieutenant *Fletcher* with his two Sons who were appointed for their Guard were a fowling in the Woods, but the Lieutenant and his Sons paid dear for their Negligence, for as they were returning to their Companions they fell into an Ambush of the Enemy, and were all three taken Prisoners; one of the Sons afterwards made his Escape, but the other Son and his Father dyed in Captivity: These and several other Misfortunes befell the *English* while there were no Forces on the Frontiers, every Week producing some surprizing Disaster.

BUT the most important Action of the Summer is yet behind, the *French* King having a Squadron of Men of War at this Time in the Northern Parts of *America*, the Admiral agreed with the Governour of *Quebec* to make a Descent upon the Coast of *New-England*, while a Body of *Indians* and *French* should invade that Province by Land; Lieutenant Governour *Stoughton* having Notice of their Design did every thing

*Ann.*  
1697  
~ thing that a wise and prudent Governour could do for the Defence of his Country, he repaired the Forts about *Boston*, raised the Militia throughout the whole Province, and order'd them to be kept under strict Discipline ; and then sent Major *March* at the Head of 500 Men to the Eastern Frontiers to scour the Woods, and observe all the Enemy's Motions on that Side. Upon the Major's Arrival the *Indians* retired from the Frontiers, but he pursued them as far as *Casco-Bay*, having hired some Transports to accommodate his Men in their Passage thither; from *Casco* he sailed up further among the Eastern Islands, and landed *September 9.* on the Banks of *Dumascott-River*, near *Corbin-Sounds* a little before Day-break ; but before his Men were half ashore the Enemy came down upon them with a loud Huzza, and gave them a Volley, but without doing any Mischief; the Major fir'd upon them again in his Turn, and as soon as it was Day both Parties engaged ; the Commanders of the Transports came ashore to the Assistance of their Friends, and after a brisk Engagement of several Hours they drove the Enemy before them to their Canoes, which lay out of Sight, and saved them from being all cut in Pieces ; in this Action the *English* had 12 Men killed, and about as many more wounded : Among the former was Capt. *Dymmeck* of *Barnstable*, and among the latter Captain *Philips* of *Charles-Town*. This little Skirmish, though of no great Importance in itself, broke all the Enemy's Measures, and put a Stop to the intended Invasion of the *French* and *Indians*, as that did to the Descent of the Fleet upon the Coast, which being shatter'd by a Storm at Sea, and having Notice of the Defeat of their Confederate-*Indians*, and of the good Posture of the *English* in all Places to receive them, return'd to *Europe*, and gave them no further Disturbance.

WHILE



WHILE the Army was thus employed in the East a Party of the Enemy plunder'd the Town of *Lancaster*, September 11, and killed 20 Men, among whom was Mr. *Whiting* the Minister, and carried away five into Captivity; they likewise burnt several Houses with two or three ancient People in them, and then retired: After which they were no more heard of 'till the Month of *November*, when they killed a poor Man in the Woods near *Oyster-River*; which was the last Action of the Year.

ON the 27th of *March* this Year dyed *Simon Bradstreet*, Esq; sometime Governour of the Colony of the *Massachusetts*; and the longest Liver of all the first Planters of *New-England*; he was born at *Horblin* in *Lincoln-shire* in the Year 1603, and educated in *Emmanuel-College, Cambridge*, of which he was Fellow. Upon his leaving the University he became Steward first to the Earl of *Lincoln*, and afterwards to the Countess of *Warwick*, in which Noble Family he continued 'till he marry'd the Daughter of Mr. *Dudley*, by whose Perswasion he engaged in the Project of making a Settlement in *New-England*; he came over with the first Colony in the Year 1630, and served his Country first in Quality of Secretary, and then as Governour, 'till their Charter was taken from them; he was a good Man, but a little too warm in his Zeal against the *Anabaptists* and *Quakers*, as were almost all the Magistrates of *New-England* in those Times. After the Revolution in the Year 1689, he resum'd his Place of Governour again, by the unanimous Invitation of the People and continued in it 'till Sir *William Phips* came over with the new Charter. He was the Father of his Country, and it was observed of him, *That when he was almost 90 Years old his intellectual Force was hardly abated, but he retained a Vigour and Wisdom that would have recommended a younger Man*

Ann<sup>o</sup>  
1697  
W

Ann<sup>o</sup>  
1698

*Ann*  
1698 *Man to the Government of a greater Colony.* He dyed at *Salem* in the 95th Year of his Age; and was interred with as much Solemnity as a Man of his great Merit deserved.

THE next Winter was one of the hardest that has been known in the Memory of Man, and yet in the Month of *February* thirty *Indians* made a Descent upon *Andover*, and killed Capt. *Chub* and his Family; they had likewise taken Col. *Dudley Bradstreet* and his Family Prisoners, but being pursued they dismissed them without doing them any Mischief; but as they pass'd by *Haverhill* they killed two Persons, and took two Prisoners. At *Spruce-Creek* they murdered an old Man, and carried his three Sons into Captivity; the old Man was killed in cold Blood after he had surrender'd himself, by a huge Tawny seven Foot high; but the Vengeance of Heaven quickly overtook him; for an Hour or two after, as he was halling his Canoe to Shore with the Butt-End of his Musket, holding the Muzzle in his Hand, the Musket went off, and shot him dead upon the Spot. At *Hatfield* four *Indians* kill'd a Man and a Boy in the Meadows, and carried away two Boys into Captivity; Advice of which being sent to *Deerfield*, they sent out 12 Men to intercept them as they came up the River, who overtook them at 20 Miles Distance; the *Indians* were in their Canoes within a Rod or two of the opposite Shore; the *English* immediately fired at the Canoes, and wounded one of the *Indians* in the Back, whereupon they all jump'd ashore, and the Boys with them; the wounded *Savage* lay in great Misery, his Back being broke, endeavouring to tear open his Breast, and knock out his own Brains with his Hatchet; the two Boys run from their Masters to avoid the Fire of the *English*; whereupon one of the *Indians* took up his Hatchet with a Resolution to knock them

them on the Head, but as he was making towards them, an *English* Man from the other Side of the River levell'd his Piece at him, and shot him dead upon the Spot; the Boys upon this leap'd into one of the Canoes, and brought it over to their Friends, who mann'd it with five or six of their Number to fetch off the other Canoe which lay at an Island not far off, but as they were loosing it from the Shore, the two *Indians* that had deserted it, lying hid in some high Grass, shot at the Canoe, killed one of the *English* dead upon the Spot, and then run away into the Woods: This was the last Blood that was spilt in the present War.

THE News of the Peace concluded at *Ryswick* between the Kings of *England* and *France* arrived at *America* in *December* last; whereupon the *Sieur Frontenac* Governour of *Canada* summoned the Chiefs of the *Indians* together, and told them, he was now no longer at Liberty to support them in their War against the *English*, and therefore advised them to deliver up their Captives, and make the best Terms for themselves they could: Upon this a Treaty was set on Foot after some Time, Major *Convers* and Colonel *Philips* being appointed Commissioners on the Part of the *English*; the Major arrived at *Penobscott*, *October* 14, and after six Days, had a Conference with the chief *Sachems* of the East, who laid the Blame of their last Breach of the Peace on the *French* *Jesuits*, and added, that unless some of them were removed they could not promise that the present Peace would continue very long. They praised the *Sieur Frontenac* as a wise and prudent Governour; and declared their Resolution to obey him as their Father; but that they were willing likewise to live peaceably with the *English*, and *Segamore Saquadeck* desired, in the Name of the rest, that

if



Anno  
1698

if any ill Accident should happen between the two Nations we would not presently declare War against them, but endeavour to compose the Difference in an amicable Way.

SOME Time after, Col. *Philips* and Major *Convers* had another Conference with them, and brought them to renew their Subscription to the Articles of Peace formerly made with them in the Year 1693, with these Additions.

“ **A**ND whereas notwithstanding the afore-  
 “ said Submission and Agreement, the  
 “ said *Indians* belonging to the Rivers aforesaid,  
 “ or some of them through the ill Counsel and  
 “ Instigation of the *French*, have perpetrated sundry Hostilities against his Majesty’s Subjects  
 “ the *English*, and have not delivered and returned home several *English* Captives in their  
 “ Hands, as in the said Submission they covenanted.

“ WHEREFORE, we whose Names are here-  
 “ unto subscribed, *Segamores*, Captains, and principal Men of the *Indians* belonging to the Rivers of *Kennebeck*, *Ammonoscoggin*, *Saco*, and  
 “ Parts adjacent, being sensible of our great Offence and Folly in not complying with the  
 “ aforesaid Submission and Agreement, and also  
 “ of the Sufferings and Mischiefs that we have  
 “ hereby exposed ourselves unto, do in all humble  
 “ and most submissive Manner cast ourselves upon his Majesty’s Mercy for the Pardon of all  
 “ our Rebellions, Hostilities, and Violations of  
 “ our Promises, praying to be received into his  
 “ Majesty’s Grace and Protection, and, for, and  
 “ on Behalf of ourselves, and of all the other *Indians* belonging to the several Rivers and Places  
 “ aforesaid within the Sovereignty of his Majesty of *Great-Britain*, do again acknowledge  
 “ and profess our hearty and sincere Obedience  
 “ to the Crown of *England*, and do solemnly re-  
 “ new,

“ new, ratify, and confirm all and every of the  
 “ Articles and Agreements contain’d in the a- Anno  
1699  
 “ foresaid recited Commission. And in Testi-  
 “ mony hercof we the said Segamores, Captains,  
 “ and principal Men have hereunto set our  
 “ Marks and Seals at *Casco-Bay* near *Mares-*  
 “ *Point*, the 7th Day of *January*, in the tenth  
 “ Year of the Reign of his Majesty King *Wil-*  
 “ *liam* the Third, *Annoque Domini*, 1698-99.

*Subscribed by Moxus, and the  
 rest of the Segamores present.*

*In the Presence of James  
 Convers, Cyprian South-  
 ack, John Giles Interpreter,  
 & Scodook, alias Sampson.*

UPON the Settlement of Affairs in *Europe* his Majesty was pleas’d to appoint the Earl of *Bella-mont* Governour of the Plantations of *New-England* and *New-York*; the Earl went over in the *Deptford* Man of War, and after a tedious Passage arrived at *New-York* in the Month of *May*, 1698, and staid there the rest of the Year; next Spring he met the General Assembly of the *Massachusetts-Bay* at *Boston*, and opened it with an Excellent Speech in Praise of the Great Actions of the Immortal King *WILLIAM*; he recommended to the Assembly the repairing of their Fortifications, and furnishing them with Warlike Stores, the settling a free Trade with the *Indians*, and that the Laws they should pass be agreeable to the Laws of *England*. The Assembly presented an *Address* of Thanks to the Earl, for his most Excellent Speech, by their *Speaker*, as the Council did, by Lieutenant-Governour *Stoughton*; and the Sessions ended with a good Harmony and Agreement between all Parties: But whether the

*Anno* Governour did not like the People, or the Climate of *Boston*; notwithstanding all the Respects they could shew him, he return'd to *New-York* the latter End of the Summer, and made that City the Place of his Residence as long as he lived, continuing Mr. *Stoughton* in the Place of Lieutenant-Governour, to manage the Affairs of *New-England* in his Absence.

1699  
w

THUS after a long and expensive War, attended with the most threatening Commotions among themselves, the Affairs of the Country were settled on a solid Basis; Trade began to flourish, and the People rejoiced in the Blessings of Peace.



CHAP.





T H E  
*Present State of New-England.*

C H A P. XIV.

*A General Description of the Country. Of the Climate, Soil, and Product of it. A Description of the Town, and Harbour of Boston, with an Account of the most considerable Towns and Villages in the several Counties of New-England. Of the Inhabitants, their Number, their Religion, their Civil Government, their Customs, and Manners, their Trade, and Political Interests.*



EW-ENGLAND is that Part of the Continent of *America*, which lyes between the Degrees of 41 and 45 North Latitude. Under this Name is usually comprehended the Colonies of the *Massachusetts-Bay*, *New-Plimouth*, and *Connecticut*; the Provinces of *Main*, *New-Hampshire*, *Rhode-Island*, *Providence-Plantation*, and *Accadia*, or *New-Scotland*. It is

O o 2

bounded

bounded by *Canada* or *New-France* on the North, by *New-York* on the West, and by the Ocean on the South and East; its Length computed on a North-East and South-West Line from the River *Kennebeck* to the South-East Boundaries of *New-York* is about 330 Miles; and its Breadth on a South-East and North-West Line from *Cape Cod*, to the North-East Boundaries of *New-York* Government is 190 Miles, but in other Places 'tis not so broad. The Coast bears West-South-East, and East-North-East, and runs about 160 Leagues in Length, without reckoning the Angles.

THE Situation of this Country being nearer the Equinoctial Line than *England* by 8 or 10 Degrees, their Days and Nights are more equally divided; the Sun rises at *Boston*, *June* the 11th, at 4 and 26 Minutes in the Morning, and sets at 7 and 34 in the Evening: And *December* 13, the shortest Day in the Year, the Sun rises at 7 and 35 Minutes in the Morning, and sets at 4 and 27 in the Afternoon.

THE Climate of *New-England* is  
*The Climate.* not so temperate as ours in *England*, their Summers being shorter and hotter, and their Winters longer and colder; nor is it so mild and regular as those Parts of *Italy* and *France*, that lie in the same Parallel in *Europe*; which, as Naturalists have observed, is owing to those vast fresh-Water Lakes that lye behind it on the North-West side of the Country, which being constantly froze over in the Month of *November*, occasion that early Winter which is commonly felt in all the adjacent Country, and is one principal Cause of those cold North-West Winds that continually blow there in the Winter, and are so fatal to Mariners on the *New-England* Coast in that Season of the Year: 'Tis certain however that the Weather is more settled than in *England*, for it is common with them to have a clear and dry Sky for six  
 Weeks

Weeks or two Months together. In the Winter the Ground is for the most Part cover'd with Snow from *November*, to *February*, and in the Summer the Heats are so excessive in the Months of *June*, *July*, and *August*, that when a Fire has been accidentally made in the Woods, and not carefully put out, it has run like Wild-Fire, and burnt the Turf and Trees over several Acres of Ground, 'till Rain has fallen to extinguish it. In these Months the People are very much troubled with *Musketoës*, or little Flies like Gnats, *Bugs*, and other Insects that delight in Heat; but upon the whole, the Air of *New-England* is very healthy, and agrees with our *English* Constitutions. The Summers are not so hot but Men may endure the Heat, nor the Winters so cold, but with moderate Exercise they may bear the sharpest Air for a whole Day together.

WHEN the *English* first landed on the Coast the Country look'd like one vast *The Soil.* Wood, the *Indians* having only cleared here and there a small Spot of Ground for planting Corn; but upon a narrower Survey they found every three or four Miles a fruitful Valley, with a clear fresh Rivulet or Brook gliding through it, and these again were surrounded with vast woody Hills, which afforded a very agreeable Prospect. The Land from *De la Ware-Bay* to *Cape Cod* is low and flat, like the Shires of *Essex*, *Suffolk*, *Norfolk*, *Cambridge*, *Huntington* and *Lincolnshire*; but the North-East-Part of the Country is more hilly, resembling the Counties of *Hampshire*, *Dorsetshire*, *Devon*, and *Cornwall*; the inner Part of the Country is for the most Part Upland, but near the Coasts 'tis low and marshy. The Soil is generally fruitful, but in some Places more so, than in others; About the *Massachusetts-Bay* 'tis as flat and black as in any Part of *England*, and consequently as fruitful. The first Planters found the Grass in the Vallies above an Ell in Height; and consequently, pretty rank, for



want of cutting, but their Cattle eat it, and thrive very well with it. Mr. *Higginson* has a remarkable Story \* relating to the Fruitfulness of the Soil in the *Massachusetts-Bay*; “ Credible Persons have informed me, (says he) and the Party himself avouched the Truth of it to me, That of the setting 13 Gallons of Corn, he had 52 Hogsheads Increase, each Hogshead holding seven Bushels of *London Measure*; that he sold every Bushel to the *Indians* for so much Beaver, as was worth 18 Shillings: So that of 13 Gallons of Corn, which cost him 6 s. 8 d. he made about 327 l. in a Year’s Time.” But tho’ this might be true of some particular Spots of Ground, ’tis certain the Soil in general is not so fruitful, nor capable of producing such Crops of Corn, as the more Southern Plantations of *Carolina*, *Maryland*, and *New-York*. The Uplands more especially being for the most Part Gravel, sandy, or somewhat stronger, inclining to a Clay-Ground, can but little more than maintain themselves.

Lakes and Rivers. THERE are six great Lakes to the West and North-West of *New-England*, called *Ontariis*, *Erius*, *Hurons*, *Illinoecks*, *Nadoneffions*, and *Outolibis*, all which have a Communication with each other in the Order they are mentioned, and fall into the River of *Canada*, or *St. Lawrence*, making the Stream thereof very rapid; some of these Lakes are 100 Leagues long, and 30 broad. There are also six lesser Lakes of 10 or 20 Leagues in Length, as, *Champlain*, *St. Peter*, *Tabitibis*, *Piscotagamy*, *St. Jean*, and *Timagagring*, which likewise fall into *Canada-River*. There are some Rivers within the Limits of *New-England* that are navigable for several Leagues, and would be so much further, were it not for the Falls, as, *Piscataqua*, *Connecticut*, *Merri-*

---

\* *New-England Plantations* 1630. p. 4.

*mack*, and *Kennebeck-Rivers*, &c. which are stored with Plenty of very good Fish. There are likewise several fresh Springs, and small Rivulets that water the several Parts of the Country ; and where these are wanting, you may sink a Well, and find fresh Water within 10 or 12 Foot of the Surface of the Earth, in most Parts of *New-England*. Several Mines of Lead, Iron, and Copper have been lately discover'd, which, if encouraged, may turn to a very good Account, and enable the King of *England* to furnish his Subjects with those Mettals from his own Provinces.

*New-England* produces very good Timber ; the Woods and Swamps abound with \* Oak, Elm, Ash, Cypress, Pine, Chesnut, Walnut, Cedar, Aspin, Beech, Fir, Sassafras, and Sumach, with all other Sorts of Trees that grow in *England*. Their Fir and Deal is of an extraordinary Growth, for Masts, Yards, and Planks ; the Sumach is of Use to Dyers and Tanners ; the she-Cedar produces sweet Gums : But the Treasure and Glory of their Woods is the Monarch-Oak, the Spruce and Fir-Tree, which produce Pitch, Tar, Rosin, and Turpentine ; So that the Navy of *England* might be supplied from hence with all Sorts of Naval Stores, at a cheaper Rate than from the *Baltick* ; 'tis owing to this, that more Ships have been built in this Province, than in all the other Parts of *America* put together. The Dwarf-Oak grows wild here, and was sent hence into *England* to be cultivated. The Spruce and Fir-Trees yield a Gum, which hangs like Drops, or little Bladders on the Bark, of a very healing Nature, which in Smell and Taste very much resembles the Balm of *Gilead* ; these Excrecences are

*The Product  
of New-  
England.  
Trees.*

---

\* Wood's *New-England Prospect*, p. 12.

at first of a Consistence like Turpentine, but afterwards harden into a Gum. In short, *New-England* produces a prodigious Plenty of Wood for building and firing, and all other Uses of Life.

BESIDES, the Country abounds with *Fruit*. all Sorts of Roots for the Table, as Turnips, Parsnips, Carrots, Raddishes, &c. which are both larger and sweeter than in *England*, tho' their Seeds were originally carried thence; as also, those for Pompions, Musmelons, Cucumbers, and Onions, which abound here; but the Seed of the Water-Melons, and Squashes, which grow here in great Plenty, are supposed to be brought from *Portugal*, or some other Parts of *Europe*.

ALL Sorts of Herbs grew wild among the Grass, when the Planters first took Possession of the Country, as, Penny-Royal, Winter-Savory, Sorrel, Brook-Lime, Liver-Wort, Charvil and Water-Cresses; also Leaks, and divers Sorts of Physical Herbs; besides a vast Variety of Fruit, as Grapes, Strawberries, Raspberries, Currans, Chesnuts, Filberds, Walnuts, Small-Nuts, Hurtle-Berries, and Hawes of White-Horn, as big as *English* Cherries, which grew all over the Woods, and without all Question are since very much improved.

'Tis generally observed, that all Sorts of Orchard-Fruit, as Apples, Pears, Plumbs, Cherries, Peaches, &c. in *New-England* far exceed the same Kinds in *England* for Beauty, Largeness, and Sweetness, tho' carried originally from thence, excepting such Fruit only as has the Advantage of a Wall; there are indeed several Sorts of Fruit in *England*, which are not to be found in *New-England*, but they are continually sending for them over, so that every Year produces new Improvements.

THERE is a great Variety of Plants in *Plants*. this Country differing from the *Europeans*, of which Dr. C. Mather has long since promised the World a Catalogue and Description: In the



the mean Time he has given the Royal Society a Specimen of some of them ; he informs them of a Plant efficacious in curing Inflammations, called *Antierisypelas*, of another, called *Partridge-Berries*, excellent in curing the Dropsy ; of a Root called the *Bleeding-Root*, which cures the Jaundice ; of a Thistle called the *Boar-Thistle*, very short and prickly, with a large and long Root ; which with a Decoction of a Root called the *Cancer-Root*, and a Sort of *Devil's-Bit*, cures the King's-Evil, tho' very far gone, a small Quantity being drank every Day, and the bruised Roots applied to the scrophulous Tumour. But of these *American* Plants the Dr. promises a larger Crop. †

THE *Indian* Corn being that which is mostly planted in this Coun- *Indian Corn.* try, it will not be improper to describe the Culture of it, as we find it communicated to the Royal Society by Mr. *Winthrop*.

\* “ THE Natives call it *Weachin*, and in some  
 “ Southern Parts of *America* 'tis known by the  
 “ the Name of *Mais*, or *Maize*. The Ear is a  
 “ Span long, composed of eight Rows of Grain,  
 “ or more, according to the Goodness of the  
 “ Ground, about thirty Grains in a Row ; 'tis of  
 “ various Colours, as red, white, yellow, blew,  
 “ olive, greenish, black, speckled, strip'd, &c.  
 “ sometimes in the same Field, and in the same  
 “ Ear, but the white and yellow are the most  
 “ common ; the Ear is defended from the Cold  
 “ and Storms by strong, thick Husks ; the Stalk  
 “ grows six or eight Foot high ; that of *New-En-*  
 “ gland is not quite so tall as that of *Virginia*,  
 “ and at *Canada* 'tis shorter than at *New-England* ;

---

† *Philosophical Transactions* Vol. XXIX. p. 63.

‡ *Lowthorp's Abridgment, Philosophical Transactions*, Vol II. p. 630.

“ ’tis jointed like a Cane, is full of sweet Juice  
“ like the Sugar-Cane, and a Syrup as sweet as  
“ Sugar may be made out of it, as has been often  
“ tried : At every Joint there are long Leaves or  
“ Flags, and at the Top a Branch of Flowers like  
“ Rye-Blossom. ’Tis generally planted from the  
“ middle of *April* to the middle of *May*. In the  
“ Northern Parts the *Mohawk*-Corn is not planted  
“ ’till *June*, and yet is ripe in Season ; the Stalks  
“ of this Sort are short, the Ears near the Bottom,  
“ and are of several Colours. The Manner of  
“ planting Maize is in Rows at equal Distances  
“ every Way of about five or six Feet ; the Earth is  
“ open’d with a Hough four Inches deep, and four  
“ or five Grains are thrown into it, at a little Di-  
“ stance from one another in the Breadth of a  
“ Hough ; then they are covered with Earth : If  
“ two grow the Crop will answer. The Corn is  
“ weeded at a Hand’s Length, and the Earth is  
“ loosned about it with a Hough ; this Labour must  
“ be repeated as the Weeds come up ; when the  
“ Stalk begins to grow high, a little Earth should  
“ be drawn about it, and on putting forth the Ear  
“ so much as to make a little Hill like a Hop-Hill.  
“ ’Tis ripe about the Middle of *September* ; it must  
“ be stripp’d as soon as gather’d, unless ’tis laid  
“ thin to prevent its growing mouldy, or sprout-  
“ ing ; the common Way is to weave, or brede  
“ the Ear together in long Traces, by some Part  
“ of the Husk left thereon, which is called Tracing :  
“ These Traces are hung upon Bearers within  
“ Doers, and will keep so all Winter good and  
“ sweet ; the *Indians* thresh it as they gather it,  
“ dry it well on Matts in the Sun, and bury it in  
“ Holes in the Ground lined with Moss or Matts  
“ which are their Barns. The *English*, of late, plant  
“ it with the Help of the Plough ; they turn up  
“ single Furrows six Foot Distance, then plough  
“ a-cross at the same Distance, throw in the Corn  
“ where

“ where these meet, and cover it with a Hough, or  
“ run another Furrow over it with the Plough.

“ THE *Indians* boil it 'till it becomes tender,  
“ and eat it with Fish, or Venison, instead of  
“ Bread ; sometimes they bruise it in Mortars, and  
“ so boil it. The most usual Way is to parch it  
“ in Ashes, stirring it so artificially, as to be very  
“ tender without burning; this they sift and beat  
“ in Mortars into fine Meal, which they eat dry,  
“ or mix'd with Water, and call *Necake*. The *En-*  
“ *glish* mix it into a very soft Paste, and make  
“ Bread of it, which they bake all Night, or all  
“ Day. The best Sort of Food that is made of it  
“ is called *Samp* ; to make it, the Corn is watered  
“ half an Hour, beat in a Mortar to the Bigness  
“ of Rice, sifted, boil'd, and then eat with Milk,  
“ or Butter and Sugar, which is a very pleasant,  
“ wholesome Diet ; this was the most usual Diet  
“ of the first Planters, and is still in Use among  
“ them, as well in Fevers, as in Health.

“ THE *English* have also made good Beer of it,  
“ by Malting it, or making it into Bread ; when  
“ they Malt it, it must chill both Ways, Root and  
“ Blade ; to do which, they heap it up at a conve-  
“ nient Time, then take away the Top of the Earth  
“ in a Garden-Field two or three Inches deep, after  
“ which they cover the Ground with the Corn, and  
“ the Corn with the Earth ; when the Plat is green  
“ all over with the Corn-Sprouts, which will be in  
“ about ten Days, it must be taken up, the Earth  
“ shaken from it, and dried, then wash'd, and dry'd  
“ again in a Kiln : This makes the Malt, and that  
“ Beer, which will be pleasant, wholesome, and of  
“ a brown Colour. The Beer made of Bread is  
“ more durable, and altogether as pleasant : To  
“ do it, they cut the Bread into great Lumps as  
“ big as a Man's Fist, mash, and-manage it as  
“ they do Malt, adding, or omitting Hops, as is  
“ desired.



BEANS of all kinds grow in *New-England* Beans. but the greatest Plenty is of the Kidney-kind; but neither these nor the *Indian* Corn grow wild now, tho' both were found among the Natives when the *English* first went thither. The *Indians* have a Tradition, that a Crow brought the first Bean, and a Black-Bird the first Grain of *Indian* Corn into those Parts; for which Reason these Birds are accounted sacred by them, tho' they are so mischievous, that the *English* contrive all Ways they can think of to destroy them.

THERE is no Country almost where Fowls. there is greater Variety of Fowl, both wild and tame, than in *New-England*; as, Brants, Partridges, Turkeys, Ducks, Geese, Herons, Storks, Heathcocks, Cormorants, Swans, Widgeons, Doppers, Black-Birds, and Barn-Door Poultry. Dr. C. Mather says, they have wild Turkeys of 50 or 60 Pound Weight, and vast Flights of Pigeons, which come and depart at certain Seasons of the Year. \*

MR. Josselyn adds, That he has seen a Flight of Pigeons in the Spring, and at *Michaelmas*, when they return to the Southward, that has reached four or five Miles in Length, and darkned the very Sun; but of late they are very much diminished. †

THERE is no less Plenty of all Sorts of *European* Cattle, as Cows, Sheep, Goats, Hogs and Horses; the latter are generally of a small Breed, not much larger than our *Welsh* Horses, but very serviceable; many of them are exported to *Barbadoes*, and the *Leward-Islands* for Saddle-Horses, and some for Draught.

---

\* *Philosophica Transactions* Vol. xxix. p. 64. † p. 99.

THE Beasts of the Country are Bears,  
 \* Lufetans or Ounces, Foxes, Squunks, *Beasts.*  
 Ferrets, and Wolves, which are a Species  
 of wild Dogs, like our ordinary Curs in *England*;  
 the *Indians* tame them when they are young, but  
 they make a hideous Yelling against rainy Weather;  
 besides these, there are Elks, *Deer*, Hares, Rab-  
 bits, Beavers, Otters, Minks, *Rackoons*, Musquash,  
 Sables, &c. The first Planters carried on a profit-  
 able Trade with the *Indians* for the Skins of these  
 Animals, but 'tis now mightily decreased, by the  
 Disuse of Beaver, and other Skins of the Fell-  
 Mongers Manufacture. But the most valuable and  
 wonderful Animal of *New-England* is the *Moose*,  
 which Mr. *Josselyn* says is about 12 Foot high,  
 with fair Horns, and broad Palms; his Body is a-  
 bout the Bigness of a Bull's, his Neck resembles a  
 Stag's, his fore-Legs are longer than his hind, his  
 † Flesh is of a coarse, big Grain, and eats like  
 Beef; it commonly brings three Calves at a Fall,  
 and timelier than our *English* Deer by two Months.  
 The Time of hunting this Animal is the Winter,  
 when they run him down sometimes in half a Day,  
 but they are most commonly a whole Day about  
 it; the Ground being then generally cover'd with  
 Snow, the Beast sinks very heavy every Step he takes:  
 when the Sports-Men get up with him they shoot  
 at him, and he walks slowly after he is wounded, 'till  
 spent with Loss of Blood, he falls like a ruined  
 Building, making the Earth shake under him.

WHEN the *English* first took Posses-  
 sion of the Country it abounded with *Viperous*  
 great Numbers of venomous Animals *Animals.*  
 and Vermin, as is common in Wilder-  
 nesses and Places over-grown with Woods; but

---

\* *Relations of Two Voyages to New-England by Mr. Josselyn, Gent.*  
 London, 1674, p. 82. where the Reader will find a Description of the  
 several Beasts, &c. here mentioned.

† Lowther's *Philosophical Transactions*, Vol. II. p. 437.

the Ground being now pretty well cleared, those Animals are seldom seen: The most noted and dangerous is the *Rattle-Snake*, which is four or five Foot long, and has a Rattle consisting of about 20 loose Rings in its Tail, with which it makes a Noise for Assistance, when it apprehends itself in Danger; so that they who attack one, must have a Care that they are not bit by another at the same Time. These Rattle-Snakes are not so much afraid of a Man, as others of the same Species; their Venome is said to lye in a Bag in the Hollow of a forked Tooth, which breaks when they bite, and infuses so much Poyson into the Wound as proves mortal in a few Hours, if not remedied. They are slow in their Motion, and curling their Bodies up with their Heads in the middle, throw themselves out at Length when they bite the Object of their Indignation.

THE Black-Snake is much longer and swifter of Motion, 'tis of an amphibious Kind, not so venomous as the Rattle-Snake, but more so, than the common Grass-Snakes of several Colours.

THERE are still vast Numbers of Frogs, Toads, Owls, Batts, and other Vermin upon the Borders of the uncleared Part of the Country, which make such a hideous Noise on Summer-Evenings, as would terrify those that are not us'd to it. You may hear it at several Miles Distance, as plainly as if it was within a Quarter of a Mile. In the Midst of this Noise is often heard a Bird that seldom or never sings, but in the Night, called, *Whip poor Will*, because it seems to chime those Words in a loud melancholy Tone.

THE Sea-Coast, as well as the several *Fish*. Rivers of *New-England* afford a vast Variety of excellent Fish both for Food and Traffick, as Cod, Salmon, Sturgeon, Thornback, Porpus, Haddocks, Herrings, Mackerell, Oysters, Muscles, Smelts, Eels, Lampries, Sharks, Seals, Crampus



Crampus, Whales, &c. As for Cod, the Fishing-Voyages made yearly from *England* for this Purpose sufficiently prove their Plenty; besides, the Bays and Creeks are full of Lobsters, Scallops, Crabs, Cockles, Praunes; and the Sea is always full of Fish on the Coasts of *New-England* both in fair Weather and foul, but the best Months for Fishing, are *March, April, May, and June*; 6 or 7 *Starfish* were formerly taken near the Shore off of † *Nantucket*, of which Mr. *Winthrop* Governour of *Connecticut-Colony* gave the Royal Society an Account; he observes, that this Fish divides itself into no less than 81920 small Parts, by Branchings, and is one of the most wonderful Works of the Creation.

SOME Years since there stranded on the Coasts of *New-England* a dead Whale of the Sort which they call *Trumpo*, having Teeth like those of a Mill, its Mouth at a good Distance from, and under the Nose or Trunk; and several Partitions in the Nose, out of which ran a thin oily Substance which candied; the Remainder being a thick fat Substance was scraped out, and is said to be the *Sperma Ceti*. These Whales are to be met with betwen *New-England* and *New-York*, where they might be caught 8 or 9 Months in the Year; but the Whale-Fishery of *New-England* is now very much neglected, the *Newfound-land-Trade* having in a Manner engrossed it; but still there are vast Quantities of all sorts of Fish taken on the Coast, salted, and sent to the several Parts of *Europe*, and the Sugar-Plantations for the Subsistence of their white Servants and Negroes.

HAVING thus survey'd the Country in general, it will be proper to go through the several Counties, and observe the most remarkable Things in them.

---

† *Ibid.* p. 833.

General Division  
of the Country.

THE Reader has observed in the Course of this History, that besides the lesser Settlements of *New-Hampshire* and *Rhode-Island*, there were four grand Colonies in *New-England*, namely, *Plimouth-Colony*, the *Massachuset-Bay*, *Connecticut*, and *New-Haven*; which had their distinct Charters from the Crown, to encourage their Settlement in a barbarous Country; but in the Reign of King *James II.* their Charters were vacated by a *Quo Warranto* under various Pretences, which sufficed to justify the doing it at that Time; the *Plimouth* and *Massachuset-Colonies* being the largest, and most considerable, were the first that felt this arbitrary Invasion of their Privileges, but the rest of the Colonies in Effect underwent the same Fate, for they were all put into one Commission by King *James II.* under the Government of Sir *Edmond Andross*, but the Process against some of their Charters not having been executed in Form before the happy Revolution; the lesser Colonies of *Connecticut* and *Rhode-Island* resumed their ancient Government; while those of *Plimouth* and the *Massachusetts* humbly apply'd to King *William* and Queen *Mary*, for the Restoration of theirs; but their Majesties were pleas'd in the Year 1692, by a new Charter to unite the two Governments into one, by the Name of the *Province of the Massachuset-Bay*, for the better Support of the Dignity of the Government.

THE Province of the *Massachuset-Bay* contains besides its ancient Limits, the whole Jurisdiction of *Plimouth*, the Province of *Main*, and the Territory of *Accadia*, or *Nova Scotia*; in the *Plimouth* Division there are three Counties, *Plimouth*, *Barnstable*, and *Bristol*; in the ancient *Massachuset-Division* four, *Suffolk*, *Middlesex*, *Essex* and *Hampshire*.

THE United Colonies of *Connecticut* and *New-Haven*, are a distinct Government, by virtue of a Charter granted them by King *Charles II.* 1664,  
and

and contain four Counties, *Hartford*, *New-London*, *New-Haven*, and *Fairfield*.

*New-Hampshire*-Government has no Charter, their Governour and Council being appointed by the Crown of *England*, but their Governour is always the same with the *Massachusetts*: Within the Limits of this Province is the County of *Main*, which belongs to the *Massachusetts-Bay*, and sends Members to the General Assembly.

*Rhode-Island* and *Providence-Plantation* are likewise a distinct Government, but are always reckon'd a Part of *New-England*.

THE most Northern Territory that belongs to *New-England* is *Nova Scotia*, in which the only considerable Place is *Annapolis Royal*, formerly known by the Name of *Port-Royal*; 'tis but a small Town, with a few Houses of two Stories high, but has a very fine Basin two Leagues long, and one broad, capable of receiving a Thousand Sail of Ships; at the Entrance of the Basin there is 16 or 18 Fathom Water on one Side, and 6 or 7 on the other, the Channel being divided by the Isle of *Chevres*, which stands in the middle; there's excellent Anchorage all over the Basin, and at the Bottom lies a Point of Land which parts two Rivers where the Tide rises 10 or 12 Foot, and on each Side are pleasant Meadows. The Place subsist by the Traffick of Skins, which the Savages bring down in Exchange for *European* Goods; Col. *Nicholson* had the Honour to take it from the *French* by Capitulation, *October* 5, 1710, and by the Treaty of *Utrecht* it was yielded with the rest of *Nova Scotia* to the *British* Crown for ever. 'Tis a good Barrier to *New-England*, not only as it puts the *French* at a greater Distance from them, but as it will prevent in a great Measure their assisting the *Eastern Indians* in Time of War.

THE Isle of *Cape Breton* was formerly reckoned a Part of *Nova Scotia* being included in K. *James*



the *First's* Patent; and the Queen, by her Instructions to the Duke of *Shrewsbury*, demanded it as such in the late Treaty of *Utrecht*, but it was basely yielded up to the *French* by the 13th Article of that Treaty, though it be a Place of the last Importance to our *English* Settlements, not only as it commands the Entrance into *St. Lawrence's-Bay*, and by Consequence covers all *French Canada*, but as the *French* may from hence disturb our *Newfoundland-Fishery* whensoever they please.

THE next Province is *New-Hampshire*, which is bounded by *Kennebeck-River* on the East, and *Merrimack-River* on the West; without the Limits of this Province to the Eastward formerly stood *William* and *Henry-Fort* on the Banks of *Pembaquid-River* about 40 Rod from High-Water Mark; it was built by Sir *William Phips* in the Heart of the Enemy's Country, and was the best Fortification in the *English America*, but in the Year 1696 it was betrayed into the Hands of the *French*, and demolished; the River on which it stood runs 40 or 50 Miles up into the Country.

THE most considerable Towns in *New-Hampshire* are,

|                    |  |                   |
|--------------------|--|-------------------|
| <i>Dover,</i>      |  | <i>Exeter</i> and |
| <i>Portsmouth,</i> |  | <i>Hampton.</i>   |

IN the midst of this Province is the County of *Main*, which as I observ'd before, belongs to the *Massachusetts*, and contains the following considerable Towns; those with this (\*) Mark before them send Members to the General Assembly at *Boston*.

|                            |  |                              |
|----------------------------|--|------------------------------|
| * <i>Falmouth,</i>         |  | * <i>York,</i>               |
| <i>Scarborough,</i>        |  | * <i>Kittery,</i>            |
| * <i>Wells,</i>            |  | * <i>Berwick,</i>            |
| <i>Hedec or Newcastle,</i> |  | The Isles of <i>Shoales,</i> |
| * <i>Edgar-Town.</i>       |  | * <i>Biddisford.</i>         |

MOST of these Towns have some small Fortifications to prevent the Incursions of the Eastern *Indians* who might otherwise over-run the Country in 24 Hours. Six Miles to the East of *Saco*, or *Scarborough* is the Town of *Black-Point*, Eastward of which are the Towns of *Kennebeck* and *Sagadehock*, in all which Places there are Stages for Fishermen : On the Banks of the River *Saco* was a little Fort mounted with 10 or 12 Guns, built in the last War to keep the Eastern *Indians* in Awe. In the Town of *Wells* were above 100 Families before the breaking out of the said War, but before the End of it the Town was in a Manner depopulated.

THERE are several fine Rivers in this County, as the Rivers of *Kennebeck*, *Sagadehock*, *Casco*, *Saco*, or *Spurnwinck*, *Kennehunk*, *York*, and *Piscataqua*; some of which are navigable for several Leagues up the Country; there are likewise several good Harbours in it, as *Cape-Portus*, *Winter-Harbour*, *Piscataqua*, and *Casco-Bay*; and several Islands on the Coast, some of which are 10 Miles in Length; the In-land Part of the Country is high and mountainous, and consequently barren, but upon the Coast and by the River's Side 'tis tolerably fruitful; the chief Trade of the Inhabitants is in Beaver, Lumber, and Fish.

THE inferior Court of Common Pleas is held at *Portsmouth*, the first *Thursdays* in *March*, *June*, *September*, and *December*, the superior Court the second *Tuesdays* in *February* and *August*.

SOUTHWARD of *New-Hampshire* is the Province of the *Massachuset-Bay*, which receives its Name from the *Indian* Nation that inhabited those Parts before the *English* took Possession of the Country; it was customary among the Savages to give Names to their little Nations or Clans, from some remarkable Hill, River, or Spring about which they lived, but whether this Name had its

Origin from the *Massachusset-River* now called *Charles-River*, or from a high Hill called *Beacon-Hill*, on the South-West Side of the *Peninsula* on which *Boston* stands is not absolutely certain, tho' the latter seems more probable, from the Account I have received from a learned Gentleman of *Boston*, whose Words are these; "The Sachem or  
 "Segamore, who governed the *Indians* in this Part  
 "of the Country, when the *English* came first hither, had his Seat on a small Hill or Upland,  
 "containing perhaps an Acre and half, about two  
 "Leagues to the Southward of *Boston*, fronting  
 "Mount Bay, and back'd with a large Tract of  
 "Salt Meadow; which Hill or *Hummoth* is now in  
 "Possession of Capt. *John Billings*, and lies in the  
 "Shape of an *Indian Arrow's Head*, which Arrow-  
 "Heads were called in their Language *Mos*; or  
 "Mons, with an *O Nasal*, and a Hill in their  
 "Language is *Wauset*, pronounced according to  
 "us *Wechuset*; hence this great Sachem's Seat was  
 "called *Moswetuset*, which signifies a Hill in the  
 "shape of an Arrow's Head, and his Subjects  
 "the *Moswetuset-Indians*, from whence with a small  
 "Variation of the Word, the Province received  
 "the Name of *Massachusset*.

THE Boundaries of this Province are *Merrimack-River* on the North, the Ocean on the East and South; and the Provinces of *Connecticut* and *New-York* on the West.

THE most Northern County is *Essex*, which contains the following Towns, those with this (\*) Mark before them send Members to the General Assembly.

|              |  |              |
|--------------|--|--------------|
| * Amesbury,  |  | * Boxford,   |
| * Salisbury, |  | * Rowley,    |
| * Haverhill, |  | ** Ipswich,  |
| ** Newbury,  |  | * Topsfield, |



|                      |  |                      |
|----------------------|--|----------------------|
| * <i>Bradford,</i>   |  | * <i>Marblehead,</i> |
| * <i>Glocester,</i>  |  | * <i>Lyn,</i>        |
| * <i>Manchester,</i> |  | * <i>Wenham,</i>     |
| * <i>Beverly,</i>    |  | * <i>Andover.</i>    |
| ** <i>Salem,</i>     |  |                      |

THE chief Town in this County is *Salem*, where is one of the finest built Churches in the Country ; 'tis situate on a Plain between two Rivers, and has two Harbours, Winter-Harbour and Summer-Harbour ; here the Planters of the *Massachusetts-Colony* made their first Settlement ; the inferiour Court is kept here the last *Tuesdays* in *June* and *December* ; and the superior, the second *Tuesday* in *November*. Northward of *Salem* is the high Promontory *Trabigzanda*, now called *Cape Anne*, a Place of Fishing, and a Harbour for Ships. A little higher is *Ipswich*, a large Town situate by the Side of a fine River ; the inferiour Court is kept here the last *Tuesday* in *March*, and the superior the third *Tuesday* in *May*. At the Mouth of the River *Merrimack*, *Newbury* is pleasantly situated, where Abundance of Sturgeon are taken and pickled after the Manner used in the *Baltick* ; the Society for propagating the Gospel after the Manner of the Church of *England* have a Missionary here, to whom they allow 60 *l.* a Year. Over-against *Newbury* on the other Side of *Merrimack-River* lyes *Salisbury*, where there is a Ferry, the River between the two Towns being half a Mile broad.

FOUR Miles Southward of *Salem* is *Marblehead*, where there is a small Harbour, and a rocky Shore ; the Society for propagating the Gospel after the Manner of the Church of *England*, have a Missionary here, to whom they allow 50 *l.* a Year ; Southward of *Marblehead* is the Town of *Lyn* situate in the Bottom of a Bay near a River, which on the breaking up of the Winter empties itself with a rapid Torrent into the Sea.

THE Soil of this County is not very fertile, except it be near the Coast, where the most considerable Towns are built for the Convenience of Fishery; 'tis watered on the North-East by the great River *Merrimack*, which were it not barr'd in some Places would be navigable for a great many Leagues; a little above one of the Falls of this River at a Place called *Ammuskeag*, is a huge Rock in the midst of the Stream, on the Top of which are a great Number of Pits made exactly round like Barrels or Hogsheds of different Capacities, some of which are capable of holding several Tons; the Natives \* know nothing of the making them, but the neighbouring *Indians* used to hide their Provisions here in their Wars with the *Maquas*, affirming that God had cut them out for that Purpose, but they seem plainly to be artificial.

THE next County is *Middlesex*, in which are the following Towns.

*Middlesex - County.*

|                        |                          |
|------------------------|--------------------------|
| * <i>Billerica,</i>    | * <i>Medford,</i>        |
| * <i>Cambridge,</i>    | * <i>Newton,</i>         |
| * <i>Charles-Town,</i> | * <i>Oxford,</i>         |
| * <i>Chelmsford,</i>   | * <i>Reading,</i>        |
| * <i>Concord,</i>      | * <i>Sherburn,</i>       |
| * <i>Lexington,</i>    | * <i>Stow,</i>           |
| * <i>Groton,</i>       | * <i>Sudbury,</i>        |
| * <i>Lancaster,</i>    | * <i>East Watertown,</i> |
| * <i>Marlborough,</i>  | * <i>Weston,</i>         |
| * <i>Malden,</i>       | * <i>Woburn,</i>         |
| * <i>Frammingham,</i>  | * <i>Worcester.</i>      |

THE chief Town of this County is *Cambridge*, at first called *New Town*, situated on the Northern Branch of *Charles-River*. There are several fine Streets, and good Houses in it, besides a flourishing Academy, consisting of two spacious Colleges

\* *Philosophical Transactions* Vol. xxix. p. 70.

built of Brick, called by the Names of *Harvard-College*, and *Stoughton-Hall*, which are both under the Government of one President, five Fellows, and a Treasurer; the learned and ingenious Mr. *John Leverett*, Grandson of the famous Governour *Leverett*, is now President of this Seminary, and is a Gentleman every Way equal to the Post he has the Honour to fill; the Academy is at present in a very flourishing Condition, being encreased within these last 30 Years from 40 to more than 120 Resident Students, insomuch that they have built this Year an additional Hall to the two former; 'tis a double Building with a double Front like the first College, which it faces, and is three Stories high, besides the Roof.

I have given a particular Account of the Foundation of this University, and of the Publick Library under the Year 1637, and shall therefore refer the Reader back to it; having only these two Things to add, That they still want Endowments for the reading of Publick Lectures in the College by Professors of the several Sciences, after the Manner of the Universities of *Europe*; and that their Library is very defective in modern Authors, which may be one Reason why the Stile and Manner of the *New-England* Writers does not equal that of the *Europeans*: I would therefore recommend it to the Gentlemen of Estates in *New-England* who owe their Education to this College; and to all generous Lovers of Learning in these Parts of the World, to endeavour to supply this Defect, that the Clergy of *New-England* may not only be renowned for Learning, but for Humanity and Politeness.

THIS Fountain of Learning is now capable of supplying the whole Province with wise and learned Men; their Councillors, their Judges, their Ministers, their School-Masters, and the Gentlemen of the General Assembly owe their Education to



it; nay, the Influences of this Seminary have reached the neighbouring Provinces, many of whose present Ministers and School-Masters were educated in it.

THE inferior Court is held here the second *Tuesday* in *September*, and the superior the last *Tuesday* in *July*.

*Charles-Town* is not inferior to *Cambridge* in Number of Inhabitants, and exceeds it much in Respect of Trade, being situated between two Rivers, *Millick-River* and *Charles-River*, and parted from *Boston* only by the latter, over which there is a Ferry so well tended, that a Bridge is scarce wanted, except in Winter, when the Ice will neither bear, nor suffer a Boat to move through it, and tho' the River be much broader above the Town, it is not wider in the Ferry-Passage than the *Thames* between *London* and *Southwark*; the Profits of the Ferry belong to *Harvard-College*. The Town is so large as to take up all the Space between the two Rivers, 'tis beautified with a handsome large Church, a Market-Place by the River-side, and two long Streets leading down to it; the inferior Court is kept here the second *Tuesday* in *March* and *December*, and the superior Court the last *Tuesday* in *January*.

*Reading* is an ordinary Town, but commodiously situated on the Banks of a great Lake; there are two Mills in it, one for Grist, and another to saw Boards.

THE Rivers in this County are small, but there are a great many of them, which water the Pasture-Grounds, and render this one of the pleasanter, and most fruitful Spots in *New-England*; the Fields are full of Cattle of all Sorts, and supply the Town of *Boston* with Beef, Pork, &c. both for Exportation, and the Home-Consumption. The Commons are cover'd with Sheep, and resemble the County of *Devon* in *England*.

THE next County is *Suffolk*, which has the following Towns.

*Suffolk-County.*

|           |                    |                     |
|-----------|--------------------|---------------------|
| * * * * * | <i>Boston,</i>     | * <i>Milton,</i>    |
| *         | <i>Braintree,</i>  | * <i>Roxbury,</i>   |
| *         | <i>Dedham,</i>     | * <i>Weymouth,</i>  |
| *         | <i>Dorchester,</i> | * <i>Woodstock,</i> |
| *         | <i>Hingham,</i>    | * <i>Wrentham,</i>  |
|           | <i>Hull,</i>       | * <i>Brooklin,</i>  |
| *         | <i>Medfield</i>    | * <i>Needham,</i>   |
| *         | <i>Mendon,</i>     |                     |

THE Capital of this County, and of all *New-England* is *Boston*, which according to the exact Calculation of *Thomas Brattle*, Esq; is 71 Degrees West from *London*, Latitude 42 Degrees 24 North, Variation of the Needles, nearest 9 Degrees West. 'Tis pleasantly situated in a Peninsula about four Miles in Compass at the Bottom of a fine Bay, guarded from the Roughness of the Ocean by several Rocks appearing above Water; and by above a Dozen Islands, many of which are inhabited, and one called *Nottles-Island*, within these few Years was esteemed worth 2 or 300*l.* per Annum to the Owner Colonel *Shrimpton*; there is but one common and safe Passage into the Bay, and that not very broad, there being hardly Room for three Ships to come in, board and board at a Time, but being once in, there is Room for the Anchorage of 500 Sail. The most remarkable of these Islands is called *Castle-Island*, from the Castle that is built in it; it stands about a League from the Town upon the main Channel leading to it, and is so conveniently situated, that no Ship of Burthen can approach the Town without the Hazard of being torn in Pieces by its Cannon. The Fortifications of this Castle were very irregular 'till K. *William's* Reign;

Reign ; when Col. *Romer* a famous Engineer was sent thither to repair them, the Colonel demolished all the old Works, and raised an entirely new regular Fortification, now called *Fort-William* ; 'tis mounted with about 100 Pieces of Ordnance, 20 of which were given to the Province by *Q. Anne*, and are placed on a Platform near High-Water Mark, so as to rake a Ship fore and aft, before she can bring her Broadsides, to bear against the Castle ; some of these Cannon carry 42 Pounders. 500 able Men are exempted from all military Duty in Time of War to be ready to attend the Service of the Castle at an Hour's Warning upon any Signal of the Approach of an Enemy, but in Time of Peace a Guard of 50 Men only do Duty.

BUT to prevent any possible Surprize from an Enemy, there is a Light-House built on a Rock, appearing above Water about two long Leagues from the Town, which in Time of War makes a Signal to the Castle, and the Castle to the Town by hoisting and lowering the Union-Flag, so many Times as there are Ships approaching, which if they exceed a certain Number, the Castle fires three Guns to alarm the Town of *Boston*, and the Governour, if Need be, orders a *Beacon* to be fired, which alarms all the adjacent Country ; so that unless an Enemy can be supposed to sail by so many Islands and Rocks in a Fog, the Town of *Boston* must have six or more Hours to prepare for their Reception ; but supposing they might pass the Castle, there are two Batteries at the North and South Ends of the Town which command the whole Bay, and make it impossible for an Enemy's Ship of Burthen to ride there in Safety, while the Merchant-Men and small Craft may retire up into *Charles-River* out of Reach of their Cannon : 'Tis equally impossible for any Ship to be run away with out of this Harbour by a Pirate ; for the Castle suffers no Ship outward-bound, to pass with-

out



out a *Permit* from the Governour, which is not granted without a Clearing from the Custom-House, and the usual Notice of sailing, by loosing their Fore-Top-Sail.

THE Bay of *Boston* is spacious enough to contain in a Manner the Navy of *England*; the Masts of Ships here, and at the proper Seasons of the Year make a kind of Wood of Trees like that which we see upon the River of *Thames* about *Wapping* and *Limehouse*, which may easily be imagined when we consider, that by Computation given into the Collectors of his Majesty's Customs to the Governour upon the building of the Light-Houses, it appeared that there was 24000 Ton of Shipping cleared annually.

AT the Bottom of the Bay is a noble Peer 1800 or 2000 Foot long, with a Row of Ware-houses on the North Side for the Use of Merchants, the Peer runs so far into the Bay, that Ships of the greatest Burthen may unlade without the Help of Boats or Liters; from the Head of the Peer you go up the chief Street of the Town, at the upper End of which is the Town-House or Exchange; a fine Piece of Building, containing besides the Walk for the Merchants, the Council-Chamber, the House of Commons, and another spacious Room for the Sessions of the Courts of Justice; the Exchange is surrounded with Booksellers Shops, which have a good Trade; There are five Printing Presses in *Boston*, which are generally full of Work, by which it appears that Humanity and the Knowledge of Letters flourish more here than in all the other *English* Plantations put together; for in the City of *New-York* there is but one little Bookseller's Shop, and in the Plantations of *Virginia*, *Maryland*, *Carolina*, *Barbadoes*, and the Islands none at all.

THE Town of *Boston* lies in the Form of a half Moon round the Harbour, the surrounding Shore being

being high, and affording a very agreeable Prospect; there are several handsome large Streets in it, which for the Beauty of the Buildings and Goodness of the Pavement may compare with most in the City of *London*.

We may guess at the Bigness of the Town by the Number of its Inhabitants, which are in Comparison to those of *London* as one to 50 or 52, computing by the Bills of Mortality, for the yearly Bill of Mortality at *Boston* is much the same with one of the weekly Bills at *London*; the yearly Bill for the Year 1718 stood thus,

|           |                  |     |
|-----------|------------------|-----|
| Buried    | { Whites         | 334 |
|           | { Negroes        | 46  |
|           | { and<br>Indians |     |
| Total     |                  | 380 |
| Decreas'd |                  | 71  |

So that if we compute the Inhabitants of *London*, and the adjacent Villages within the Bills of Mortality at a Million, those of *Boston* will amount to between 19 and 20000; whence it appears that the Town is considerably encreas'd within these last 10 or 12 Years; for the late ingenious *Tho. Brattle*, Esq; whose M. S. Observations are now before me, says that in the Year 1708, the Number of Inhabitants did not amount to above 12 or 13000 Souls: He adds further, that the Militia of the Town consisted then of eight Companies of Foot of about 150, or 160 in a Company, and one Troop of Horse; but the Inhabitants being since encreased above a third Part, their Militia must now amount to near 2000 Men.

THERE are ten Churches or Places of Publick Worship in *Boston*; six of the Establishment, namely, the *Old Church* so called, because 'tis the Mother of all

all the rest, whereof the Reverend Mr. *Benjamin Wadsworth*, and Mr. *Thomas Foxcroft* are Pastors; these are reckon'd the most narrow in their Principles, and to approach nearest the *Brownists*. The *North Church*, whereof the Doctors *Increase* and *Cotton Mather* are Pastors; the *South Church*, whereof the Reverend Mr. *Joseph Sewall*, and Mr. *Thomas Prince* are Pastors; the *New Church*, whereof the Reverend Mr. *Benjamin Colman*, and Mr. *William Cooper* are Pastors; these are reckoned the largest in their Principles, and to come nearest the *Presbyterians*, because they neither require the making of publick Confessions, nor the owning a particular Church-Covenant, in Order to admitting Persons to their Communion, as all the other Churches do; as likewise, because they read the Scriptures, and recite the Lord's Prayer in their publick Worship; the other two Churches are lately built, and are called the *New North*, and the *New South*; Mr. *John Webb* being Pastor of the one, and Mr. *Samuel Chickly* of the other.

BUT besides the forementioned Churches which are properly the Establishment of the Country there is one *Episcopal Church*, one *French*, one *Anabaptist*, and one Congregation of *Quakers*; the *Quakers* are but few in Number, though they are treated at present with as much Candour and Goodness as they can reasonably desire; the *Anabaptists* likewise are but few, but serious modest humble Christians: Mr. *Elisba Callender* is their present Pastor, who was educated in *Harvard-College*, and was lately ordained by the two Doctor *Mathers* and Mr. *Webb*; the *French* are very numerous; and the *Episcopal Church* of which the Rev. Mr. *Samuel Miles* and Mr. *Henry Harris* are Ministers, may consist of about a Thousand Hearers; the late King *WILLIAM* and Queen *MARY* gave them a Pulpit-Cloth, a Cushion, a rich Set of Plate for the Communion-Table; and a Piece of Painting which



which reaches from the Top to the Bottom of the East End of the Church containing the Ten Commandments, the Lord's Prayer, and the Apostles Creed; *Thomas Brattle*, Esq; gave to this Church a Pair of Organs, and the Governour's Pew is built in a magnificent Manner at the Charge of the publick.

THE Conversation in this Town is as polite as in most of the Cities and Towns of *England*; many of their Merchants having travell'd into *Europe*; and those that stay at home having the Advantage of a free Conversation with Travellers; so that a Gentleman from *London* would almost think himself at home at *Boston*, when he observes the Numbers of People, their Houses, their Furniture, their Tables, their Dress and Conversation, which perhaps is as splendid and showy, as that of the most considerable Tradesmen in *London*.

UPON the whole, *Boston* is the most flourishing Town for Trade and Commerce in the *English America*, here the Governour commonly resides, the General Court and Assembly meet, the Courts of Judicature sit, and the Affairs of the whole Province are transacted; 'tis the best Port in *New-England*, from whence 3 or 400 Sail of Ships, Ketches, Brigantines, &c. are laden every Year with Lumber, Beef, Pork, Fish, &c. for several Parts of *Europe* and *America*. The inferior Court of Common Pleas, and Quarter-Sessions of the Peace, is held here for the County of *Suffolk* on the first *Tuesday* in *May* and *November*. The General Court of Election of Councillors is by the Charter on the last *Wednesday* in *May* annually, but there are no Fairs nor Markets in this, nor hardly in any other Town in the Country.

*Dorchester* is the next Town to *Boston* for Bigness; 'tis built at the Mouth of two little Rivers near the Sea-side. *Roxbury* and *Braintree* are noted for their Free-Schools. *Roxbury* is seated in the Bot-  
tom

tom of a shallow Bay, but has no Harbour for Shipping; the Town is well watered with Springs; *Smelt-River* runs through it, and a Quarter of a Mile to the North runs *Stony-River*. The Town of *Weymouth* is the most ancient in the Province, but not so considerable as formerly.

THERE are no less than 12 or 14 fine Towns or Villages round about this noble Bay of the *Massachusetts* between *Pulling Point* on the North Entrance, and *Merton-Point* on the South; *Pulling-Point* was so called, because the Boats were by the Eddies or Roads haled against the Tide which is very strong in this Place; *Merton-Point* is about two Leagues from *Boston* on the other Side of the Bay, and has a small Village upon it, where Ships commonly cast Anchor.

HERE are no large Rivers in this County, but several little ones, which render the Country both pleasant and fruitful.

To the Westward of this and *Middlesex-Counties*, bordering on *Connecticut* lies *Hampshire*, which has in it the following Towns.

*Hampshire-County.*

|                      |                       |
|----------------------|-----------------------|
| * <i>Deerfield,</i>  | * <i>Northampton,</i> |
| * <i>Enfield,</i>    | * <i>Springfield,</i> |
| * <i>Hatfield,</i>   | * <i>Southfield,</i>  |
| * <i>Hadley,</i>     | * <i>Westfield.</i>   |
| * <i>Brookfield,</i> |                       |

THIS County is watered by the great River *Connecticut* on the Banks of which all the forementioned Towns are built, the chief of them are *Northampton*, where the County-Court is kept the last *Tuesday* in *March*; and *Springfield*, where 'tis held the last *Tuesday* in *September*: But being an inland-County, and hilly, 'tis not so fruitful as those that lye nearer the Coasts.

THE next County Southward on the Coast is *Plimouth*, which was formerly a distinct Government, and contained under it the Counties of *Barnstable* and *Bristol*, all which by the late Charter are annexed to the Province of the *Massachusetts-Bay*.

*Plimouth-County* contains the following Towns.

|                       |  |                          |
|-----------------------|--|--------------------------|
| * <i>Plimouth</i> ,   |  | * <i>Scituate</i> ,      |
| * <i>Bridgwater</i> , |  | * <i>Middleborough</i> , |
| * <i>Duxbury</i> ,    |  | * <i>Pembroke</i> ,      |
| * <i>Marshfield</i> , |  | * <i>Plympton</i> .      |

THE chief Town is *New-Plimouth*, the Capital of the County, and the oldest in all *New-England*; 'tis situated on the South-West Side of a large Bay, now called the Bay of *New-Plimouth*, and contains 3 or 400 Families; but the Land about the Town not being very fruitful, the Town of *Scituate* has of late outgrown it; there are two or three small Rivers which water the County, but the Soil is not so rich as that of *Suffolk*.

THE next County takes its Name from the Town of *Barnstable*, lying in a Bay called by the same Name; it has in it the following Towns.

*Barnstable-County.*

|                       |  |                      |
|-----------------------|--|----------------------|
| * <i>Barnstable</i> , |  | * <i>Sandwich</i> ,  |
| * <i>Eastham</i> ,    |  | * <i>Tarmouth</i> ,  |
| <i>Manimoy</i> ,      |  | * <i>Harwich</i> ,   |
| * <i>Truro</i> ,      |  | * <i>Nantucket</i> , |
| * <i>Rochester</i> ,  |  |                      |

IN passing by Sea from *Plimouth* to this County we must compass *Cape-Cod*, the highest and longest Promontory on the Coast; it makes a large and commodious Bay, capable of receiving 1000 Sail  
of



of Ships; the Entrance is several Miles wide, the Country about it is barren; but the Convenience of Fishing renders it as populous as most Places in *New-England*.

OPPOSITE to the South Bay called *Monument-Bay*, are two Islands; one of which is called *Martha's Vineyard*, where Capt. *Gosnold* first landed, and where afterwards the *Mayhews*, Father and Son, laboured with Success in the Conversion of the *Indians*; there is but one *English* Church in the Island, it being inhabited chiefly by the *Indian* Converts who are served by Ministers of their own; as are the Inhabitants of the adjacent Island *Nantucket*, where there are no *English*, but only *Indian* Preachers; the Streights between *Martha's Vineyard* and the Continent called *Malabar*, are very dangerous.

THE next County to this is *Bristol*, which has the following Towns.

*Bristol-County.*

|                     |                          |
|---------------------|--------------------------|
| * <i>Bristol,</i>   | * <i>Taunton,</i>        |
| * <i>Swansey,</i>   | * <i>Dighton,</i>        |
| * <i>Rehoboth,</i>  | * <i>Little Compton,</i> |
| * <i>Norton,</i>    | * <i>Artleborough,</i>   |
| * <i>Dartmouth,</i> | * <i>Freetown.</i>       |

DR. *Mather* in a Letter to Dr. *Woodward* says, that at *Taunton* by the Side of a Tiding River there is a large Rock appearing above Water, on the perpendicular Side of which next the Stream are seven or eight Lines about seven or eight Foot long, and about a Foot wide, engraven with unaccountable Characters, not like any now known in the World. \*

---

\* *Philosophical Transactions*, Vol. XXIX. p. 70.

*Rehoboth* is a large well-peopled Country situate on a Circle upon a Plain about a Mile and half in Diameter; the Church, the Minister's House and School-House being in the Middle: Near this Town in the Road to *Boston* lyes another Plain above 3 Miles over, admired by all Travellers for the Evenness of it; but the Land is not very fertile. The Town of *Rehoboth* was first settled in the Year 1644, by a Number of *English* Families, who being straitned in their former Settlement at *Weymouth* in the *Massachuset-Colony* came hither, and by the Advice of their Minister called the Place *Rehoboth*, because the Lord had made Room for them, but the *Indian* Name of it was *Seconck*, by which it is sometimes called to this Day.

THE Town of *Artleborough* is since grown out of the Increase of the Inhabitants of *Rehoboth*, and is situate on the North-side of it.

*Swansey* is a large scattered Town consisting of 3 or 4 Villages inhabited by so many Sects or Parties of Christians, as *Church-men*, *Independents*, *Anabaptists* and *Quakers*.

*Bristol* is the last built Town in this County, but is at present the most populous, and has the greatest Trade, having the Advantage of a very commodious Harbour. This Town is built on the only Land acquired by Conquest from the *Indians*, which for its pleasant Situation, and the Advantages of good Fishing and Hunting was reserved by the *Indian King Philip* for himself and his People, after he had sold all the adjacent Country to the *English*. About the Year 1678, when King *Philip* and his Men were put to the Sword, the Land was sold towards defraying the Charges of the War, and being bought by Men of some Figure, they laid out the Town with greater Regularity than perhaps any other Town in the Province, and by its Situation, and the Resort of People to it, it promises to be a considerable Place. Near this Town is a  
re-

remarkable Hill, called *Mount Hope*, said to contain a Quarry of Marble, at the Foot of which King *Philip* was killed.

*Rhode-Island* lyes upon the Borders of this County, but is now a distinct Government, King *Charles* the Second after his Restoration having granted the Inhabitants a Charter; it was called by the Natives *Aquetnet*, and lyes in the *Narrhaganset-Bay*, being 14 or 15 Miles long, and about 4 or 5 broad; it was first inhabited by the Sectaries who were banished from *Boston* in the Year 1639, and has been the Asylum of such Persons ever since; but the Inhabitants begin now to be more civilized, since there have been two Churches in the Island, one according to the *New-English* Model, the other according to the Church of *England*; of which latter the Reverend Mr. *Honeyman* is the present Incumbent, to whom the Society for propagating the Gospel in foreign Parts allow 55 *l. per Annum*: As for the Place, 'tis deservedly called the Paradise of *New-England*, for the Fruitfulness of the Soil, and Temperateness of the Climate, which though it be not above sixty-five Mile South of *Boston* is a Coat warmer in Winter, and being surrounded by the Ocean, is not so much affected in Summer with the hot Land Breezes, as the Towns on the Continent are.

*Providence* and *Warwick* two large Towns in the *Narrhaganset* Country upon the Continent are under this Government, and have the least Appearance of Order of any Towns in *New-England*; the Inhabitants of these Places are likewise the Descendants of those Sectaries who were banished the *Massachusetts*-Jurisdiction between the Years 1630 and 1640, as the Reader has observed in the foregoing History; but they now live in great Amity with their Neighbours, and though every Man does what he thinks right in his own Eyes, it is rare that any notorious Crimes are committed by them; which



may be attributed in some Measure to their great Veneration for the Holy Scriptures, which they all read from the least to the greatest, though they have neither Ministers nor Magistrates to recommend it to them. They have an Aversion to all Sorts of Taxes, as the Inventions of Men to support *Hirelings*, as they call all such Magistrates and Ministers as won't serve them for nothing. They are very hospitable to Strangers; a Traveller passing through these Towns may call at any House with the same Liberty as if he were at an Inn, and be kindly entertained with the best they have for nothing. The raising of Cattle, and making Butter and Cheese is their chief Employ, by which they have very much enriched themselves. The Society for propagating the Gospel after the Manner of the Church of *England* have lately planted a Missionary in these Parts (*viz.*) the Reverend Mr. *Guy*, to whom they allow 20*l.* per Annum.

THE Reader has now had the best Account I can give him of the most considerable Towns and Rivers in the Province of the *Massachusetts-Bay*; I have mention'd all the Towns that send Members to the General Assembly, except \* *Chilmark* and *Tisbury*, which choose one between them; so that by looking over the List he may see what Towns choose Representatives; and, by counting the Asterisms, how many each Town chooses, and what Numbers the whole consists of. I have observed that the Soil of the Country is not so rich as to enable the Inhabitants to supply their Neighbours with Corn, at so easy a Rate, as the other Plantations; but the Rivers and Harbours of *New-England* are very noble; several of them, as *Boston*, *Piscataqua* and *Casco-Bay* being capable of receiving 500 Sail of Ships.

WESTWARD of the Province of the *Massachusetts-Bay* lye the United Colonies of *Connecticut* and *New-Haven*, who by virtue of a Charter granted them  
by

by King *Charles* the Second after his Restoration, choose their own Governor, and have a distinct General Assembly from the *Massachusetts*. The Province is in Length from *Stoniton* in *New-London-County*, to *Rye* on the Borders of *New-York* about 100 Miles; and in Breadth from *Saybrook* in *New-London-County*, to the Borders of *Hampshire* about 70.

THE first County on the Coast is *New-London-County*, in which are the following Towns.

*New-London-County.*

|                  |  |                      |
|------------------|--|----------------------|
| <i>Stoniton,</i> |  | <i>New-London,</i>   |
| <i>Saybrook,</i> |  | <i>Lyme,</i>         |
| <i>Preston,</i>  |  | <i>Lebanon,</i>      |
| <i>Dansick,</i>  |  | <i>Killingworth,</i> |
| <i>Norwich,</i>  |  |                      |

*New-London* is seated on the *Thames*, which is a considerable River with several small Branches, the first of which is called *Glass River*; the second, *Russel's Delight*; and the third, the *Indian River*; the rest are so small, that they are not worth naming.

*Saybrook* is the oldest Town in the County, it stands at the Mouth of *Connecticut-River*, on the West Side; as *Lyme* does over against it on the East. *Saybrook-Fort* was the Security of the Infant Colony against the fierce Nation of the *Pequots*, who made War upon them in the Year 1637, and had like to have driven them from their Settlements. The River *Connecticut* which runs through the Heart of this Province, is one of the largest and best Rivers in *New-England*; it divides itself into several Branches, and is navigable above 60 Miles within Land. The East Parts of this County are pleasant and fruitful, but the Western are swampy and mountainous.

NEXT to this within Land is *Hartford-County*, which contains the following Towns,

*Hartford-County.*

|                     |                       |
|---------------------|-----------------------|
| <i>Farmington,</i>  | <i>Waterbury,</i>     |
| <i>Glassenbury,</i> | <i>Weathersfield,</i> |
| <i>Hadham,</i>      | <i>Windfor,</i>       |
| <i>Hartford,</i>    | <i>Farm.</i>          |
| <i>Middle-Town,</i> | <i>Windham,</i>       |
| <i>Simsbury,</i>    |                       |

*Hartford* is the most considerable Town in this County, and the Mother of all the rest; it lyes on the Banks of *Connecticut-River*, and has 2 Churches or Meeting-Houses, the *Old* and the *New*.

NEAR *Hadham* is an Island in *Connecticut River*, called *Thirty Mile Island*, being that Distance from the River's Mouth. In the Western Parts of this County are several Ridges of Hills, and thick Forests which afford Plenty of Game.

THE two next Counties make the Colony of *New-Haven*, and both of them run along the Coast. In *New-Haven* County are the following Towns.

*New-Haven-County.*

|                   |                     |
|-------------------|---------------------|
| <i>Brainford,</i> | <i>Milford,</i>     |
| <i>Derby,</i>     | <i>New-Haven,</i>   |
| <i>Guilford,</i>  | <i>Wallingford.</i> |

THE Capital of this Province is *New-Haven*, which is at present a very flourishing Town; they have lately built a College in it for the Reception of Students, which is like to prove a flourishing Foundation, and will be a great Blessing to that Part of the Country; *Jeremiah Dummer*, Esq; their Agent at *London* by his Application and Interest with generous Persons, has sent them a noble Foun-



Foundation of a Library; the Name of the College is *Yale-Hall*.

NEAR *Brainford* there is a small Iron-Work on a Branch of a little River that runs into the Sea; the Place is from thence called *Iron-mill*. There is another little River that runs into the Sea at *Milford*, and another at *Guilford*.

THE next County is *Fairfield-County*, in which are the following Towns.

*Fairfield-County.*

|                   |                   |
|-------------------|-------------------|
| <i>Danbury,</i>   | <i>Rye,</i>       |
| <i>Fairfield,</i> | <i>Stamford,</i>  |
| <i>Greenwich,</i> | <i>Stratford,</i> |
| <i>Norwalk,</i>   | <i>Woodbury,</i>  |

THERE is no navigable River in this County; most of the Towns are built upon small Creeks, and are of no very great Note, either for Trade or Business, the Inland Part of the County 8 or 10 Miles from the Shore is full of Hills and Swamps, which are uninhabited.

SOUTHWARD of this County lyes *Long-Island*, so called from it's Form, being 120 Miles in Length, and not above 16 in Breadth, 'tis a noble Country for Corn and Cattle, but belongs to the Jurisdiction of *New-York*.

THERE are several other small Islands along the Coast of *New-England*, as *Faulcon-Island*, *Fishers-Island*, *Block-Island*, &c. in all to the Number of near 200, which serve to break the Winds and Seas from the several Shores on which they lye.

UPON the whole, *New-England* is a Country furnished with all the Necessaries and Conveniences of Life; though it must be acknowledged, that the vast-Improvements that have been made in it beyond the neighbouring Provinces, are not owing so much to the Richness of the Soil, or any ex-

traordinary Produce of the Country, as to the hard Labour and Industry of the Inhabitants; but the Country is yet capable of considerable Improvements, if they had but Money and Hands to do it with.

*The Inhabitants of New-England* are the Posterity of the old *English Puritans* or *Nonconformists* to the Church of *England*, who chose to leave their native Country, and retire into a Wilderness, rather than submit to such Rites and Ceremonies in Religion as they apprehended sinful. They did not differ with the Church in any of the Articles of her Faith, but they scrupled the Vestments, kneeling at the Sacrament, some Parts of the Common-Prayer, and the promiscuous Admission of all Persons to the Communion; for these things they were silenced and deprived of their Livings, which put great Numbers of the Ministers under a Necessity of removing with their Followers to *America*.

*Their Numbers, and military Strength.* THE Number of Planters that went over to *New-England* before the Year 1640, were about 4000; after which for the next 20 Years they had no Increase but what sprung up from among themselves; In the Reigns of King *Charles II.* and King *James II.* great Numbers of *Dissenters*, both Ministers and People went over, to avoid the Hardships they suffer'd from the Church; and it deserves to be taken Notice of, that the Increase of the *English* Plantations abroad depends very much on the Treatment the Dissenters from the Established Church of *England* meet with at home: When they are allowed the free Exercise of their Civil and Religious Liberties, they love their native Country too well to leave it; but when they are oppress'd in so tender a Point as their Con- sciences,

sciences, 'tis but reasonable to suppose, that many of them will go where they can make themselves easy; for the Confirmation of this Observation, we need look no further at present than *Ireland*, from whence, if I am rightly inform'd, above 6000 *Scotch Presbyterians* have shipp'd off themselves and their Effects within these few Years for the Plantations of *America*, chiefly on the Account of the Uneasinesses they were under, with Regard to the free Exercise of their Religion: And great Numbers are still going over every Summer, which if the Legislature are not pleas'd to take into Consideration, may in Time very much weaken, if not totally subvert the Protestant Religion in that Kingdom.

To such Causes as these, *New-England* owes the vast Increase of its Inhabitants, which according to Sir *William Petty* in his Political Arithmetick, \* publish'd in the Year 1691, amounted then to about 150,000; he computes thus, that 16000 Men being mustered in Arms, there must be 24000 Men able to bear Arms, which being reckon'd a sixth Part of the Inhabitants, makes the whole about 150,000: But I question the Exactness of Sir *William's* Calculations; for Mr. *Thomas Brattle* the greatest Mathematician that *New-England* ever produced, says that in the Year 1708, there were not in his Judgment above 100 or 120,000 Souls at most in all the Country, and of them not above 20 or 25000 fighting Men; now, if the Inhabitants of all *New-England* were 120,000, in the Year 1708, when these of *Boston* were computed at Twelve or Thirteen Thousand; the Inhabitants of *Boston* being now increased to 18 or 20000; the whole Number of Inhabitants must now amount to 160 or 165,000, and of them

---

\* Page 75.



about 30 or 35000 fighting Men, which is the Military Strength of the Country.

FROM this Calculation we may conclude, that the Province of *New-England* is in no great Danger at present from any of its Neighbours, for the *Indians* are an inconsiderable Body of themselves, and if the *French* should joyn them, though they might ravage the Frontiers by their flying Parties, they could make no Impressions upon the Heart of the Country; besides the *Indians* are divided, some being in Alliance with the *French*, and others with the *English*; so that in case of a War they may be play'd one against the other. In the Year 1710, four *Indian* Kings of the six Nations that lye between *New-England* and *Canada* came into *England*; namely, *Teeyeeneenhogaprow*, and *Sagayeanguaprahon* of the *Maquas*; *Elowohkaom*, and *Obneeyeathtonnoproow* of the *River Sachem*, and the *Ganajohabore Sachem*; the Court being then in Mourning, they were cloathed with black Breeches, Wastecoats, Stockings and Shoes after the *English* Fashion, and a Scarlet in Grain Cloth Mantle edged with Gold over all; on the 19th of *April* they had an Audience of the QUEEN, being conducted to *St James's*, by Sir *Charles Cotterel* in two of her Majesty's Coaches, and introduced into the Royal Presence by the Lord Chamberlain; Major *Pidgeon* one of the Officers that came over with them, read their Speech in *English*, to this Effect.

Great Queen,

“ WE have undertaken a long Voyage, which  
 “ none of our Predecessors could be  
 “ prevail'd with to undertake, to see our Great  
 “ Queen, and relate to her those things which we  
 “ thought absolutely necessary for the Good of  
 “ Her

“ Her, and us her Allies on the other Side the  
“ Water.

“ WE doubt not but our Great Queen has  
“ been acquainted with our long and tedious War  
“ in Conjunction with her Children against her  
“ Enemies the *French*, and that we have been as a  
“ strong Wall for their Security, even to the Loss  
“ of our best Men.

“ WE were mightily rejoiced when we heard  
“ our Great Queen had resolved to send an Army  
“ to reduce *Canada*; and immediately in Token of  
“ our Friendship, we hung up the *Kettle*, and took  
“ up the *Hatchet*, and with one Consent assisted  
“ Col. *Nicholson* in making Preparations on this  
“ Side the Lake; but at length we were told, our  
“ Great Queen by some important Affairs was  
“ prevented in her Design at present; which made  
“ us sorrowful, lest the *French* who had hitherto  
“ dreaded us, should now think us unable to make  
“ War against them. The Reduction of *Canada* is  
“ of great Weight to our free Hunting, so that if  
“ our Great Queen should not be mindful of us,  
“ we must with our Families forsake our Country,  
“ and seek other Habitations, or stand neuter; ei-  
“ ther of which will be much against our Inclina-  
“ tions.

“ IN Token of the Sincerity of the six Nations,  
“ we do, in their Name present our Great Queen  
“ with the Belts of *Wampam*, and in Hopes of our  
“ Great Queen's Favour, leave it to her most gra-  
“ cious Consideration.

PURSUANT to this *Address*, an Expedition to  
*Canada* was undertaken the next Year, which mis-  
carry'd through the Treachery of them that were  
at the Head of it; for the Force that was in that  
Fleet, in the Opinion of the best Judges, was suf-  
ficient not only to drive the *French* out of *Que-  
beck*, but out of all their Settlements in the Coun-  
try.

BUT

BUT though the *French* Power in *Canada* is not very formidable at present, yet if ever they should open a Communication with the River *Mississipi*, which runs upon the Back of the *English* Settlements, as they will certainly do, if the Company succeed in their vast Designs, they will then enclose all our Plantations, and perhaps, in a Century or two, drive them off the very Continent of *America*.

THE Civil Government of *New-England* underwent a considerable Alteration by their new Charter; for before that Time, all their Magistrates and Officers of State, were chosen annually by the General Assembly, whereas now the Nomination of the Governour and Lieutenant-Governour is wholly reserved to the Crown; the Militia is absolutely in the Hands of his Majesty's Governour as Captain-General; all Judges, Justices of the Peace, and Sheriffs are likewise nominated and appointed by the Governour with the Consent of his Council; and all Officers of the Admiralty are to receive their Commissions from *England*; nay, the Charters of *Connecticut* and *Rhode-Island* being silent as to any Power on the Sea, the Governour of *New-England* is appointed Vice-Admiral of the Seas that wash their respective Shores; and a Judge of the Admiralty, commissioned by the Lord High-Admiral of *Great-Britain*, determines all Maritime Cases which are without the Jurisdiction of the ordinary Courts of Justice; in short, the Governour of *New-England* has a Negative on all Laws, Elections, and Acts of Government done by the Council or General Assembly.

THE Governour's Council is made up of 28 of the most considerable Gentlemen of the Country, chosen annually by the General Assembly, and pre-



presented to his Excellency the Governour for his Approbation; Of these, 18 are always chosen out of the Inhabitants or Proprietors of Lands within the ancient Limits of the Province of the *Massachusetts-Bay*; four out of the ancient Jurisdiction of *New-Plimouth*; three out of the Province of *Main*; one out of the Territories between *Sagadehock* and *Nova Scotia*; and two out of the Inhabitants or Proprietors of Land within any Part of the Province; In all 28. This Council is a Part of the Legislature, and is designed not only to assist the Governour in all Affairs of State, but likewise to be a Check upon his Administration, for the executive Part of the Governour's Power depends entirely on the Approbation of his Council.

THE General Assembly consists at present of 103 Members, of which the Town of *Boston* chooses four, *Salem* two, *Ipswich* two, *Newbury* two, *Charles-Town* two, and the rest of the Towns before-mention'd one a-piece, except *Chilmark* and *Tisbury*, which choose but one between them. The Assembly is chosen annually, and meets at *Boston* the latter End of *May*: As soon as the House is called over, and the several Members have taken the Oaths, repeated, and subscribed the *Declaration*, and took, and subscribed the *Oath of Abjuration*, they proceed to the Choice of their *Speaker*, whom they present to the Governour for his Approbation; after which they elect the new *Council* which is a Part of the Legislature, like our Upper House of Parliament, and present their Names to the Governour, who under-writes his Approbation in these Words; *I consent to this Election of Councillors*, Given under my Hand this      Day of *May*. N. N. The Governour then sends for the whole House into the Council-Chamber, and makes a Speech to them, after which having chosen two *Monitors* to see that  
the

*The General  
Assembly.*

the Orders of the House are observed, they proceed to Business.

THE General Assembly at *Boston* has in some Respects more Power than the Parliament of *England*, for they elect the Governour's Council; they constitute and settle all Civil Officers under certain Restrictions and Reservations; they erect Courts of Judicature, levy Taxes, and make Laws from Time to Time not repugnant to the Laws of *England*, only it must be observed, that all their Laws, tho' approved by the Governour and Council, are to be transmitted to *England* for the Royal Approbation, and if disallowed within the Space of three Years to be void.

It appears from hence, that the Government of *New-England* resembles very much that of *England*, for as the Legislature here consists of *King, Lords, and Commons*, 'tis there made up of the *Governour, the Council, and General Assembly*, without whose joint Consent no Law can pass into an Act. Every one who has 40*s.* a Year in Land, or 50*l.* personal Estate is a Burgess, and every House-keeper paying Scot and Lot is a Freeman of the Town where he lives, and is qualify'd by taking the usual Oaths to serve his Country in any Civil or Military Employment, without being obliged to take the Sacrament in any particular Communion.

BUT if the Reader would acquaint himself more exactly with the Privileges of the People, or the distinct Powers of the several Parts of the Legislature of *New-England*; I must refer him to their Charter, which I have publish'd in the *Appendix*.

As the Government of *New-England* is dependant on the Crown of *England*, so is their Trade; 'tis impossible to make an exact Estimate of the Exports and Imports from *New-England*, without examining the Custom-House-Books, but 'tis computed by

by the most experienced Merchants trading to those Parts, that they receive from hence all Sorts of Woollen-Drapery, Silks, Stuffs, and Hats ; all Sorts of Linnen, and printed Callicoes, all Sorts of Iron Manufacture, and *Birmingham* Ware, as Tools for Mechanicks, Knives, Scissars, Buckles, Nails, &c. to the Value of 100,000 *l.* annually, and upwards.

IN Return for these Goods, our Merchants export from thence about 100,000 \* Quintals of dried Cod-fish yearly, which they send to *Portugal*, *Spain*, and the several Ports of *Italy*, the Returns for which are made to *London* out of the Product of those Countries, and may amount to the Value of about 80,000 *l.* annually. The direct Trade from *Boston* to *London* is not so considerable, though our Merchants receive from thence Masts and Yards for the King's Ships, Pitch, Tar, Turpentine, Skins, Furs, Oyl, Whale-Fins, Logwood, Ships, about 3000 Tons annually.

THE *New-England* Merchants trade to the other Plantations in *America* with Lumber for Building, that is Boards, Masts, Pipe-Staves, &c. with Beef, Pork, Fish, and other Sorts of Provision; and have in Return, Sugar, Logwood, Melasses, and Rum, to the Value of about 50,000 Pounds annually.

'TIS the Unhappiness of this Country to have no Staple-Commodity to send for *England* in lieu of the Merchandize they receive from thence, but what may be had cheaper from some Part of *Europe* or other ; there are indeed very good Copper and Iron Mines in *New-England*, which might be improved and turn to a good Account, but the Parliament of *England* have not thought fit to suffer them to manufacture those Metals for the home Con-

---

\* N. B. A Quintal is 112 Pound Weight.



sumption, much less to send them abroad; and whether they can ever make it worth their while to send them over in Oar or Bars is a very great Question. Great Improvements likewise might be made in their Timber, Plank, Deals, Hemp, Pitch, Tar, and Turpentine; and it might be worth our Merchants while to import them from thence, provided Care was taken by the General Assembly to prevent Abuses in making up those Commodities, and a larger Bounty could be obtained upon the importing them into *England*.

BUT as Things are at present, *New-England* must be poor, for as they have *Their Money.* no Staple-Merchandize worth trading to *England* with, so they have no Money, neither Silver nor Gold: About 50 or 60 Years ago there was Money, coin'd in the Country, but there is hardly enough left now for the Retail Business; all their Payments among themselves being made in Province-Bills made legal by Act of the General Assembly which descend as low as half a Crown, so that the Gentlemen of *New-England* carry all their Money in their Pocket-Books; hence it is that the Course of Exchange runs so much to the Disadvantage of the Country, that 100*l.* to be paid in *London*, is this Year worth 220 and 225*l.* paid in *New-England*; so that if a Merchant of *Boston* should remit his Estate to *London*, it would not be worth half so much as it is there; but on the other Hand, if a Merchant of *London* worth 1000*l.* should have a Mind to settle in *New-England*, and carry his Effects along with him, he might be worth 3000*l.* on his Arrival there, and live as well upon it, as upon 3000*l.* here.

A late Reverend Divine of *Boston* has told us, that there are above 100 *Their Religion.* Religious Assemblies and Congregations in the Province of the *Massachusetts-Bay*, besides above 30 Assemblies of Christian *Indians*,

dians, who profess the same Faith, Order, and Worship with the *English* Churches in those Parts; and that there are not above three or four Congregations who in their Form of Worship and Discipline profess themselves of the Perswasion of the Church of *England*, \* whose Ministers are supported by the *Corporation for Propagating the Gospel in the Parts beyond the Seas*; though 'tis a little strange they should put themselves to such an Expence in *New-England*, when there is another Society, whose Charter confines them to the propagating of Christian Knowledge in this Province, and whose Labours have been attended with such Success among the *Indians*, as is hardly to be paralel'd; besides, how this can so properly be called *Propagating the Gospel*, when the Christian Religion was planted in those Parts long before the Societies Missionaries settled in them, I don't well understand; unless we will say, that the *New-English* Ministers don't preach the Christian Doctrine, or, that the Gospel can't subsist without the *English* Liturgy and Discipline. I agree 'tis reasonable, that Ministers of all Perswasions should have Liberty to preach the Gospel in all Parts of the World, and the People to hear; but if the Religious Liberties of the Plantations are invaded, by the setting up of Spiritual Courts, &c. in any Part of his Majesty's Dominions in *America*, I am satisfied they will feel the sad Effects of it in a very little Time.

THE Establish'd Doctrines of the Churches of *New-England* are the same with the *Assembly of Divines at Westminster*, or with the Doctrinal Articles of the Church of *England*, understanding them in the Sense of the *Calvinists*; for the whole Body of the Clergy are of that

---

\* *State of the Province of the Massachusetts-Bay, presented to King GEORGE.*

Sentiment ; Their Discipline is Congregational or Independant, every particular Society being a compleat Church, with Power to exercise all Ecclesiastical Jurisdiction, without Appeal to any Classis, Convocation or Synod : They allow of Synods for Counsel and Advice, but not to exercise the Power of the *Keys*, as I have shewn under the Year 1637.

IT must be allowed, that the Churches of *New-England* were formerly very narrow in their Principles, and uncharitable to those who differed from them ; they had no Notions of Liberty of Conscience, but were for forcing Men to their publick Assemblies by Fines and Imprisonment ; but I must do the present Magistrates and Ministers of the Country so much Justice as to inform the World, that they are Men of truly moderate Principles, who have a becoming Zeal for Truth, but are Enemies to all Sorts of Persecution for Conscience-Sake. Remarkable are the Words of the Reverend Mr. *Coleman*, one of the Ministers of *Boston*, in his Sermon preached on a Fast-Day, *March 22, 1716*. “ \* If  
 “ there be any Customs in our Churches (says he)  
 “ derived from our Ancestors, wherein those Terms  
 “ of Church-Communion are imposed which Christ  
 “ has not imposed in the *New Testament*, they ought  
 “ to be laid aside, for they are justly to be condemned by us, because we complain of Impositions in other Communions, and our Fathers fled  
 “ from the same. If there ever was a Custom among us, whereby Communion in our Churches  
 “ was made a Test for the Enjoyment of Civil Privileges in the State, we have done well long  
 “ since to abolish such corrupt and persecuting  
 “ Maxims, which are a Mischief to any free People,  
 “ and a Scandal to any Communion to retain. If  
 “ there were of old among our Fathers any Laws

---

\* Page 20, 21, 22.



“ enacted, or Judgments given, and Executions  
 “ done according to those Laws which have carry’d  
 “ too much the Face of Cruelty and Persecution,  
 “ we ought to be humbled greatly for such Errors  
 “ of our Fathers, and confess them to have been  
 “ sinful; and blessed be God for the more Catho-  
 “ lick Spirit of Charity, which now distinguishes  
 “ us: Or, if any of our Fathers have dealt  
 “ proudly in censuring and judging others who  
 “ differ’d from them in Modes of Worship, let us  
 “ their Posterity the rather be clothed with Hu-  
 “ mility, Meekness, and Charity, preserving Truth  
 “ and Holiness with the laudable Zeal of our Pre-  
 “ decessors.” And Dr. Cotton Mather has a Pas-  
 sage to the same Purpose worthy the Reader’s Ob-  
 servation. “ \* In this Capital City of *Boston* (says  
 “ he) there are Ten Assemblies of Christians of  
 “ different Perswasions, who live so lovingly and  
 “ peaceably together, doing all the Offices of good  
 “ Neighbourhood for one another in such a Man-  
 “ ner, as may give a sensible Rebuke to all the Bi-  
 “ gots of Uniformity, and shew them how con-  
 “ sistent a Variety of Rites in Religion may be  
 “ with the Tranquillity of humane Society, and  
 “ may demonstrate to the World, that Persecution  
 “ for conscientious Dissents in Religion is an *Abo-*  
 “ *mination of Desolation*, a Thing whereof all wise  
 “ and just Men will say, *Cursed be its Anger, for it*  
 “ *is fierce, and its Wrath, for it is cruel.*”

THE Ordination of Ministers in *New-England*  
 is perform’d by the Impositions of the Hands of  
 the Pastors of the neighbouring Churches, after the  
 Manner of the *Presbyterians* in *England*, with this  
 Difference, that they never ordain, but to a *Cure*,  
 or upon an Election of some Church to the Pa-

---

\* Fellowship of the Churches annex’d to the Ordination-Sermon of Mr.  
 Prince, p. 76. Boston, 1718.

floral Office among them ; they have one *Peculiarity* in their Ordinations, which is no-where else to be met with, that is, the Deputies of the several Churches being assembled in Council, before the Solemnity is performed, commission one of their Ministers to take the ordained Person by the Hand immediately after his Investiture into his Office, and in their Names give him the *Right-Hand of the Fellowship of the Churches*.

THE Salaries of the Ministers of *Boston* are made up of the voluntary Contributions of the People collected every Lord's Day in their Meeting-Houses in Time of Divine Service, after the Manner of the *Dutch Churches*, which are paid them by the Deacons every *Monday Morning* ; and it must be confess'd, to the Honour of that Town, that their Ministers are very well provided for, but in the Countries, the Minister contracts with his People for a certain Stipend, which is usually but small, and very indifferently paid ; the Minister indeed has his Remedy at Law against Defaulters, but if he should sue any of his Parishioners, he must bid adieu to his Preaching in that Place ; and after all, the Maintenance of the Country Ministers is but barely sufficient to support themselves and their Families, which is not only a Discouragement to Learning, but tends to render the Sacred Office of the Ministry itself contemptible.

THE Laws of the Country against Prophaneness and Immorality are strictly put in Execution, insomuch that there is as great an Appearance of Sobriety and Virtue in *New-England*, as in any Place in the World : There are no Games, nor Plays ; Swearing, Drunkenness, and all Sorts of Debauchery are out of Fashion, so that a Rake that goes thither from *Europe* is not only out of his Element, but will find no Persons of Reputation or Character to keep him Company ; there are no idle Vagabonds, nor so much as a Beggar in the whole

whole Country, which is owing in Part to the Religious Care of the *New-English* Planters in the Education of their Youth, for every Town of fifty Families is obliged by Law to maintain a School for Writing and Reading; and every Town of an Hundred Families a Grammar-School; so that there is hardly a Child of nine or ten Years old throughout the whole Country but can read and write, and say his Catechism. Upon the whole, the People of *New-England* are a sober and industrious People, strict in their Morals, and very regular in their Lives; they have as much Knowledge and good Sense in Religion as any of their Neighbours, and value themselves as much upon it.

THEIR Customs and Manners are much the same with the *English*; but as their Mode of Worship differs from ours, so they have some *Peculiarities*, which perhaps the *English* Reader may not be acquainted with; as for Example, they have no *Liturgy* or *Form of Prayer* for publick Worship: They observe no Saints Days, nor any of the Fasts and Feasts of the Church of *England*, or any other Church: But their Grand Festivals are the Day of the annual Election of Magistrates at *Boston*, which is the latter End of *May*; and the Commencement at *Cambridge*, which is the last *Wednesday* in *July*, when all Business is laid aside, and the People are as chearful among their Friends and Neighbours, as the *English* are at *Christmas*.

*Their Customs  
and Manners.*

THEY have a greater Veneration for the Evening of *Saturday* than for that of the *Lord's Day* itself, looking upon it more agreeable to the *Mosaic* Institution, which says, *the Evening and Morning were the first Day*; so that all Business is laid aside all over *New-England* by Sun-set, or 6 a-Clock on *Saturday-Night*. The Sabbath itself is kept with great Strictness; no-body being to be seen in the Streets



Streets in Time of Divine Service, except the Constables, who are appointed to search all the publick Houses; but in the Evening they allow themselves a great Liberty and Freedom.

THE first Planters scrupled the Ceremony of Kissing the Book when they took an Oath; and many honest People under the arbitrary Government of Sir *Edmund Andross* were put by serving on Juries on this Account; though the ancient Custom of the Colony, and even the Law itself enjoins the Rite of lifting up the Hand in Swearing, which is the common Practice at this Time.

ALL Marriages in *New-England* were formerly perform'd by the Civil Magistrate, but of late they are more frequently solemnized by the Clergy who imitate the Method prescribed by the Church of *England*, except in their Collects, and the Ceremony of the Ring. They have no Service for the Dead, but bury without the Town, after the Manner of the Dissenters in *England*.

BUT in the Concerns of Civil Life, as in their Dress, Tables, and Conversation, they affect to be as much *English* as possible; there is no Fashion in *London*, but in three or four Months is to be seen at *Boston*, nay, they are fond of the very Name and Person of an *English* Man, insomuch that some who have had no great Affection for the People on the Account of their Preciseness, have yet been so agreeably entertain'd by them, as to leave the Country with Regret. In short, the only Difference between an *Old* and a *New-English* Man is in his Religion; and here the Disagreement is chiefly about the Liturgy, and Church-Government, the one being for a National Church, govern'd by *Arch-Bishops, Bishops*, and a *Convocation*: The other esteeming all Ministers to be of the same Order, and every Society of Christians meeting together in the same Place, a compleat Christian Church, having all Ecclesiastical Jurisdiction within itself, with-

without being subject to a Classis, Synod, or Convocation any further than for Advice.

It can't be denied but there are two State - Façons in *New-England*, as well as in most Kingdoms of *Europe*, which have arisen partly from a private narrow Spirit in some leading Men, who are a Sort of Spies upon the Government they live under, and express their Dislike of the Management of publick Affairs in all Companies, chiefly because themselves have no Share in it; but I can assure the World, that *Religion* is no Part of the Quarrel, for there being no Sacramental Test for Preferments in the State, all Parties of Christians among them are easy; Happy People! as long as Religion and the State continue on a separate Basis; the Magistrate not meddling in Matters of Religion any further than is necessary for the Preservation of the publick Peace; nor the Churches calling for the Sword of the Magistrate to back their Ecclesiastical Censures with corporal Severities. May they long continue on this Foot a Sanctuary to oppressed *Protestants* in all Parts of the World!

*Their Political Interests.*

BUT after all, it will be impossible for *New-England* to subsist of itself for some Centuries of Years; for tho' they might maintain themselves against their Neighbours on the Continent, they must starve without a free Trade with *Europe*, the Manufactures of the Country being very inconsiderable; so that if we could suppose them to rebel against *England*, they must throw themselves into the Arms of some other *Potestate*, who would protect them no longer than he could sell them to Advantage; the *French* and *Spaniards* are Enemies to their Religion and Civil Liberties, and the *Dutch* are too cautious a People, to run the Hazard of losing their own Country, for the Alliance of another at so great a Distance; 'Tis therefore the Grand Interest of  
New-

*New-England* to remain subject to the Crown of *England*, and by their dutiful Behaviour to merit the Removal of those few Hardships and Inconveniences they complain of; no other *Power* can, or will protect them, and next to their own, 'tis impossible their Religion and Civil Liberties should be in better Hands than in a Parliament of *England*.

AND I must do the People of *New-England* so much Justice as to acquaint the World, that their Inclinations as well as Duty lead them to this; they love the *English* Constitution, and would live and dye in the Defence of it, because when that is gone, they know their own must soon follow; In the Reigns of King *Charles* and King *James II.* all the Men of Reflection throughout the Country seem'd to be dispirited, and in Pain for the *Protestant Religion*, and *English Liberty*, but when the good Providence of God brought about the Happy Revolution, they began a Jubilee of Joy, which has continued almost ever since. When the Protestant Succession in the Illustrious House of *Hannover* was in Danger, no People in the World pray'd more heartily for its taking Place; and when it pleas'd Almighty God to bring His Majesty to the Throne of his Ancestors, none of his Subjects in any Part of his Dominions celebrated the Auspicious Day with louder Acclamations of Joy and Thankfulness. In a Word, the People of *New-England* are a Dutiful and Loyal People, and that which the Protestant-Dissenters of the City of *London*, declared with so much Justice to His Majesty, in their *Address* occasioned by the late Rebellion, is literally true of their Brethren in this Country, That King *GEORGE* is not known to have a single Enemy to His Person, Family, or Government in all *New-England*.

F I N I S.

A P P E N -





# APPENDIX.

[ NUMB. I. ]

*The CHARTER granted by their  
Majesties King WILLIAM  
and Queen MARY, &c.*



*WILLIAM and MARY, by the  
Grace of GOD, of England,  
Scotland, France and Ieland,  
King and Queen, Defenders of  
the FAITH, &c. To all to whom  
these Presents shall come greeting;  
Whereas his late Majesty King  
James the First, our Royal Pre-  
decessor, by his Letters Patents  
under the Great Seal of England,*

*bearing Date at Westminster the third Day of November,  
in the 18th Year of his Reign, did give and grant unto  
the Council established at Plimouth, in the County of  
Devon, for the planting, ruling, ordering, and govern-  
ing of New-England in America, and to their Successors  
and Assigns, all that part of America lying and being in  
Breadth from 40 Degrees of Northerly Latitude from  
the Equinoctial Line to the 48th Degree of the said Nor-  
therly Latitude inclusively, and in length of, and with-  
in all the Breadth aforesaid, throughout all the main*

S f

*Lands*

Lands from Sea to Sea, together also with all the firm Lands, Soils, Grounds, Havens, Ports, Rivers, Waters, Fishings, Mines and Minerals, as well Royal Mines of Gold and Silver, as other Mines and Minerals, precious Stones, Quarries, and all, and singular other Commodities, Jurisdictions, Royalties, Privileges, Franchises and Preheminences, both within the said Tract of Land upon the Main, and also within the Islands and Seas adjoining; provided always, that the said Lands, Islands, or any the Premises by the said Letters Patents intended, and meant to be granted, were not then actually possessed, or inhabited by any other Christian Prince or State, or within the Bounds, Limits, or Territories of the southern Colony then before granted, by the said late King *James* the First, to be planted by divers of his subjects in the south parts: To have, to hold, possess and enjoy all, and singular the aforesaid Continent-Lands, Territories, Islands, Hereditaments, and Precincts, Seas, Waters, Fishing, with all, and all manner of their Commodities, Royalties, Liberties, Preheminences, and Profits that should from thenceforth arise from thence, with all, and singular their Appurtenances, and every Part and Parcel thereof unto the said Council, and their Successors and Assigns for ever, to the sole and proper Use and Benefit of the said Council, and their Successors and Assigns for ever: To be holden of his said late Majesty King *James* the First, his Heirs and Successors, as of his Mannor of *East-Greenwich* in the County of *Kent*, in free and common soccage, and not *in Capite*, nor by Knight's service; yielding and paying therefore to the late King, his Heirs and Successors, the fifth Part of the Oar of Gold and Silver, which should from Time to Time, and at all Times then after happen to be found, had, and obtained, in, at, or within any of the said Lands, Limits, Territories, or Precincts, or, in, or within any Part, or Parcel thereof, for, or in Respect of all, and all manner of Duties, Demands, and Service whatsoever, to be done, made, or paid to the said late King *James* the First, his Heirs and Successors, (as in, and by the said Letters Patents, amongst sundry other Clauses, Powers, Privileges, and Grants therein contain'd, more at large appeareth): And whereas the said Council established at *Plimouth*, in the County of *Devon*, for the planting,

planting, ruling, ordering, and governing of *New-England* in *America*, did by their Deed indented under their common seal, bearing Date the 19th of *March*, in the Third Year of the Reign of our Royal Grand-Father King *Charles* the First, of ever-bleſſed Memory, give, grant, bargain, ſell, infeoff, alien, and confirm to Sir *Henry Rolfe*, Sir *John Young*, Knights, *Thomas Southcott*, *John Humphreys*, *John Endicott*, and *Simon Whetcombe*, their Heirs and Aſſigns, and their Aſſociates, for ever all that Part of *New-England* in *America* aforeſaid, which lyes and extends between a great River there, commonly called *Monamack*, alias *Merimack*, and a certain other River there called *Charles-River*, being in a Bottom of a certain Bay there, commonly called *Maſſachuſetts*, alias *Mattachuſetts*, alias *Maſſatuſetts-Bay*; and alſo all, and ſingular thoſe Lands, and Hereditaments whatſoever lying within the ſpace of three *Engliſh* Miles on the ſouth part of the ſaid *Charles-River*, or of any, and every part thereof; and alſo all, and ſingular the Lands, and Hereditaments whatſoever, lying, and being within the ſpace of three *Engliſh* Miles to the ſouthward of the ſouthermoſt part of the ſaid Bay, called *Maſſachuſetts*, alias *Mattachuſetts*, alias *Maſſatuſetts-Bay*; and alſo all thoſe Lands and Hereditaments whatſoever which lye, and be within the ſpace of three *Engliſh* Miles to the Northward of the ſaid River, called *Monomack*, alias *Merimack*, or to the Northward of any, and every Part thereof, and all Lands and Hereditaments whatſoever, lying within the limits aforeſaid north and ſouth in latitude, and in breadth, and in length, and longitude, of, and within all the Breadth aforeſaid throughout the main Lands there, from the *Atlantick* and weſtern Sea and Ocean on the Eaſt part, to the ſouth Sea on the Weſt Part, and all Lands and Grounds, Place and Places, Soil, Woods, and Wood-Grounds, Havens, Ports, Rivers, Waters, Fiſhings and Hereditaments whatſoever, lying within the ſaid Bounds and Limits, and every Part and Parcel thereof, and alſo, all Iſlands lying in *America* aforeſaid, in the ſaid Seas, or either of them on the Weſtern or Eaſtern Coaſts, or Parts of the ſaid Tracts of Land, by the ſaid Indenture mentioned to be given and granted, bargained, ſold, enſeoffed, aliened, and confirm'd, or any of them; and alſo, all Mines and Mi-



nerals, as well Royal Mines of Gold and Silver, as other Mines and Minerals whatsoever in the said Lands and Premises, or any Part thereof, and all Jurisdictions, Rights, Royalties, Liberties, Freedoms, Immunities, Privileges, Franchises, Preeminences, and Commodities whatsoever, which they the said Council establish'd at *Plimouth*, in the County of *Devon*, for the planting, ruling, ordering, and governing of *New-England* in *America*, then had, or might use, exercise, or enjoy, in, or within the said Lands or Premises, by the same Indenture mentioned to be given, granted, bargained, sold, enfeoffed, and confirm'd in, or within any Part, or Parcel thereof: To have, and to hold the said Part of *New-England* in *America*, which lyes and extends, and is abutted as aforesaid, and every Part and Parcel thereof, and all the said Islands, Rivers, Ports, Havens, Waters, Fishings, Mines, Minerals, Jurisdictions, Franchises, Royalties, Liberties, Privileges, Commodities, Hereditaments and Premises whatsoever, with the Appurtenances, unto the said Sir *Henry Roswell*, Sir *John Young*, *Thomas Southcott*, *John Humphreys*, *John Endicott*, and *Simon Whetcombe*, their Heirs and Assigns, and their Associates for ever, to the only proper and absolute Use and Behoof of the said Sir *Henry Roswell*, Sir *John Young*, *Thomas Southcott*, *John Humphreys*, *John Endicott*, and *Simon Whetcombe*, their Heirs, and Assigns, and their Associates for evermore: To be holden of our said Royal Grandfather King *Charles* the First, his Heirs and Successors, as of his Mannor of *East-Greenwich*, in the County of *Kent*, in free and common socage, and not *in Capite*, nor by Knights service, yielding, and paying therefore unto our said Royal Grandfather, his Heirs, and Successors, the fifth part of the Oar of Gold and Silver, which should from Time to Time, and at all Times hereafter, happen to be found, gotten, had, and obtain'd in any the said Land within the said Limits, or, in, or within any Part thereof, for, and in satisfaction of all manner of Duties, Demands, and services whatsoever, to be done, made, or paid to our said Royal Grandfather, his Heirs or Successors, (as in and by the said recited Indenture may more at large appear): And whereas our said Royal Grandfather in, and by his Letters Patents under the Great Seal of

of *England*, bearing Date at *Westminster* the 4th Day of *March*, in the 4th Year of his Reign, for the consideration therein mentioned, did give, grant, and confirm unto the said Sir *Henry Roswell*, Sir *John Young*, *Thomas Southcott*, *John Humphreys*, *John Endicott*, and *Simon Whetcombe*, and their Associates before-named, viz. Sir *Richard Salstonstall*, Knight, *Isaac Johnson*, *Samuel Aldersey*, *John Ven*, *Mathew Craddock*, *George Harwood*, *Increase Nowell*, *Richard Perry*, *Richard Bellingham*, *Nathaniel Wright*, *Samuel Vassall*, *Theophilus Eaton*, *Thomas Goffe*, *Thomas Adams*, *John Brown*, *Samuel Brown*, *Thomas Hutchins*, *William Vassal*, *William Pincheon*, and *George Foxcroft*, their Heirs and Assigns, all the said part of *New-England* in *America*, lying and extending between the Bounds and Limits in the said Indenture expressed, and all Lands, and Grounds, Place, and Places, Soils, Woods, and Wood-grounds, Havens, Ports, Rivers, Waters, Mines, Minerals, Jurisdctions, Rights, Royalties, Liberties, Freedoms, Immunities, Privileges, Franchises, Preheminences, and Hereditaments whatsoever, bargained, sold, enfeoffed, and confirm'd, or mentioned, or intended to be given, granted, bargained, sold, enfeoffed, alien'd, and confirm'd to them the said Sir *Henry Roswell*, Sir *John Young*, *Thomas Southcott*, *John Humphreys*, *John Endicott*, and *Simon Whetcombe*, their Heirs and Assigns, and to their Associates for ever, by the said recited Indenture, to have, and to hold the said part of *New-England* in *America*, and others the Premisses thereby mentioned to be granted and confirmed, and every Part and Parcel thereof, with the Appurtenances, to the said Sir *Henry Roswell*, Sir *John Young*, Sir *Richard Salstonstall*, *Thomas Southcott*, *John Humphreys*, *John Endicott*, *Simon Whetcombe*, *Isaac Johnson*, *Samuel Aldersey*, *John Ven*, *Matthew Craddock*, *George Harwood*, *Increase Nowell*, *Richard Perry*, *Richard Bellingham*, *Nathaniel Wright*, *Samuel Vassall*, *Theophilus Eaton*, *Thomas Goffe*, *Thomas Adams*, *John Brown*, *Samuel Brown*, *Thomas Hutchins*, *William Vassall*, *William Pincheon*, and *George Foxcroft*, their Heirs and Assigns for ever, to their only, proper, and absolute Use and Behalf for evermore, to be holden of our said Royal Grandfather, his Heirs and Successors, as of his Mannor of *East-Greenwich* aforesaid, in free

and common foccage, and not *in Capite*, nor by Knight's service, and also yielding, and paying therefore to our said Royal Grandfather, his Heirs, and Successors, the fifth Part only of all the Oar of Gold and Silver, which from Time to Time, and at all Times after should be there gotten, had, or obtained, for all Services, Exactions, and Demands whatsoever, according to the Tenor and Reservation in the said recited Indenture expressed. And further, our said Royal Grandfather by the said Letters Patents did give and grant unto the said Sir *Henry Roswell*, Sir *John Young*, Sir *Richard Saltonstall*, *Thomas Southcott*, *John Humphreys*, *John Endicott*, *Simon Whetcombe*, *Isaac Johnson*, *Samuel Aldersey*, *John Ven*, *Matthew Craddock*, *George Harwood*, *Increase Nowell*, *Richard Perry*, *Richard Bellingham*, *Nathaniel Wright*, *Samuel Vassall*, *William Pincheon*, and *George Foxcroft*, their Heirs and Assigns, all that said part of *New England* in *America*, which lyes and extends between a great River there, commonly called *Monomack*, alias *Merimack-River*, and a certain other River there called *Charles River*, being in the Bottom of a certain Bay there commonly called *Massachusetts*, alias *Mattachusetts*, alias *Massachusetts Bay*; and also all and singular those Lands and Hereditaments whatsoever; lying within the space of three *English* Miles, on the South Part of the said River called *Charles-River*, or of any, or every Part thereof, and also all and singular the Lands and Hereditaments whatsoever, lying, and being within the space of three *English* Miles to the southward of the southermost Part of the said Bay called *Massachusetts*, alias *Mattachusetts*, alias *Massachusetts Bay*, and also all those Lands and Hereditaments whatsoever, which lye and be within the space of three *English* Miles to the Northward of the said River called *Monomack*, alias *Merimack*, or to the Northward of any and every Part thereof, and all Lands and Hereditaments whatsoever lying within the Limits aforesaid, North and south in Latitude, and in Breadth, and in Length, and Longitude of, and within all the Breadth aforesaid, throughout the main Lands there, from the *Atlantick* or *Western Sea* and *Ocean* on the East Part, to the south Sea on the West Part, and all Lands, Grounds, Place and Places, Soils, Woods, and Wood lands, Havens,



vens, Ports, Rivers, Waters, and Hereditaments whatsoever, lying within the said Bounds and Limits, and every Part and Parcel thereof; and also, all Islands in *America* aforesaid in the said Seas, or either of them on the Western or Eastern Coasts, or Parts of the said Tracts of Lands, thereby mention'd to be given and granted, or any of them, and all Mines and Minerals, as well Royal Mines of Gold and Silver, as other Mines and Minerals whatsoever in the said Lands and Premises, or any Part thereof, and free Liberty of Fishing in, or within any of the Rivers, or Waters within the Bounds and Limits aforesaid, and the Seas thereunto adjoining, and all Fishes, Royal Fishes, Whales, Balene, Sturgeon, and other Fishes of what Kind or Nature soever, that should at any Time thereafter be taken in, or within the said Seas, or Waters, or any of them, by the said Sir *Henry Roswell*, Sir *John Young*, Sir *Richard Salstonstall*, *Thomas Southcott*, *John Humphreys*, *John Endicott*, *Simon Whetcombe*, *Isaac Johnson*, *Samuel Aldersey*, *John Ven*, *Matthew Craddock*, *George Harwood*, *Lucrease Norwell*, *Richard Perry*, *Richard Bellingham*, *Nathaniel Wright*, *Samuel Vassall*, *Theophilus Eaton*, *Thomas Goffe*, *Thomas Adams*, *John Brown*, *Samuel Brown*, *Thomas Hutchins*, *William Vassall*, *William Pincheon*, and *George Foxcroft*, their Heirs, or Assigns, or by any other Person, or Persons whatsoever there inhabiting, by them, or any of them to be appointed to fish therein. Provided always, that if the said Lands, Islands, or any the Premises beforementioned, and by the said Letters Patents last mentioned, intended, and meant to be granted, were at the Time of the granting of the said former Letters Patents, dated the third Day of *November*, in the 18th Year of the Reign of his late Majesty King *James* the First, actually possess'd, or inhabited by any other Christian Prince, or State, or were within the Bounds, Limits, or Territories of the said southern Colony then before granted by the said King, to be planted by divers of his loving subjects in the south part of *America*, that then the said Grant of our said Royal Grandfather should not extend to any such parts or parcels thereof so formerly inhabited, or lying within the Bounds of the southern Plantation as aforesaid. But as to those parts or parcels so possessed,

or inhabited by any such Christian Prince or State, or being within the Boundaries aforesaid, should be utterly void; to have, and to hold, possess, and enjoy the said parts of *New-England in America*, which lye, extend, and are abutted, as aforesaid, and every part and parcel thereof, and all the Islands, Rivers, Ports, Havens, Waters, Fishings, Fishes, Mines, Minerals, Jurisdictions, Franchises, Royalties, Liberties, Privileges, Commodities, and Premises whatsoever, with the Appurtenances, unto the said Sir Henry Roswell, Sir John Young, Sir Richard Salstonstall, Thomas Southcott, John Humphreys, John Endicott, Simon Whetcombe, Isaac Johnson, Samuel Aldersey, John Ven, Matthew Craddock, George Harwood, Increase Nowell, Richard Perry, Richard Bellingham, Nathaniel Wright, Samuel Vassall, Theophilus Eaton, Thomas Goffe, Thomas Adams, John Brown, Samuel Brown, Thomas Hutchins, William Vassall, William Pincheon, and George Foxcroft, their Heirs and Assigns for ever, to the only Use and Behoof of the said Sir Henry Roswell, Sir John Young, Sir Richard Salstonstall, Thomas Southcott, John Humphreys, John Endicott, Simon Whetcombe, Isaac Johnson, Samuel Aldersey, John Ven, Matthew Craddock, George Harwood, Increase Nowell, Richard Perry, Richard Bellingham, Nathaniel Wright, Samuel Vassall, Theophilus Eaton, Thomas Goffe, Thomas Adams, John Brown, Samuel Brown, Thomas Hutchins, William Vassall, William Pincheon, and George Foxcroft, their Heirs and Assigns for evermore, to be holden of our Royal Grandfather, his Heirs and Successors, as of his Mannor of *East Greenwich* in the County of *Kent*, within the Realm of *England*, in free and common soccage, and not in Capite, nor by Knight's service: And also yielding and paying therefore to our said Royal Grandfather, his Heirs and Successors, the fifth part only of all the Oar of Gold and Silver, which from Time to Time, and at all Times hereafter should be gotten, had, or obtained for all Services, Exactions and Demands whatsoever: Provided always, and his Majesty's express Will and Meaning was, that only one fifth part of all the gold and silver Oar above-mentioned in the whole, and no more should be answered, reserv'd, or payable unto our said Royal Grandfather, his Heirs and Successors, by colour or vertue of the said last mentioned

Letters

Letters Patents, the double Reservation, or Recitals  
 aforesaid, any thing contain'd therein notwithstanding.  
 And to the end that the affairs and Business which from  
 Time to Time should happen and arise concerning the  
 said Lands, and the Plantations of the same might be  
 the better manag'd and order'd, and for the good go-  
 vernment thereof; Our said Royal Grandfather King  
*Charles* the First did by his said Letters Patents create  
 and make the said Sir *Henry Roswell*, Sir *John Young*,  
 Sir *Richard Saltonstall*, *Thomas Southcott*, *John Hum-*  
*phreys*, *John Endicott*, *Simon Whercombe*, *Isaac Johnson*,  
*Samuel Aldersey*, *John Ven*, *Matthew Craddock*, *George*  
*Harwood*, *Increase Nowell*, *Richard Perry*, *Richard Bel-*  
*lingham*, *Nuthaniel Wright*, *Samuel Vassall*, and *Theo-*  
*philus Eaton*, *Thomas Giffe*, *Thomas Adams*, *John*  
*Brown*, *Samuel Brown*, *Thomas Hutchins*, *William*  
*Vassall*, *William Pincheon*, and *George Foxcroft*, and  
 all such others as should thereafter be admitted and made  
 free of the company and society therein altermentioned,  
 one Body corporate and politick in Fact and Name, by  
 the Name of, *The Governour and Company of the Massa-*  
*chusetts Bay in New England*; and did grant unto them  
 and their successors, divers Powers, Liberties, and Pri-  
 vileges, as in, and by the said Letters Patents may more  
 fully and at large appear: And whereas the said Gover-  
 nour and Company of the *Massachusetts Bay in New*  
*England*, by vertue of the said Letters Patents did settle  
 a Colony of the *English* in the said parts of *America*,  
 and divers good subjects of this Kingdom encouraged  
 and invited by the said Letters Patents, did transport  
 themselves and their Effects into the same, whereby the  
 said Plantation did become very populous, and divers  
 Counties, Towns, and Places were created, erected,  
 made, and set forth, or designed within the said parts  
 of *America*, by the said Governour and Company for  
 the Time being: And whereas in the said Term of the  
*Holy Trinity*, in the 36th Year of the Reign of our  
 dearest Uncle King *Charles II.* a Judgment was given  
 in our Court of *Chancery* then sitting at *Westminster*,  
 upon a Writ of *scire facias*, brought and prosecuted in  
 the said Court against the Governour and Company of  
 the *Massachusetts Bay in New England*, that the said  
 Letters Patents of our said Royal Grandfather King  
*Charles*



*Charles the First*, bearing Date at *Westminster* the 4th Day of *March*, in the Fourth Year of his Reign, made and granted to the said Governour and Company of the *Massachusetts Bay* in *New England*, and the Enrollment of the same, should be cancell'd, vacated and annihilated, and should be brought into the said Court to be cancell'd (as in and by the said Judgment remaining upon Record in the said Court, doth more at large appear) : And whereas several persons employ'd as Agents in behalf of our said Colony of the *Massachusetts-Bay* in *New-England*, have made their humble Application unto us, That we would be graciously pleased by our Royal Charter, to incorporate our Subjects in our said Colony, and to grant and confirm unto them such Powers, Privileges and Franchises as in our Royal Wisdom should be thought most conducing to our Interest and Service, and to the Welfare and happy State of our Subjects in *New-England* ; and we being graciously pleased to gratify our said Subjects, and also to the end our good Subjects within our Colony of *New Plymouth* in *New-England*, aforesaid, may be brought under such a Form of Government, as may put them in a better Condition of Defence ; and considering as well the granting unto them as unto our Subjects in the said Colony of the *Massachusetts-Bay*, our Royal Charter, with reasonable Powers and Privileges, will much tend, not only to the Safety, but to the flourishing Estate of our Subjects in the said Parts of *New England*, and also to the advancing of the Ends for which the said Plantations were first encourag'd ; Of our special Grace, certain Knowledge, and mere Motion, have will'd and ordain'd, and we do by these Presents for us, our Heirs and Successors, will and ordain, That the Factories and Colonies, commonly called and known by the Names of the Colony of the *Massachusetts Bay*, and Colony of *New-Plymouth*, the Province of *Main*, the Territories call'd *Acadia*, or *Nova Scotia* ; and that all the Tract of Land lying between the said Territories of *Nova Scotia* and the said Province of *Main*, be erected, united and incorporated ; and we do by these Presents unite, erect and incorporate the same into one real Province, by Name of our Province of the *Massachusetts Bay* in  
New-

*New-England*, and of our especial Grace, certain Knowledge, and mere Motion, we have given and granted, and by these Presents for us, our Heirs and Successors, do give and grant unto our good Subjects, the Inhabitants of our said Province, or Territory of the *Massachusetts Bay*, and their Successors, all that part of *New-England* in *America*, lying and extending from the great River, commonly call'd *Monomack* alias *Merimack*, on the North part, and from three Miles Northward of the said River to the Atlantick, or Western Sea or Ocean, on the South part, and all the Lands and Hereditaments whatsoever, lying within the Limits aforesaid, and extending as far as the outermost Points or Promontories of Land call'd *Cape Codd*, and *Cape Mallabar*, North and South, and in Latitude, Breadth, and in Length and Longitude, of and with all the Breadth and Compass aforesaid, throughout the main Land there, from the said *Atlantick* or Western Sea, and Ocean on the East part, towards the *South-Sea*, or Westward as far as our Colonies of *Rhode-Island*, *Connecticut*, and the *Narrhaganset* Country; and also all that part and portion of main Land, beginning at the Entrance of *Piscataqua Harbour*, and so to pass up the same into the River of *Newichwannick*, and through the same into the furthest Head thereof, and from thence North-westward, till one Hundred and Twenty Miles be finished, and from *Piscataqua Harbour* Mouth aforesaid, North-eastward along the Sea-Coast to *Sagadehock*; and from the period of one Hundred and 20 Miles aforesaid, to cross over Land to the One Hundred and Twenty Miles, before reckon'd up, into the Land of *Piscataqua Harbour*, through *Newichwannick* River, and also the North half of the Isles of *Shoals*, together with the Isles of *Capawock* and *Nantucket*, near *Cape Codd*, aforesaid; and all the Lands and Hereditaments lying and being in the Country or Territory commonly call'd *Acadia*, or *Nova Scotia*; and all those Lands and Hereditaments lying and extending between the said Country or Territory of *Nova Scotia*, and the said River of *Sagadehock*, or any part thereof, and all Lands, Grounds, Places, Soils, Woods and Wood-grounds, Havens, Ports, Rivers, Waters, and other Hereditaments and Premises whatsoever, lying within the said

Bounds

Bounds and Limits aforesaid, and every part and parcel thereof; and also all Islands and Islets lying within Ten Leagues directly opposite to the main Land within the said Bounds, and all Mines and Minerals, as well Royal Mines of Gold and Silver, as other Mines and Minerals whatsoever in the said Lands and Premises, or any part thereof. To have and to hold the said Territories, Tracts, Countries, Lands, Hereditaments, and all and singular other the Premises, with these and every of these Appurtenances to our said Subjects, the Inhabitants of our said Province of the *Massachusetts-Bay* in *New-England*, and their Successors, to their only proper Use and Behoof for evermore, to be holden of us, our Heirs and Successors, as of our Mannors of *East-Greenwich*, in the County of *Kent*, by Fealty only in free and common soccage, yeilding and paying therefore yearly to us, our Heirs and Successors, the fifth part of all gold and silver Oar and precious Stones, which shall from time to time, and at all times hereafter happen to be found, gotten, had and obtained in any of the said Lands and Premises, or within any part thereof: Provided nevertheless, and we do for us, our Heirs and Successors, grant and ordain, that all and every such Lands, Tenements and Hereditaments, and all other Estates, which any person or persons, or Bodies politick, or corporate Towns, Villages, Colleges or Schools, do hold and enjoy, or ought to hold and enjoy, within the Bounds aforesaid, by or under any Grant or Estates, duly made and granted by any general Court formerly held, or by Virtue of the Letters Patents herein before recited, or by any other lawful Right or Title whatsoever, shall be by such Person and Persons, Bodies politick and corporate, Towns, Villages, Colleges or Schools, their respective Heirs, Successors and Assigns, for ever hereafter held and enjoy'd, according to the Purport and Intent of such respective Grant, under and subject nevertheless to the Rents and Services thereby reserv'd or made payable, any Matter or Thing whatsoever to the contrary notwithstanding; and provided also, That nothing herein contained shall extend, or be understood or taken, to impeach or prejudice any Right, Title, Interest or Demand, which *Samuel Allen* of *London*,  
Merchant,



Merchant, claiming from and under *John Mason*, Esq; deceas'd, or any other Person or Persons, hath or have, or claimeth to have, hold or enjoy, of, into or out of any Part or Parts of the Premises situate within the Limits abovementioned; but that the said *Samuel Allen*, and all and every such Person and Persons, may and shall have, hold, and enjoy the same, in such manner (and no other than) as if these Presents had not been or made. It being our further Will and Pleasure, That no Grants or Conveyances of any Lands, Tenements or Hereditaments to any Towns, Colleges, Schools of Learning, or to any private Person or Persons shall be judg'd or taken, to be voided or prejudiced, for, or by reason of any Want or Defect of Form, but that the same stand and remain in force and be maintain'd and adjudg'd, and have Effect in such manner, as the same should or ought before the time of the said recited Judgment, according to the Laws and Rules then and there usually practis'd and allow'd. And we do further, for us, our Heirs and Successors, will, establish and ordain, That from henceforth for ever, there shall be one Governour, one Lieutenant, or Deputy-Governour, and one Secretary of our said Province or Territory, to be from time to time appointed and commissioned by us, our Heirs and Successors, and eight and Twenty Assistants, or Counsellors, to be advising and assisting to the Governour of our said Province or Territory for the Time being, as by these Presents is hereafter directed and appointed; which said Counsellors or Assistants are to be constituted, elected and chosen, in such Form and Manner, as hereafter in these Presents is express'd. And for the better Execution of our Royal Pleasure and Grant in this behalf, We do by these Presents, for us, our Heirs and Successors, nominate, ordain, make and constitute our Trully and Well-beloved *Simon Broadstreet*, *John Richards*, *Nathaniel Salsford*, *Wait Winthrop*, *John Phillips*, *James Russel*, *Samuel Sewall*, *Samuel Appleton*, *Bartholomew Gedney*, *John Hathorn*, *Elijah Hutchinson*, *Robert Pike*, *Jonathan Corwin*, *John Folliffe*, *Adam Winthrop*, *Richard Niddlecot*, *John Ester*, *Peter Serjeant*, *Joseph Lynd*, *Samuel Heymar*, *Stephen Mason*, *Thomas Hinkley*, *William Bradford*, *John Walley*, *Barnabas Lothron*, *Job Alcot*, *Samuel Daniel*,

*Daniel*, and *Silvanus Davies*, Esqs, the first and present Counsellors or Assistants of our said Province, to continue in their said respective Offices of Trusts of Counsellors or Assistants, until the last *Wednesday* in *May*, which shall be in the Year of our Lord 1693, and until other Counsellors or Assistants shall be chosen and appointed in their stead, in such manner as in these Presents is expressed. And we do further, by these Presents, constitute and appoint our Trusty and Well-beloved *Isaac Addington*, Esq; to be our first and present Secretary of our said Province, during our Pleasure. And our Will and Pleasure is, That the Governour of our said Province for the Time being, shall have Authority, from time to time, at his Direction, to assemble and call together the Counsellors or Assistants of our said Province for the time being; and that the said Governour, with the said Assistants or Counsellors, or seven of them at the least, shall and may, from time to time, hold and keep a Council for the ordering and directing the Affairs of our said Province. And further, we will, and by these Presents for us, our Heirs and Successors, do ordain and grant, that there shall and may be convened, held and kept by the Governour for the time being, upon every last *Wednesday* in the Month of *May* every Year for ever, and at all such other times as the Governour of our said Province shall think fit, and appoint, a great and general Court or Assembly; which said great and general Court or Assembly shall consist of the Governour and Council or Assistants for the time being, and of such Freeholders of our said Province or Territory, as shall be from time to time elected or deputed by the major part of the Freeholders, and other Inhabitants of the respective Towns or Places, who shall be present at such Elections, each of the said Towns and Places being hereby impowered to elect and depute two persons, and no more, to serve for, and represent them respectively in the said great and general Court or Assembly; To which great and general Court or Assembly to be held aforesaid, we do hereby for us, our Heirs and Successors, give and grant full Power and Authority from time to time to direct, appoint and declare what Number each County, Town and Place shall elect and depute, to serve for, and represent

sent them respectively in the said great and general Court or Assembly. Provided always, that no Freeholder, or other Person, shall have a Vote in the Election of Members to serve in any great and general Court or Assembly, to be held as aforesaid, who at the time of such Election shall not have an Estate of Freehold in Land within our said Province or Territory, to the Value of Forty Shillings *per Annum* at the least, or other Estate of Fifty pounds *Sterling*; and that every person who shall be so elected, shall, before he sit or act in the said great and general Court or Assembly, take the Oaths mentioned in an Act of Parliament, made in the first Year of our Reign, entitled, *An Act for Abrogating of the Oaths of Allegiance and Supremacy, and appointing other Oaths, and thereby appointed to be taken instead of the Oaths of Allegiance and Supremacy*: and shall make, repeat, and subscribe the Declaration mentioned in the said Acts, before the Governour, or Lieutenant, or Deputy-governour, or any Two of the Assistants for the Time being, who shall be thereunto authorized and appointed by our said Governour. And that the Governour for the Time being, shall have full Power and Authority, from time to time, as he shall judge necessary, to adjourn, prorogue and dissolve all great and general Courts or Assemblies, met and convened as aforesaid. And our Will and Pleasure is, and we do hereby, for us, our Heirs and Successors, grant, establish and ordain, That yearly, once in every Year, for ever hereafter, the aforesaid Number of Eight and Twenty Counsellors or Assistants, shall be by the general Court or Assembly newly chosen: That is to say, Eighteen at least of the Inhabitants of, or Proprietors of Lands within the Territory formerly called *The Colony of the Massachusetts Bay*, and four at the least of the Inhabitants of, or Proprietors of Lands within the Territories formerly called *New-Plymouth*; and three at the least of the Inhabitants of, or Proprietors of Land within the Territory formerly call'd *The Province of Main*, and one at the least of the Inhabitants of, or Proprietors of Lands, within the Territory lying between the River of *Sadagabuck* and *Nova Scotia*; and that the said Counsellors or Assistants, or any of them, shall or may at any time hereafter be removed or displaced from



from their respective Places or Trust of Counsellors or Assistants, or any of them, shall or may at any time hereafter be remov'd or displac'd from their respective Places or Trust of Counsellors or Assistants, by any great or general Court or Assembly, and that if any of the said Counsellors or Assistants shall happen to die, or be remov'd, as aforesaid, before the general Day of Election, that then, and in every such case, the great and general Court or Assembly, at their first sitting, may proceed to a new Election of one or more Counsellors or Assistants, in the room or place of such Counsellors or Assistants so dying or remov'd. And we do further grant and ordain, that it shall and may be lawful for the said Governour, with the advice and consent of the Counsel or Assistants, from time to time to nominate and appoint Judges, Commissioners of *Oyer and Terminer*, Sheriffs, Provosts, Marshals, Justices of the Peace, and other Officers, to our Council and Courts of Justice belonging: Provided always, that no such Nomination or Appointment of Officers, be made without Notice first given, or Summons issued out seven Days before such Nomination or Appointment unto such of the said Counsellors or Assistants as shall be at that time residing within our said Province. And our Will and Pleasure is, that the Governour, and Lieutenant or Deputy-Governour, and Counsellors or Assistants for the time being, and all other Officers to be appointed or chosen, as aforesaid, shall, before the undertaking the Execution of their Offices and Places respectively, take their severall and respective Oaths for the due and faithful Performance of their Duties in their severall and respective Offices and Places; and also the Oaths appointed by the said Act of Parliament made in the first Year of our Reign, to be taken instead of the Oaths of Allegiance and Supremacy, and shall make, repeat and subscribe the Declaration intencion'd in the said Act, before such person or persons, as are by these Presents herein after appointed: That is to say, the Governour of our said Province or Territory, for the time being, shall take the said Oaths, and make, repeat and subscribe the said Declaration before the Lieutenant or Deputy-Governour; or, in his Absence, before any two or more of the said Persons hereby nominated and appoint-

appointed the present Counsellors or Assistants of our said Province or Territory, to whom we do by these Presents give full Power and Authority to give and administer the same to our said Governour accordingly; and after our said Governour shall be sworn, and shall have subscribed the said Déclaration, that then our Lieutenant or Deputy-governour, for the time being, and the Counsellors or Assistants before by these Presents nominated and appointed, shall take the said Oaths, and make, repeal and subscribe the said Declaration before our said Governour; and that every such person or persons, as shall (at any time of the Annual Elections, or otherwise upon Death or Removal) be appointed to be the new Counsellors or Assistants, and all other Officers to be hereafter chosen from time to time, shall take the Oaths to their respective Offices and Places belonging; and also the said Oaths appointed by the said Act of Parliament, to be taken instead of the said Oaths of Allegiance and Supremacy, and shall make, repeal and subscribe the Declaration mentioned in the said Act, before the Governour or Lieutenant-governour, or any two or more Counsellors or Assistants, or such other person or persons as shall be appointed thereunto by the Governour for the time being; to whom we do therefore by these Presents, give full Power and Authority from time to time, to give and administer the same respectively, according to our true Meaning herein before declar'd, without any Commission or further Warrant, to be had and obtain'd from us, our Heirs and Successors in that behalf. And our Will and Pleasure is, and we do hereby require and command, that all and every person and persons hereafter by us, our Heirs and Successors, nominated and appointed to the respective Offices of Governour, or Lieutenant, or Deputy-governour, and Secretary of our said Province or Territory (which said Governour, or Lieutenant, or Deputy-governour, and Secretary of our said Province or Territory for the time being; we do hereby reserve full Power and Authority to us, our Heirs and Successors, to nominate and appoint accordingly) shall, before he or they be admitted to the Execution of their respective Offices, take as well the Oaths for the due and faithful performance of the said Offices respectively,

as also the Oath appointed by the said Act of Parliament, made in the first Year of our Reign, to be taken instead of the said Oaths of Allegiance and Supremacy, and shall also make, repeat and subscribe the Declaration appointed by the said Act in such manner, and before such persons as aforesaid. And further, our Will and Pleasure is, and we do hereby for us, our Heirs and Successors, grant, establish and ordain, That all and every of the Subjects of us, our Heirs and Successors, which shall come to and inhabit within our said Province and Territory, and every of their Children which shall happen to be born there, or on the Seas in going thither, or returning from thence, shall have and enjoy all Liberties and Immunities of free and natural Subjects within any of the Dominions of us, our Heirs and Successors, to all Intents, Constructions and purposes whatsoever, as if they and every of them were born within this our Realm of *England*. And for the greater Ease and Encouragement of our loving Subjects, inhabiting our said Province or Territory of the *Massachusetts Bay*, and of such as shall come to inhabit there, we do by these presents for us, our Heirs and Successors, grant, establish and ordain, that for ever hereafter, there shall be a Liberty of Conscience allow'd in the Worship of God to all Christians (except Papists) inhabiting, or which shall inhabit or be resident within our said Province or Territory; and we do hereby grant and ordain, that the Governour, or Lieutenant or Deputy-governour of our said Province or Territory for the Time being, or either of them, or any two or more of the Council or Assistants for the Time being, as shall be thereunto appointed by the said Governour, shall and may at all Times, and from Time to Time hereafter, have full Power and Authority to administer and give the Oaths appointed by the said Acts of Parliament, made in the First Year of our Reign, to be taken instead of the Oaths of *Allegiance* and *Supremacy*, to all and to every person and persons which are now inhabiting or residing within our said Province or Territory, or which shall at any Time or Times hereafter go or pass thither. And we do of our further Grace, certain Knowledge, and mere Motion, grant, establish and ordain, for us, our Heirs and



and Successors, that the great and general Court or Assembly of our said Province or Territory for the time being, convened as aforesaid, shall for ever have full Power and Authority to erect and constitute Judicatories and Courts of Record, or other Courts, to be held in the Name of us, our Heirs and Successors, for the hearing, trying and determining of all manner of Crimes, Offences, Pleas, Processes, Complaints, Actions, Matters, Causes, and Things whatsoever, arising or happening within our said Province or Territory, or between Persons inhabiting or residing there, whether the same be criminal or civil, and whether the said Crimes be capital or not capital, and whether the said Pleas be real, personal, or mixt, and for the awarding and making out of Executions thereupon; to which Courts and Judicatories, we do hereby for us, our Heirs and Successors, give and grant full power and authority, from Time to time to administer Oaths for the discovery of Truth in any Matter in controversy, or depending before them; and we do for us, our Heirs and Successors, grant, establish and ordain, that the Governour of our said Province or Territories for the Time being, with the Council or Assistants, may do, execute or perform all that is necessary for the Probate of Wills, and granting of Administrations for, touching, or concerning any Interest or Estate which any person or persons shall have within our said Province or Territory. And whereas we judge it necessary, that all our Subjects should have liberty to appeal to us, our Heirs and Successors, in cases that may deserve the same, we do by these Presents ordain, that in case either Party shall not rest satisfied with the Judgment or Sentence of any Judicatories or Courts within our said Province or Territory in any personal Action, wherein the Matter in difference doth exceed the Value of Three Hundred pounds Sterling, that then he or they may appeal to us, our Heirs and Successors, in our or their Privy Council, provided, that such appeal be made within fourteen Days after the Sentence or Judgment given, and that before such appeal be allow'd, security be given by the party or parties appealing, in the Value of the Matters in difference, to pay or answer the Debt or Damages for the which Judgment or Sentence is given,

with such costs and damages as shall be awarded by us, our Heirs or Successors, in case the Judgment or Sentence be affirmed: And provided also, that no Execution shall be laid or suspended, by reason of such Appeal to us, our Heirs and Successors, in our or their privy-council, so as the party suing, or taking out Execution, do in the like manner give security to the Value of the Matter in difference, to make Restitution in case the said Judgment or Sentence be reversed or annulled upon the said Appeal. And do further, for us, our Heirs and Successors, give and grant to the said Governour, and the great and general Court or Assembly of our said Province or Territory, for the Time being, full Power and Authority, from Time to Time, to make, ordain and establish all manner of wholsom and reasonable Orders, Laws, Statutes and Ordinances, Directions and Instructions, either with Penalties or without, (so as the same be not repugnant or contrary to the Laws of this our Realm of *England*) as they shall judge to be for the good and Welfare of our said Province or Territory, and for the Government and ordering thereof, and of the People inhabiting, or who shall inhabit the same, and for the necessary support and defence of the Government thereof. And we do for us, our Heirs and Successors, give and grant that the said general Court or Assembly shall have full Power and Authority to Name and settle annually, all civil Officers within the said Province, such Officers excepted, the Election and Constitution of whom we have by these presents reserv'd to us, our Heirs and Successors, or to the Governour of our said Province for the Time being; and to set forth the several duties, powers and limits of every such Officer, to be appointed by the said general Court or Assembly, and the Forms of such Oaths not repugnant to the Laws and Statutes of this our Realm of *England*, as shall be respectively administred unto them for the execution of their several Offices and Places, and also to impose Fines, Mulcts, Imprisonments, and other Punishments; and to impose and levy proportionable and reasonable Assessments, Rates and Taxes upon the Estates and Persons of all and every the Proprietors or Inhabitants of our said Province or Territory, to be issued and dispos'd of by Warrant, under the Hand of  
the

the Governour of our said Province for the Time being, with the Advice and Consent of the Council, for our Service in the necessary defence and support of our Government of our said Province or Territory, and the Protection and Preservation of the Inhabitants there, according to such Acts as are or shall be in Force within our said Province, and to dispose Matters and Things whereby our Subjects and Inhabitants of our said Province may be religiously, peaceably, and civilly govern'd, protected, and defended, so as their good Life and orderly Conversation may win the *Indians*, Natives of the Country, to the Knowledge and Obedience of the only and true God and Saviour of Mankind, and the Christian Faith, which his Royal Majesty our Royal Grandfather King *Charles* the first, in his said Letters Patents declared was his Royal Intentions, and the Adventurers free Profession to be the principal End of the said Plantation. And for the better securing and maintaining Liberty of Conscience hereby granted to all Persons, at any Time being and residing within our said Province or Territory as aforesaid, willing, commanding and requiring, and by these Presents, for us, our Heirs and Successors, ordaining, and appointing, that all such Orders, Laws, Statutes and Ordinances, Instructions and Directions, as shall be so made and published under our Seal of our said Province or Territory, shall be carefully and duly observ'd, kept and perform'd, and put in Execution, according to the true Intent and Meaning of these Presents: Provided always, and we do by these Presents for us, our Heirs and Successors, establish and ordain, that in the framing and passing of all such Orders, Laws, Statutes and Ordinances, and in all Elections and Acts of Government whatsoever, to be passed, made, or done by the said General Court or Assembly, or in Council, the Governour of our said Province or Territory of the *Massachusetts-Bay* in *New-England* for the Time being, shall have the Negative Voice: And that without his Consent or Approbation signified and declared in Writing, no such Orders, Laws, Statutes, Ordinances, Elections, or other Acts of Government whatsoever, so to be made, passed, or done by the said General Assembly, or in Council, shall be of any Force, Effect, or Validity, any



Thing herein contained to the contrary in any wise notwithstanding; and we do for us, our heirs and successors, establish and ordain, that the said Orders, Laws, Statutes and Ordinances be by the first Opportunity after the making thereof, sent or transmitted unto us, our heirs and successors, under the publick seal, to be appointed by us, for our or their Approbation, or Disallowance, and that in case all, or any of them shall at any Time within the space of three Years, next after the same shall have been presented to us, our heirs and successors, in our or their Privy Council, be so disallowed and rejected, and so signified by us, our heirs and successors, under our or their sign manual and signet, or by Order in our or their Privy Council, unto the Governour for the Time being, then such and so many of them as shall be so disallowed and rejected, shall thenceforth cease and determine, and become utterly void, and of none Effect. Provided always that in case we, our heirs or successors, shall not within the Term of three Years after the presenting of such Orders, Laws, Statutes, or Ordinances, as aforesaid, signify our or their Disallowance of the same, then the said Orders, Laws, Statutes, or Ordinances shall be and continue in full Force and Effect, according to the true Intent and Meaning of the same, until the Expiration thereof, or, that the same shall be repealed by the general Assembly of our said province for the Time being. Provided also, that it shall and may be lawful for the said Governour and general Assembly, to make, or pass any grant of lands lying within the Bounds of the Colonies formerly called the Colonies of the *Massachusetts Bay*, and *New Plimouth*, and Province of *Maine*, in such manner as heretofore they might have done by vertue of any former Charter or Letters Patents; which grants of lands within the bounds aforesaid, we do hereby will and ordain to be and continue for ever of full Force and Effect, without our further approbation or consent, and so as nevertheless, and it is our Royal will and pleasure, that no grant, or grants of any lands lying, or extending from the River of *Sagadahoc* to the *Gulph* of *St. Laurence* and *Canada* Rivers, and to the main Sea Northward and Eastward,

to be made or pass'd by the Governor and general Assembly of our said province, be of any Force, Validity, or Effect, until we, our heirs and successors, shall have signified our or their Approbation of the same: And we do by these presents for us, our heirs and successors, grant, establish, and ordain, that the Governour of our said province or territory for the Time being, shall have full power by himself, or by any chief Commander, or other Officer, or Officers, to be appointed by him from Time to Time, to train, instruct, exercise, and govern the Militia there: And for the special defence and safety of our said province or territory, to assemble in martial Array, and put in warlike posture the Inhabitants of our said province or territory, and to lead and conduct them, and with them to encounter, expulse, repel, resist, and pursue by Force of Arms, as well by sea as by land, within, or without the limits of our said province or territory, and also, to kill, slay, destroy, and conquer, by all fitting ways, enterprizes, and means whatsoever, all and every such person and persons, as shall at any Time hereafter attempt, or enterprize the Destruction, Invasion, Detriment, or Annoyance of our said province or territory; and to use and exercise the Law martial in Time of actual War, Invasion, or Rebellion, as Occasion shall necessarily require; and also from Time to Time to erect Forts, and to fortify any place or places within our said province or territory, and the same to furnish with all necessary Ammunition, provision and stores of War for Offence or Defence, and to commit from Time to Time the custody and government of the same to such person or persons as to him shall seem meet; and the said Forts and Fortifications to demolish at his pleasure, and to take and surprize by all ways and means whatsoever, all and every such person or persons, with their ships, arms, ammunition, and other goods, as shall in a hostile manner invade, or attempt the invading, conquering, or annoying of our said province or territory; provided always, and we do by these presents, for us, our heirs and successors, grant, establish, and ordain, that the said governour shall not at any Time hereafter, by virtue of any powers hereby granted, or hereafter

to be granted to him, transport any of the Inhabitants of our said province or territory, or oblige them to march out of the limits of the same without their free and voluntary consent, or the consent of the great and general Court or Assembly of our said province or territory, nor grant commissions for exercising the law martial upon any the Inhabitants of our said province or territory, without the advice and consent of the Council, or Assistants of the same; provided in the like manner, and we do by these presents, for us, our heirs and successors constitute, and ordain, that when, and as often as the Governour of our said province for the Time being, shall happen to dye, or be displac'd by us, our heirs or successors, or to be absent from his government; that then, and in any of the said cases, the Lieutenant, or Deputy-governour of our said province, for the Time being, shall have full power and authority to do, and execute all, and every such acts, matters, and things, which our Governour of our said province; for the Time being, might or could, by vertue of these our Letters Patents lawfully do, or execute, if he were personally present, until the return of the Governour so absent, or arrival, or constitution of such other Governour as shall, or may be appointed by us, our heirs, or successors in his stead: And that when, and as often as the Governour, and Lieutenant, or Deputy Governour of our said province or territory, for the Time being, shall happen to dye, or be displac'd by us, our heirs or successors, or be absent from our said province; and that there shall be no person within the said province commissioned by us, our heirs or successors, to be Governour within the same; then, and in every of the said cases, the Council or Assistants of our said province shall have full power and authority, and we do hereby give, and grant unto the said Council or Assistants of our said province, for the Time being, or the major part of them, full power and authority to do, and execute all, and every such Acts, Matters, and Things which the said Governour, or Lieutenant, or Deputy Governour of our said province or territory, for the Time being, might, or could lawfully do, or exercise, if they, or either of them were  
per-



personally present, until the Return of the Governour, or Lieutenant, or Deputy Governour so absent, or arrival, or constitution of such other Governour, or Lieutenant, or Deputy Governour, as shall and may be appointed by us, our heirs or successors, from Time to Time. Provided always, and it is hereby declared, that nothing herein shall extend, or be taken to erect, or grant, or allow the exercise of any Admiral, Court, Jurisdiction, Power, or Authority, but that the same shall be, and is hereby reserved to us and our successors, and shall from Time to Time be erected, granted, and exercised, by vertue of Commissions to be issued under the great seal of *England*, or under the seal of the High Admiral, or the Commissioners for executing the Office of High Admiral of *England*. And further, our express will and pleasure is, and we do by these presents, for us, our heirs and successors, ordain, and appoint, that these our Letters Patents shall not in any manner enure, or be taken to abridge, bar, or hinder any of our loving subjects whatsoever, to use and exercise the Trade of Fishing upon the coasts of *New England*, but that they, and any of them, shall have full and free power and liberty to continue and use their said Trade of Fishing upon the said coasts, in any of the Seas thereunto adjoyning, or any arms of the said Seas, or salt-water Rivers, where they have been wont to fish; and to build, and set upon the lands within our said Province or Colony lying waste, and not then possessed by particular proprietors, such Wharfs, Stages, and Work Houses as shall be necessary for the salting, drying, keeping, and packing of their fish, to be taken, or gotten upon that coast, and to cut down and take such Trees, and other materials there growing, or being upon any parts or places lying waste, and not then in possession of particular proprietors, as shall be needful for that purpose, and for all other necessary Easements, Helps, and Advantages, concerning the Trade of Fishing there, in such manner and form, as they have been heretofore at any Time accustomed to do, without making any wilful waste or spoil, any thing in these presents containing to the contrary notwithstanding. And lastly, for the better providing and furnishing of Masts for our Royal Navy, we do hereby reserve to us, our heirs and suc-

successors, all Trees of the Diameter of 24 Inches, and upwards, of 12 Inches from the ground, growing upon any soil, or Tract of Land within our said province or territory, not heretofore granted to any private persons; and we do restrain, and forbid all persons whatsoever, from felling, cutting, or destroying any such Trees, without the Royal Licence of us, our heirs and successors first had and obtained, upon penalty of forfeiting *One Hundred Pounds Sterling* unto us, our heirs and successors, for every such Tree so felled, cut, or destroyed, without such Licence had, or obtained in that Behalf: Any thing in these presents contain'd to the contrary notwithstanding. In Witness whereof we have caused these our Letters to be made Patents, Witness Ourselves at *Westminster*, the 7th Day of *October*, in the third Year of our Reign.

*By Writ of Privy Seal.*

*P I G O T.*






## N U M B. II.

*An Abridgment of the Platform of Church-Discipline, agreed upon by the Elders and Messengers of the Churches assembled in the Synod of Cambridge in New-England, to be presented to the Churches and General Court, for their Consideration and Acceptance in the Year 1648.*



### C H A P. I.

*Of the Form of Church-Government, and that it is one, immutable, and prescribed in the Word of God.*

§. I.  HURCH-GOVERNMENT is nothing else but the Form and Order to be observed in the Church of Christ on Earth, both as to its Constitution and all its Administrations.

§. II, III. The



§. II, III. The Parts of Church-Government are all exactly described in the Word of God; so that it is not left in the Power of Men, Officers, Churches, or any State in the World, to add, diminish, or alter any thing in it.

§. IV. The circumstances of time and place, &c. belonging to Order and Decency are not so left to Men, as that under pretence of them, they may thrust their own Inventions upon the Churches, but the Apostolical prescription is to be observed, that all Things be done decently, and in Order, and for Edification, according to the Nature of the things themselves.

## CHAP. II.

*Of the Nature of the Catholick Church in general,  
and in special of a particular Visible Church.*

§. I. The Catholick Church is the whole company of them that are elected and redeemed, and in time effectually called unto a State of Grace and Salvation in Christ.

§. II, III, IV. This Church is either *triumphant* in Heaven, or *militant* on Earth; the Church militant is invisible or visible; *invisible* comprehends all that are united to Christ by the Holy Spirit and Faith: *Visible*, such as make a publick Profession of their Faith in particular Churches.

§. V. The State of the Members of the militant visible Church, was under the Law National, but since the coming of Christ only *Congregational*, and therefore neither National, Provincial, nor Classial, (the Term *Independant* we approve not.)

§. VI. A Congregational Church, is by the Institution of Christ, a Part of the Militant Visible Church, consisting of a company of Saints by calling, united into one Body by an holy Covenant, for the publick Worship of God, and mutual Edification of one another in the Fellowship of Christ.

## C H A P. III.

*Of the Matter of the Visible Church, both in  
Respect of Quality and Quantity.*

§. I, II. The Matter of the Visible Church are Saints by calling, that is, such as understand the principles of Religion, and together with the Profession of their Repentance and Faith in the Lord Jesus Christ walk in blameless Obedience to his Commands.

§. IV. The Matter of the Church, as to its Quantity ought not to be more than may conveniently meet together in one Place, nor fewer than may conveniently carry on Church-Work.

§. V. Every particular Church has a Ministry appointed and ordained for its particular Service; the Scripture making no Mention of ordinary Officers appointed over the Catholick Church; so that there is no greater Church than a congregation which may ordinarily meet in one Place.

## C H A P. IV.

*Of the Form of the Visible Church, and of Church-Covenant.*

§. I, II, III. The Form of a particular Visible Church is the Visible Covenant, Agreement, or Consent, whereby they give up themselves to the Lord to the observing of the Ordinances of Christ together in the same Society, which is usually called the *Church-Covenant*.

§. IV. This voluntary Agreement or Covenant we conceive is in substance kept, where there is a real agreement and consent of a company of faithful Persons, to meet constantly together in one congregation, for the publick Worship of God for their mutual Edification, though they do not express it by Writing, or any particular Form of Words.

§. VI. All

§. VI. All Believers ought, as they have Opportunity to joyn to a particular Church, that they may profess their subjection to the Order and Ordinances of the Gospel, in compliance with the command of Christ, and for their own Edification; for should all Believers neglect this Duty, it might follow, that Christ should not have a visible political Church upon Earth.

## CHAP. V.

*Of the first Subject of Church-Power, or to whom Church-Power doth first belong.*

§. I. The first supreme Object of Church-power is the Lord Jesus Christ, but Ministerial, ordinary Church-Power, belongs to the Church.

§. II. Ordinary Church-Power is either Power of Office, which belongs to the Eldership; Or Power of Privilege, which belongs to the Brotherhood; the latter is given them formally by Christ, but the former can't be exercised by them, but is in them only, as they appoint the Persons to Office who are to exercise that Power.

## CHAP. VI.

*Of the Officers of a Church, and especially of Pastors and Teachers.*

§. I, II. Tho' Officers are not absolutely necessary to the Being of a Church, yet they are necessary to its Well-being, and therefore are appointed by Christ to continue to the End of the World.

§. III. These Officers are either extraordinary, as Apostles Prophets, Evangelists, who as they were called extraordinarily by Christ, so their Office ended with themselves. Ordinary Officers are Elders and Deacons.

§. IV. Of Elders (who are also in Scripture called Bishops) some attend chiefly to the Ministry of the World,



Word, as the Pastors and Teachers, others to its Rule, who are therefore called Ruling Elders.

§. V, VI. The Offices of Pastor and Teacher in the Church are distinct, the one being to attend to Exhortation, the other to Doctrine; but both are to preach, to administer the Sacraments and Church-Censures.

## C H A P. VII.

### *Of Ruling Elders and Deacons.*

§. I. Ruling Elders are not so called, to exclude the Pastors or Teachers from Ruling, because Rule is common to them all, whereas Preaching and Teaching is peculiar to the latter.

§. II. The Office of the Ruling Elder is to joyn with the Pastor and Teacher in such Acts of Rule as are distinct from the Ministry of the Word and Sacraments, as in admitting, or excluding Members by the consent of the Church, in ordaining Officers chosen by the Church, in calling the Church together on proper Occasions. In preparing Matters in private to be laid before the Church. In keeping Order in Church-Debates. In seeing that none of the Church live disorderly. In preventing and healing Offences in the Church. In feeding the Flock with a Word of Admonition. In praying over their sick Brethren, as they shall be sent for, and at other Times, as Opportunity shall serve.

§. III. The Office and Work of a Deacon is to receive the Offerings of the Church; Gifts given to the Church, and to keep the Treasury of the Church, and therewith to serve the Tables which the Church is to provide for, as the Lord's Table, the Minister's Table, and the Poor's Table, to whom they are to distribute in simplicity.

§. IV. The Office of a Deacon being limited to the care of the Temporal good Things of the Church, it extends not to the Attendance upon, and Administration

tion of the spiritual Things thereof, as the Word, Sacraments, and the like.

§. VI. These being all the Officers that Christ has appointed in the Church, all others are to be looked on as the Inventions of Men, and consequently unlawful, as Popes, Cardinals, Patriarchs, Archbishops, Lord-Bishops, Archdeacons, Officials, Commissaries, and the like.

§. VII. The Lord has appointed ancient Widows to minister in the Church, in giving Attendance to the sick, and relieving their Necessities.

## C H A P. VIII.

### *Of the Election of Church-Officers.*

§. I, II, III, IV. 'Tis requisite that before any be ordained, or chosen Officers, the Church should have Trial of their Gifts and Virtues that belong to their respective Offices, because Hands are to be laid suddenly on no Man.

§. V, VI, VII. The Right of Election is in that particular Church to whom the Officers are to minister, and as the Church has Power to constitute in Office, it follows, that in case of Scandal or Delinquency, it may remove from Office.

§. VIII. From whence it follows, that the choice of Church-Officers belongs not to the Civil Magistrate, nor to Diocesan Bishops, nor Patrons.

## C H A P. IX.

### *Ordination, by Imposition of Hands.*

§. I. Church-Officers are not only to be chosen by the Church, but to be ordained by Imposition of Hands and Prayer.

§. II. Ordination is nothing else but the solemn putting a Man into his Office, which he had a Right to

to before by Election ; so that Ordination does not constitute an Officer, nor give him the Essentials of his Office, that being done before by his Election.

§. III, IV, V. Where there are Elders in a Church, Imposition of Hands is to be perform'd by them, but where there are no Elders, it may be done by some of the Brotherhood orderly chosen thereunto by the Church; or, if the Church desire it, it may be perform'd by the Elders of other Churches.

§. VI, VII. Church-Officers are Officers to one particular Church ; so that if an Officer be discharged from his Office in that Church where he was a Minister, he may not exercise Office-power in another Church, unless he be again called to Office, which when it shall be, we know nothing to hinder, but Imposition of Hands in his Ordination ought to be used towards him again.

## C H A P. X.

### *Of the Power of the Church, and its Presbytery.*

§. I, II, III, IV. The Government of the Church is Monarchical, with Respect to Christ its Head, but with Respect to the Church itself 'tis partly Democratical, and partly Aristocratical.

§. V, VI. The Power granted by Christ to the Democracy or Brotherhood of the Church, consists in admitting Members, choosing Officers, and deposing them for Male-Administration, and in hearing, and determining Differences in the Church.

§. VII, VIII, IX. The Power granted to the Elders of the Church, is to feed and rule the Church of God, to call the Church together on weighty Occasions, to preside and keep Order in all Debates, to examine Officers or Members before they are received by the Church, to receive Accusations, and prepare them for the Churches Hearing, and to pronounce Sentence with the consent of the Church. They have Power likewise when they dismiss the People, to bless them in the Name of the Lord.



§. X, XI. From hence it appears, that in an Organic Church all Church-Acts proceed after the manner of a mix'd Administration, so as no Church-Act can be consummated without the consent both of the Elders and Brotherhood.

## C H A P. XI.

### *Of the Maintenance of Church-Officers.*

§. I, II. The Scripture declares, that they that preach the Gospel should live of the Gospel; People are not therefore left at Liberty to do, or not to do, what and when they please in this Matter, but are to look on it as their Duty to minister of their *Carnal Things* to them that labour in the Word and Doctrine, according to their Abilities, and that not as an Alms, but as a due Debt, and an Ordinance of Christ.

§. III, IV. Not only Members of Churches but the Hearers are to contribute to the preaching of the Word; if Congregations are defective in their contributions, the Deacons are to call upon them to do their Duty, if their Call suffice not, the Church is to require it of them; and if this is not sufficient to attain the End, the Magistrate is to see that the Ministry be duly provided for.

## C H A P. XII.

### *Of the Admission of Members into the Church.*

§. I, II. All that are admitted into the Church as Members, are first to be examined and tried, whether they are fit to be received into Church-Society, or not; that is, whether they have Repentance towards God, and Faith in Jesus Christ.

§. III. The weakest measure of Faith is to be accepted, and such charity and tenderness is to be used in Examinations, that the weakest Christian, if sincere, may neither be discouraged, nor excluded.

§. IV, V. A

§. IV, V. A personal and publick Confession of the manner of God's working on the Soul is both lawful and useful, and where Persons have Abilities 'tis most expedient ; but if any through Fear or other Infirmary be unable to do it, 'tis sufficient that the Elders receive private Satisfaction, and relate it in publick before the Church; they testifying their Assents thereunto.

§. VI, VII. This Profession of Faith and Repentance may be required by the Church of those who remove from other Churches to them; and from those who were born and baptized in the Church, by virtue of their Parents Relation to it; such are to be esteemed under Church-watch, and consequently subject to its admonitions and censures.

### C H A P. XIII.

*Of the Removal of Church-Members from one Church to another, and of Recommendation and Dismission.*

§. I. Church-Members may not depart from one Church to another, as they please, because such Departure tends to the Dissolution of the whole Body.

§. II. Church-Members on such an Occasion should advise with the Church, that they may have their Approbation.

§. III. If the Church judge a Member's Departure unsafe or sinful, they may not consent to it.

§. IV. Just Reasons for a Member's Removal are, (1.) If he can't continue without partaking in Sin. (2.) In case of Persecution. (3.) In case of a real want of subsistence, a Door being open for a better supply in another place.

§. V. But to separate from a Church, out of contempt of their Fellowship; or covetousness, or want of Love; or out of a spirit of contention, in Respect of some Unkindness; or for some Evil only conceived, or really in the Church, which might and should be tolerated, and healed with a spirit of Meekness; and of

which Evil the Church is not yet convinced, though himself be; for these Reasons to withdraw from publick Communion in word, in seals, or censures is unlawful and sinful.

§. VII. When a Member removes he should have Letters Testimonial, and of Dismission, and until the other Church receives him, he ceases not to be a Member of the Church he is going from.

§. VIII, IX. If a Member removes only for a time, Letters of Recommendation only are sufficient for communion with another Church.

## C H A P. XIV.

### *Of Excommunication, and other Censures.*

§. I. Church-censures are appointed by Christ for removing Offences for reclaiming offending Brethren, for deterring others from the like Offences, for vindicating the Honour of Christ, and of his Churches, and preventing the Wrath of God, which might fall upon them, if they should willfully suffer his seals to be profaned.

§. II. If an Offence be private, the Offender is to acknowledge his Fault in private; but if he refuse to do so, when admonished by his offended Brother, the offended Brother is to take one or two with him, and if he refuses them, the offended Brother is by the Mouth of the Elders to tell the Church; if he appears willing to hear the Church, but is not convinced of his Offence, as in case of Heresy, he is first to be admonish'd, whereby he is suspended from the communion at present; and if he remain obstinate, he is to be excommunicated.

§. III. But if the Offence be publick and scandalous, the Church is to cast him out at once.

§. IV, V. Offenders are to be dealt with, with great Meekness, and yet with Faithfulness: when an Offender is cast out of the Church, the faithful are to refrain from all spiritual communion with him, and from  
civil



civil communion like wife, any further than the necessary concerns of Life require.

§. VI. Excommunication does not deprive Men of their civil Rights, and therefore touches not Princes or Magistrates in Respect of civil Authority; nor does it prohibit such from hearing the Word, nor the Church from giving them occasional Admonitions.

§. VII. Penitent Offenders, though excommunicate, are to be restored.

§. VIII, IX. Members are not to separate from a Church, because of some disorderly Persons in it, when they can't get them removed; no, nor to absent themselves from the communion on that Account.

## C H A P. XV.

### *Of the Communion of Churches with one another.*

§. I, II. Churches ought to hold communion with one another; by mutual care for each other, by consulting one with another in cases of Difficulty, and by admonishing each other in case of offence; and if an offending Church will not hearken to the Admonition of the offended Church, the offended Church may acquaint other Churches with it, who may joyn in the Admonition (if they think it just); and if the offending Church continue obdurate, may pronounce in a Synod the sentence of Non communion with them. Further, Churches should hold communion, by admitting the Members of each other occasionally to the Lord's Supper; by recommending their Members at a Distance to the care of the Churches where they reside, and in case of Need, by furnishing each other with able Officers, and relieving each other's poor.

§. III, IV. When a Church is to be gather'd, the help and presence of neighbouring Churches should be desired, that they may have the Right-hand of Fellowship; and when a Church grows too numerous for one Assembly, it should propagate another by sending forth

such Members as are willing to remove, and by procuring some Officers who may incorporate with them.

## CHAP. XVI.

### *Of Synods.*

§. I. Synods are not necessary to the Being, but very often to the Well being of Churches.

§. II. The Elders and Messengers of the several Churches met together in the Name of Christ, and by Delegation from the Churches they represent, are the matter of a Synod.

§. III. Magistrates may call a Synod; or, the Churches may do it of themselves.

§. IV. It belongs to Synods, to debate and determine controversies of Faith, and cases of conscience, to give Direction from the Scriptures for the Worship of God, and good Government of the Church, and to bear Witness against corruption of Manners, and male-Administration in any particular Church; but they are not to exercise Church-censures in way of Discipline, nor any Act of Church Authority, or Jurisdiction.

§. V. The Directions and Determinations of Synods are to be received with Reverence, as far as consonant with the Word of God, not only for their Agreement with God's Word, but secondarily, for the power whereby they are made, as being an Ordinance of God appointed thereunto in his Word.

§. VI. Synods are to consist both of Elders and other Church-Members endued with Gifts, and sent by the Churches, not excluding the presence of any of the Brethren in the Churches.

## CHAP. XVII.

### *Of the Civil Magistrate's Power in Ecclesiastical Matters.*

§. I. Christians may gather themselves into Churches without the consent of the Magistrate, if it can't be had.

§. II. Church-

§. II. Church-Government is not inconsistent with the power of the civil Magistrate, but rather strengthens their Hands by encouraging the people in their obedience to them.

§. III, IV, V. Magistrates may not compel their subjects to become Church-Members, and partake of the Lord's Supper; nor meddle with the work proper to Church Officers.

§. VI, VII, VIII. The power of the Magistrate extends to the preservation of the peace of the subjects in matters of moral Righteousness and Honesty, yea, and of Godliness too; so that Idolatry, Blasphemy, Heresy, vending corrupt and pernicious opinions which destroy the Foundation; open contempt of the word preached, prophanation of the Lord's Day, disturbing the peaceable Administration and Exercise of the Worship and holy Things of God, and the like, are to be restrained and punish'd by them.

§. IX. If any Church or Churches grow Schismatical, rending themselves from the communion of other Churches, or walk contrary to the Rule of the Word; the Magistrate in such case is to put forth his coercive power, as the matter shall require.







# N U M B. III.

*Heads of Agreement, assented to  
by the United Ministers, for-  
merly call'd Presbyterian and  
Congregational.*



## I. *Of Churches and Church-Members.*

1.



WE acknowledge our Lord Jesus Christ to have one *Catholick Church, or Kingdom*, comprehending all that are united to him, whether in Heaven or Earth; and do conceive the whole multitude of visible Believers, and their Infant-seed (commonly call'd the *Catholick Visible Church*) to belong to

Christ's spiritual Kingdom in this World: But for the Notion of a *Catholick Visible Church* here, as it signifies its having been collected into any formed Society, under

a visible humane Head on Earth, whether one person singly, or many collectively, we, with the rest of Protestants, unanimously disclaim it.

2. We agree, that particular societies of visible Saints, who, under Christ their Head, are statedly joyned together, for ordinary communion with one another in all the Ordinances of Christ, are *particular Churches*, and are to be owned by each other, as instituted Churches of Christ, though differing in *Apprehensions* and *Practice* in some lesser Things.

3. That none shall be admitted as Members, in order to communion in all the special Ordinances of the Gospel, but such persons as are knowing, and sound in the *fundamental Doctrines of the Christian Religion*, without scandal in their Lives; and to a Judgment regulated by the Word of God, are persons of visible Holiness and Honesty; credibly professing cordial subjection to Jesus Christ.

4. A competent number of such *visible Saints*, (as before described) do become the capable subjects of stated communion in all the *special Ordinances of Christ* upon their mutual declared consent and agreement to *walk together therein according to Gospel-Rule*. In which Declaration, different Degrees of *Expliciteness*, shall no ways hinder such Churches from owning each other, as instituted Churches.

5. Though *parochial Bounds* be not of divine Right, yet for common Edification, the Members of a *particular Church* ought (as much as conveniently may be) to live near one another.

6. That each *particular Church* hath Right to use their own Officers; and being furnished with such as are *duly qualified* and *ordained* according to the Gospel-Rule, hath Authority from Christ for exercising *Government*, and of enjoying all the *Ordinances of Worship* within itself.

7. In the Administration of *Church Power*, it belongs to the *Pastors* and other Elders of every particular Church, if such there be to *rule and govern*, and to the Brotherhood to *consent* according to the *Rule of the Gospel*.

8. That all Professors, as before described, are bound in Duty, as they have opportunity to joyn themselves as  
fixed

*fixed Members* of some particular Church; their thus joyning, being part of their professed subjection to the *Gospel of Christ*, and an instituted Means of their Establishment and Edification; whereby they are under the *pastoral care*, and in case of *scandalous* or *offensive walking*, may be authoritatively admonished or censured for their Recovery, and for vindication of the *Truth*, and the *Church* professing it.

9. That a *visible Professor* thus joined to a *particular Church* ought to continue stedfast with the said Church; and not forsake the Ministry, and Ordinances there *dispensed*, without an orderly *seeking* a *Recommendation* unto another Church, which ought to be given, when the case of the person apparently requires it.

## II. Of the Ministry.

1. **WE** agree that the *Ministerial Office* is instituted by Jesus Christ for the gathering, guiding, edifying and governing of his Church; and to continue to the End of the World.

2. They who are called to this *Office* ought to be endowed with *competent Learning* and *ministerial Gifts*, as also with the Grace of God, sound in Judgment, not Novices in the Faith and Knowledge of the Gospel; without scandal, of holy conversation, and such as *devote* themselves to the work and service thereof.

3. That ordinarily none shall be ordained to the Work of this Ministry, but such as are *called* and *chosen* thereunto by a particular Church.

4. That in so great and weighty a Matter as the calling and chusing a *Pastor*, we judge it ordinarily requisite, that every such Church consult and advise with the *Pastors* of neighbouring congregations.

5. That after such *Advice* the person consulted about, being chosen by the Brotherhood of that *particular Church* over which he is to be set, and he accepting, be duly ordained and *set apart* to his Office over them; wherein 'tis ordinarily requisite, that the *Pastors* of neighbouring Congregations concur with the *preaching Elder* or *Elders*, if such there be.

6. That



6. That whereas such *Ordination* is only intended for such as *never before had been* ordained to the *ministerial Office*; if any judge, *that in the case also* of the *Removal* of one *formerly ordained*, to a new station, or *pastoral Charge*, there ought to be a like, solemn *Recommending* him and his *Labours to the Grace and Blessing of God*; no different sentiments or practice herein shall be any occasion of *Contention* or *breach of Communion* among us.

7. It is expedient, that they who enter on the *Work of preaching the Gospel*, be not only qualified for *Communion of Saints*; but also that, except in *Cases extraordinary*, they give proof of their *Gifts and Fitness* for the said *Work*, unto the *Pastors of Churches*, of *known Abilities* to discern and judge of their *Qualifications*; that they may be sent forth with solemn *Approbation* and *Prayer*; which we judge needful, that no Doubt may remain concerning their being called unto the *Work*; and for preventing (as much as in us lieth) ignorant and rash Intruders.

### III. Of Censures.

1. **A**S it cannot be avoided, but that in the purest Churches on Earth there will sometimes Offences and Scandals arise, by Reason of Hypocrisy and prevailing corruption; so Christ hath made it the Duty of every Church, to reform itself by spiritual Remedies appointed by him to be applied in all such cases, viz. *Admonition* and *Excommunication*.

2. *Admonition*, being the rebuking of an offending Member, in order for conviction, is in case of private Offences, to be perform'd according to the Rule in *Matth. xviii. 15, 16, 17.* and in case of publick Offences, openly before the Church, as the Honour of the Gospel, and the Nature of the Scandal shall require: And, if either of the *Admonitions* take place for the Recovery of the *fallen person*, all further proceedings in a Way of *Censure* are thereon to cease, and *satisfaction* to be declared accordingly.

3. When

3. When all due Means are used, according to the *Order of the Gospel*, for the restoring an *offending and scandalous Brother*, and he, notwithstanding remains impenitent, the censure of *Excommunication* is to be proceeded unto; wherein the *Pastor* and other *Elders* (if there be such) are to lead and go before the *Church*; and the *Brotherhood* to give their consent in a Way of Obedience unto Christ, and to the *Elders*, as over them in the Lord.

4. It may sometimes come to pass, that a *Church-Member*, not otherwise scandalous may *sinfully withdraw*, and divide himself from the *Communion of the Church* to which he belongeth: In which case, when all *due Means* for the reducing him, prove ineffectual, he having hereby cut himself off from *that Churches Communion*; the Church may justly esteem and declare itself discharged of any further Inspection over him.

#### IV. Of Communion of Churches.

1. **W**E agree that particular Churches ought not to walk so distinct and separate from each other, as not to have care and tenderness towards one another. But their Pastors ought to have frequent Meetings together, that by mutual Advice, Support, Encouragement, and brotherly Intercourse, they may strengthen the Hearts and Hands of each other in the *Ways of the Lord*.

2. That none of our particular Churches shall be subordinate to one another, each being endued with Equality of Power from *Jesus Christ*. And that none of the said particular Churches, their Officer or Officers, shall exercise any Power, or have any Superiority, over any other Church or their Officers.

3. That known Members of particular Churches constituted as aforesaid, may have occasional communion with one another in the Ordinances of the Gospel, viz. the *Word*, *Prayer*, *Sacraments*, *singing of Psalms*, dispensed according to the Mind of Christ:  
Unless

Unless that Church with which they desire Communion, hath any just Exception against them.

4. That we ought not to admit any one to be a Member of our respective congregations, that hath joyn'd himself to another, without Endeavours of mutual satisfaction of the *Congregations concerned*.

5. That one *Church* ought not to blame the proceedings of another, until it hath heard, what that *Church* charged, its Elders or Messengers, can say in Vindication of themselves from any charge of irregular or injurious proceedings.

6. That we are most willing and ready to give an Account of our Church-proceedings to each other, when desired ; for preventing or removing any Offences, that may arise among us. Likewise, we shall be ready to give the Right-Hand of Fellowship, and walk together according to the Gospel-Rules of Communion of *Churches*.

#### V. *Of Deacons and Ruling-Elders.*

WE agree, the Office of a Deacon is of Divine Appointment, and that it belongs to their Office to receive, lay out, and distribute the *Church's* stock to its proper Uses, by the Direction of the Pastor, and Brethren, if Need be. And whereas divers are of Opinion, that there is also the Office of Ruling-Elders, who labour not in Word and Doctrine ; and others think otherwise ; we agree, that this Difference make no Breach among us.

#### VI. *Of occasional Meeting of Ministers.*

1. WE agree, that in order to concord, and in other weighty and difficult cases it is needful, and according to the Mind of *Christ*, that the Ministers of several *Churches* be consulted and advised with about such Matters.

2. That



2. That such Meetings may consist of smaller or greater Numbers, as the Matter shall require.

3. That particular *Churches*, their respective Elders and Members, ought to have a Reverential Regard to their Judgment, so given, and not dissent therefrom without apparent Grounds from the Word of God.

## VII. *Of our Demeanour towards the Civil Magistrate.*

1. **WE** do reckon ourselves obliged continually to pray for God's Protection, Guidance and Blessing upon the Rulers set over us.

2. That we ought to yield unto them not only subjection in the Lord, but support, according to our Station and Abilities.

3. That if at any Time it shall be their Pleasure to call together any Number of us, to require an Account of our Affairs, and the State of our congregations, we shall most readily express all dutiful Regard to them herein.

## VIII. *Of a Confession of Faith.*

**AS** to what appertains to soundness of Judgment in Matters of Faith, we esteem it sufficient that a *Church* acknowledge the Scriptures to be the Word of God, the perfect and only Rule of Faith and Practice, and own either the Doctrinal Part of those commonly called, *the Articles of the Church of England*, or the *Confession* or *Catechisms* shorter or larger, compiled by the *Assembly at Westminster*, or the *Confession* agreed on at the *Synod*, to be agreeable to the said Rule.

## IX. *Of our Duty and Deportment towards them that are not in Communion with us.*

1. **WE** judge it our Duty to bear a *Christian* Respect to all *Christians*, according to their several Ranks and Stations, that are not of our Perswasion or Communion.

2. As for such as may be ignorant of the Principles of the *Christian Religion*, or of *vicious Conversation*, we shall in our respective Places, as they give Opportunity, endeavour to explain to them the Doctrine of Life and Salvation, and to our utmost persuade them to be reconciled to God.

3. That such who appear to have the essential Requisites to *Church-Communion*, we shall willingly receive them in the Lord, not troubling them with Disputes about lesser Matters.

As we assent to the fore-mentioned *Heads of Agreement*, so we unanimously resolve, as the Lord shall enable us, to *practise* according to them.





## N U M B. IV.

### *An Abridgment of the Laws, and Ordinances of New-En- gland; to the Year 1700.*

A.



**A**ctions, Actions of Debts, Accounts, Slander, Actions of the case concerning Debts or Accounts, the Plaintiff may try where he will within the Jurisdiction of the Court, where he or the Defendant lives; by consent, they may be try'd any where else. Other Actions must be try'd where the Cause did arise.

If the Plaintiff in an Action of Trespass pretends Damage above 40 s, and has receiv'd less, he shall be Non-suited, and pay Costs.

No Action to be enter'd after the first Day of the Court's sitting. Double Fees, for those enter'd after Noon not to be recover'd of the Defendant.

Who-



Whoever brings an Action without cause, must pay the charges the Court shall judge he occasion'd, and any Fine they impose; as likewise the Defendant, if they find him in Fault; Vexatious Actions, or Suits, to pay treble costs, and to be fin'd 40s. to the Treasury.

**Adultery.** If any Person commit Adultery with a marry'd Woman, Maid, or Woman espoused, both Man and Woman shall be put to Death.

**Age.** No Person under 21 Years of Age, shall convey Lands or Hereditaments, or val in Elecons of publick Offices, or give Verdict, or pass Sentence in any civil or criminal Court, or cause.

Orphans may choose their Guardians at 14.

None under the Age of 21, shall plead, or be impleaded in civil cases, but in the Names of their Parents, Masters, or Guardians.

But in criminal cases, they must answer for their Misdemeanours, and inform against others in their own Names.

**Apparel.** All Persons not worth 200*l.* wearing Gold or Silver Lace, or Buttons, or Bone-Lace, above 2*s.* per Yard, or Silk Hoods, or Scarfs, may be presented by the Grand-Jury, and shall pay 10*s.* for every Offence.

The select Men of every Town may assess those who dress above their Rank, at 200*l.* Estate, and make them pay, as those to whom their Dress is suitable, except Magistrates, their Wives, and Children, Officers, civil or military, Soldiers in Time of Service; or such as have had a high Education, or are sunk from a higher Fortune, *Anno* 1651.

If any Person's Dress should be adjudg'd by the Grand Jury, or County-Court above his Rank, they are to be admonish'd for the first Offence, to pay 20*s.* for the second, 40*s.* for the third, and 40*s.* for every Offence afterwards, *Anno* 1662,

A Taylor who makes Cloaths for Children, or Servants, contrary to the Mind of their Parents or Masters, is for the first Offence, to be admonished, and for the second, to pay double the Value of the Cloaths, half to the Owner, and half to the County, 1662. The Grand-Jury are enjoind to present all Offenders in Apparel. *Ibid.*

**Appeal.** Any Person may appeal from an inferior to a superior Court, provided they tender their Appeal before the Judges of the Court they appeal to, put in Bail to prosecute it, and to pay Damages before Execution, which can't be 'till 12 Hours after Judgment, unless by special Order.

Appellants in criminal cases to give Security for Appearance and good Behaviour.

Appeals in Matter of Law, to be determin'd by the Bench; in Matter of Fact, by Bench and Jury.

In an Appeal to the Court of Assistants in any capital Offence, if two in five, or three in seven, or the like Proportion dissent from the Majority, there lyes an Appeal to the next General Court.

Appeals to be recorded at the charge of the Appellant, and certified to the Court to which they are made, the Reasons of them, without any Reflecting Language, to be given in Writing under their Hands, or their Attorney's Hands, to the Clerk of the Court from whence they are made, six Days before the Court begins to which they are made.

Appellants not prosecuting their Appeals, to pay, beside their Bonds to the Party, 40s. to the County.

No Person who sate as Judge, or voted in the inferior Court, shall have a Vote in that Court to which the Appeal is made in the same case, but it shall be decided by different Persons.

The Court appeal'd to, shall judge the case according to the former Evidence, and no other Court may reverse Judgment, or abate, or increase Damages, *Anno 1654.*

Appeals from the Association-Courts of *Poitsmouth* and *Dover*, are to the next County Court, and not to that of Assistants at *Boston*, as formerly, *Anno 1670.*

**Appearance.** No one to be punish'd for Non-Appearance, if hinder'd by Providence. This Law not to prejudice any Person in his costs or damages in civil Actions, *Anno 1641.*

**Arrests.** None to be arrested, or put in Prison for Debt, if the Law finds any Means of Satisfaction from his Estate, except in special contracts, *Anno 1641.*

The Person arrested to be in Prison at his own charge, unless the Court determine otherwise, but not to continue there, unless there is an Appearance of some Estate conceal'd, *Anno 1641.* The

The Prisoner swearing before a proper Magistrate that he has no Estate, is to be releas'd, but is to make Satisfaction by Service, though not to be sold to any besides the *English*, *Anno* 1647.

In civil Actions, the Prisoner swearing he is not worth 5 *l.* the Plaintiff must maintain him in Prison, levying by Execution his Expence, if he can find Effects.

No Prisoner to go at Liberty, without License of the Court, or Creditor, if he does, the Keeper to be fin'd at Discretion, and pay the Debt.

**Attachments.** A Foreigner can't attach an Inhabitant, without giving Security to prosecute his Account, and pay costs, if cast.

The Suit not to proceed, unless legal Notice be given of Attachments of Goods, or Lands, by writing left at the Place of Abode of the Defendant.

If the Defendant be out of the Jurisdiction of the Court where the Attachment lyes, the cause goes on, but Judgment is not to be enter'd 'till the next Court, nor Execution granted, 'till the Plaintiff gives Security to the Defendant to be responsible, in case he reverses Judgment within a Year, or such longer Time as the Court directs.

If the Plaintiff does not express in whose Name or capacity he sueth, Exception may be taken, and the Plaintiff must pay costs.

Tho' the Law directs the Attachment to Constables, where no Marshal lives, yet a Marshal may serve it any where in the Jurisdiction of the Court where he is an Officer, but he is to be paid no more than a Constable, *Anno* 1662.

B.

**Bakers,** see Bread.

**Ballast.** No Ballast to be taken out of any Town, Slough, without Leave of the select Men, under Penalty of 6*d.* a Shovel-full, except it be what they laid there themselves.

No Ballast to be cast out to the Prejudice of any Harbour, under Penalty of 10*s.* *Anno* 1646.

X x 2

Bar-



**Barratry.** The Court may reject the Cause of a common Barrater, that vexes others with unjust Suits, and may punish him for his Barratry, 1641.

**Bastardy.** The Father of a Bastard convict shall maintain it, or allow the Mother what the Court thinks fit.

The Oath of the Woman alone makes him liable to this charge, though not to any Punishment due by the Law in cases of Fornication and Adultery; but if circumstances render the Fact doubtful, the Court may acquit him.

**Bestiality.** If a Man or Woman lye with a Beast, the Beast to be slain and buried, and the Person put to Death.

**Benevolence.** No Benevolence to be granted, but in foreign Occasions, and when publick Debts are paid, and there is Money in the Treasury.

The County-Court may take Notice of Gifts and Legacies to publick Uses, and if they see cause, may appoint Trustees of Trust to settle and manage them.

**Bills Assigned.** Bills, or other Specialties may be assigned, and the Right of Account shall be in the Assignee, so that he may sue for them in his own Name, or by Attorney, provided the Assignment be indors'd on the Back of the Bill.

**Blasphemy.** Blasphemy against the Holy Name of God, the Father, Son, or Holy Ghost, either in express Words, or by an obstinate Denial of the true God and his Worship, shall be punish'd with Death.

**Bond-Serv.** None to be bought, or sold for Slaves but those who are taken in War, or made such by Authority, and these to have the same Liberties, as those under the Law of *Moses*.

**Bounds of Lands.** The Bounds of every Town are to be set out within a Year after they are granted.

The Marks of those Bounds to be renew'd every three Years, by three, or more Inhabitants chosen by the select Men, who together with the adjacent Towns, shall go the Bounds, and renew the Land-Marks.

The Time for this must be in the first or second Month; Notice to be given of it by the most ancient Town; the Bounds must be a Heap of Stones, or a Trench. The

The Town that neglects to renew them shall forfeit 5*l.* The Men appointed for this to be under the Direction of the select Men, and paid by the Towns.

Those who have Lands in common, must visit their Bounds once a Year, or pay 10*s.* for every Day they neglect it after they are requested to do so.

**Breach of the Peace.** If one Man beats or hurts another, he shall pay to him, or the County, or both, what the proper Judge determines, who may fine him according to the circumstances of the Offence.

To keep Possession of any Thing, or to endeavour to regain it by Force after Execution upon Judgment obtain'd, is a Breach of the Peace; the Officers of Justice are to aid the Plaintiff, and commit the Offender and his Abettors, who are to answer for it at the Court where the Judgment was obtain'd, and to be punish'd as the Court thinks fit.

**Bread.** The Baker is to mark his Bread, and to make it up according to the following Assizes.

When Wheat is at

| s. d. |   | White. |     | Wheat. |     | Household. |     |
|-------|---|--------|-----|--------|-----|------------|-----|
|       |   | Ou.    | qr. | Ou.    | qr. | Ou.        | qr. |
| 3     | 0 | 11     | 1   | 17     | 1   | 23         | 0   |
| 3     | 6 | 10     | 1   | 15     | 1   | 20         | 2   |
| 4     | 0 | 9      | 1   | 14     | 0   | 18         | 2   |
| 4     | 6 | 8      | 1   | 11     | 3   | 16         | 2   |
| 5     | 0 | 7      | 3   | 11     | 2   | 15         | 2   |
| 5     | 6 | 7      | 0   | 10     | 2   | 14         | 0   |
| 6     | 0 | 6      | 2   | 11     | 0   | 13         | 0   |
| 6     | 6 | 6      | 0   | 9      | 2   | 11         | 2   |

Two Persons in every Market-Town chosen annually, and sworn at the next County-Court, or nearest Magistrate, have Power with, or without a Constable, to enter any House where they are inform'd that Bread is made for Sale, and weigh the Bread, and seize what is under Weight, a Third for themselves, and the rest for the Poor.

**Brewers.** None may brew for Sale or Shipping, but such as are known to be skilful in that Art.

If the Beer they sell for Sea proves unfit for Use, through their Fault, Damages may be recover'd of them by Action.

**Bridges.** Bridges to be made in such Places, and repair'd, as the County-Court, or a Committee appointed by them directs, at the charge of the County, to be levy'd upon the Towns according to the County Rates.

If any Bridge or Highway be defective, and any Person in passing it lose his Life, after legal Presentment of it to the County-Court, the County or Town shall pay 100 *l.* to the nearest Relation of the Deceased.

If any Person lose a Limb, break a Bone, or receive a Bruise, or if any Damage happen to any Team, or their Lading, the Party may recover double Damages, if due Notice have been given, as before.

Any Magistrate may issue out Warrants to Constables, to press Men, Horses, or Carts, for repairing a Bridge or High-way, who shall be paid for their Work by such Towns, or Persons to whom the Bridge belongs.

**Burgesses.** Burgesses must be Members of some Church, gathered by consent of the Establish'd Churches of the Country.

They may choose out of their Body ordinary Judges of their several Towns, and Deputies, who join'd with the Governour and his Assistants, constitute the General Court.

**Burglary and Robbery.** Burglary and Robbery on the Highway shall be punish'd for the first Offence, with burning in the Forehead, with the Letter *B*: and the Loss of an Ear, if on the Sabbath; for the second, with Burning and Whipping; and the Loss of t'other Ear, if on the Sabbath; for the third, with Death.

### C.

**Cask.** All Cask to be of *London* Assize, and of good Timber, to be gaug'd, and mark'd by Gaugers, who are to have 4*d.* *per* Ton.

Every Cooper that sets not his Mark on his Cask, to pay 20*s.*

Bad Cask expos'd to Sale forfeited to the Informer, and the Owner to be fin'd 10*s.* *per* Ton.

A Gauger to be chosen, and sworn annually, and to pay 40*s.* if he refuses to officiate; the Town that neglects to chuse one, forfeits 40*s.*

'The



The Gauger is to see that Goods are pack'd in Casks of true Allize, and to pay 10 s. for every defective Cask, half to the Informer, and half to the County.

He is also to view Victuals, and to receive 4 s. *per* Ton, if 'tis defective, if otherwise, but one.

All Goods expos'd to Sale without the Gauger's Mark forfeited, half to the Informer, half to the County.

Hoghead-Staves are to be 3 Foot 2 Inches in Length, Barrel-Staves 31 Inches, Heading for Pipe-Staves 28 Inches in Length, and for Hogheads and Barrels suitable to the Staves.

**Cattle.** The Cattle of every Town must be mark'd with a distinct Mark, or pay double Damage, if they trespass.

The Mark of such Cattle as feed in open common without Keeper to be on the Shoulder, or home left Buttock, and the Clerk of the Writs in every Town to keep a Copy of the Marks.

No unruly Beast to feed in common, or Ground next to Corn-Fields, or any fenced Ground without Fetters.

The Party aggriev'd by Trespass, may bring his Action, or refer his Damage to two Neighbours, which the Owner of the Beast shall pay.

But if he disapproves of the Judgment, the Parties by consent may nominate each of them a Man to review the Damage, who may set aside the former Judgment, provided they agree upon it the same Day.

Cattle taken in another's Ground may be impounded, 'till Notice given to their Owner, who may replevy them, or the other may return them, and bring his Action.

In case of involuntary Trespass, the Trespasser tendering full Damage before Suit commenced, shall not pay Costs, though the other sues him.

Whoever receives Damage from Cattle by his own Fault, shall recover nothing.

If Goats damage any one, the Owner shall pay double Damage, and the Person damnify'd shall keep and milk them 'till he has receiv'd Satisfaction.

Whoever takes another's Beast, and works it without Leave, shall pay treble Damages, or 10 s. if the Plaintiff demands it; if they can't pay it, they shall be otherwise punish'd, as the Magistrate sees cause.

Drift Cattle may be fed in any open Land, not appropriated to any Use.

**Charges of the publick.** No Governour, Deputy-Governour, Assistant, Associate, Grand or Petty Jurymen, Deputy for the General Court, or Commissioner for military Discipline, shall serve the Publick at their own Expence.

Every Person to be assessed by the Country Rates for all Charges in Church and State, their Lands in the Towns where they lye, and their Persons where they dwell. The Money to be levy'd on Defaulters by Distress: If nothing is found, they are to be imprison'd 'till the County Court, or 'till Security given.

The Treasurer every *July* shall send his Warrant to the Constables of every Town, to summon the Inhabitants to chuse a Commissioner for Assessments, who with the select Men shall in *August* take a List of all male Persons above sixteen, and a Survey of their Estates, and assess them 20 *d. per* Head, (except Magistrates, and Elders of Churches), and their Estates at a Penny *per* Pound.

The Estates of Traders are to be rated at the Discretion of the Assessors, but they may complain, if overrated, to the General Court. None to pay for Lands in *England*.

A Bull or Cow of 4 Years old, is to be rated at 3 *l.* Value, of 3 Years old, at 2 *l.* 10 *s.* of 2 Years, at 2 *l.* of 1, at 1 *l.* An Ox of 4 Years, at 5 *l.* A Horse, or Man of 3 Years, at 5 *l.* of 2 Years, at 3 *l.* of 1, at 1 *l.* 10 *s.* A Sheep of 1 Year, at 10 *s.* A Goat, at 8. A Hog, at 20 *s.* An Ass, of 1 Year, at 2 *l.* Cattle under a Year, Corn and Hay in the Farmers Hands exempted.

Tradesmen and Artisans to be rated by Estimation of their Profits, unless disabled.

Parents and Masters shall be tax'd for Children and Servants taking no Wages.

The Commissioners to meet in the Shire-Town the first *Wednesday* in *September*, to sign their List and Assessment, and give it to the Treasurer, or be fin'd 40 *s.* who is to levy it by the Constables before the 20th of *November* every Year.

Every

Every Person is to pay the Constable where he is assess'd, who is to remit the Money to *Boston*, if the Treasurer desires it, at the publick Expence.

Estates not laid to any Town to be assess'd in the nearest.

Cows shall be taken in Payment, if no Price be set by the General Court, at a Price currant, judg'd by the Commissioners of *Essex*, *Middlesex*, and *Suffolk*.

Constables charg'd with Collections, shall clear Accounts before the first of *May*, on Penalty of 5 *l*.

The Treasurer shall distrain on the Constables for Non-Payment, or answer it himself to the County: If nothing is to be found on the Constable, he may distrain on any able Man in the Town, who upon Petition, shall have Warrant to collect the Rates over again, with reasonable Damages.

Constables charged with collections, may continue to finish their collections, and distrain for Non-Payment, after their Office is expired.

A Foreigner arriving with Goods to sell, the select Men may assess them according to Value, and issue a Warrant for levying it.

Ministers are excus'd from all Taxes.

**Children.** All Parents to teach their Children to read, and all Masters to acquaint their Families with the capital Laws, on Penalty of 20 *s*. and to catechise them once a Week.

The select Men may examine Children and Apprentices, and admonish Parents and Masters, if they find them ignorant, and with the consent of two Magistrates, or the next County-Court, put them into better Hands.

Children so removed by the Magistrate, shall serve the Masters they are plac'd with, Males 'till 21, Females 'till 18 Years of Age.

'Tis Death for any Child, above 16 Years of Age, and of sound Understanding, to strike, or curse his Parent, unless provok'd by extreme correction, or in their own Defence.

A Son of 16, accus'd by Parents of Rebellion, and other notorious crimes, shall be put to Death.

Magistrates may punish disorderly Children or Servants on complaint, by Whipping, or otherwise, as they see



see cause, and bind them over to the next County-Court.

Whoever entices away, or entertains Children or Servants, to pay 40s.

Whoever gives credit, or lends Money to any under 21, shall lose his Money, and answer for the Mischief his doing so occasion'd.

Children to be redrest by the Magistrate, if deny'd convenient Marriage.

No Orphan to be dispos'd of without consent of some Court, the Majority of select Men assenting, sufficient in case of Marriage.

Women Minors 'till 16.

**Chirurgeons and Midwives.** No Surgeon, Midwife, or Physician, shall practise on any, without consent of the Person, or nearest Relation.

**Civil Causes petty.** Any Magistrate may summon, by the Constable, Parties and Witnesses, and determine any cause without a Jury, Damages not exceeding 40s.

The County-Court may appoint three Inhabitants to determine them, where no Magistrate dwells, who must swear to be faithful, but may not commit to Prison in any case.

If the Cause concerns the Magistrate, or any one of the Commissioners, the select Men shall determine it.

These little Causes shall not lye before the County Court, but by Appeal, unless in case of Assault, or Defamation.

The Freemen of *Boston* may present seven to be sworn by the Court of Assistants, as Commissioners for that Town, any three of which with a Magistrate, or five without, may determine any Civil causes under 10*l*, arising within the *Isthmus*, or *Nottles-Island*, or in which either Party shall be an Inhabitant.

The Commissioners of *Boston* shall keep Records, and publish their Court-Days; they may appoint their Clerks, and demand of the Plaintiff, in Actions under 40*s*. 3*s*. 6*d*. for others, 10*s*. and accustomed Fees.

They may take cognizance of Riots and criminal Misdemeanors, not fining more than 40*s*.

They are to have their Commissions under the Hand of the Secretary of the General Court, and all Constables and Inhabitants are to assist them.

None

None to be admitted into this Office that are not faithful to their Country, and inoffensive in their conversations; an Appeal lyes from them to the Court of Assistants.

**Clerks.** Clerks of the Writs are to be nominated by every Town, and allow'd by the County Court.

They are to grant Summons, Attachments, and Replevies, and to take Securities for Prosecution of Suits.

Their Fees are, 2*d.* for a Warrant, 3*d.* for an Attachment Replevin, 4*d.* for a Bond for themselves; and 3*d.* for the Mareschal-General for Attachments.

**Condemned Persons.** None to be executed 'till 4 Days after condemnation, but in case of martial Law, or some special cause, nor to remain unburied 12 Hours, but in case of Anatomy.

The Dead Warrant to be sign'd by the Secretary of the General Court.

**Conspiracy.** Conspiracy against the Commonwealth, by attempting an Invasion, Insurrection, Rebellion, or by attempting to seize any Towns or Forts, to be punish'd with Death.

**Constables.** Constables shall execute the Sentence on Criminals, or get one to do it.

They are to collect Rates, and Assessments, convey Offenders they are charg'd with before some Magistrate, receive and forward all Hue and Cries after Offenders, and even issue them when no Magistrate is near.

He may search for Offenders in publick Houses, and apprehend them without Warrant; but if employ'd, he must have a Warrant.

Whoever refuses to assist the Constable, must pay 10*s.* to the Country, to be levy'd by Warrant, if he does it contemptuously, he must pay 40*s.*

Every Constable must have a black Staff 5 Foot long, tipped at the upper End 5 Inches with Brass, as the Badge of his Office, when he acts.

If the Constable refuses to forward a Hue and Cry; he shall pay 40*s.*

The Constables may arrest, and serve Summons and Attachments, where no Marshal lives.

The Charge of Hue and Cry after a Prisoner must be

be paid by the Treasurer of the County; after others, by those who procure them.

**Conveyances.** No Alienation of Lands, but by Deed sign'd and deliver'd, and Possession given by the Seller, or one authoriz'd by him. The clause of Conveyance to be in these Words: *To have and to hold the said Premises respectively to the Party, or Grantee, his Heirs and Assigns for ever*: If the Estate be entail'd, in these Words: *To have, and to hold, &c. to the Party or Grantee, and to the Heirs of his Body lawfully begotten between him, and such a one his Wife*. This Form not necessary in granting Town-Lands.

Former Deeds remain good, though not in the Methods now prescribed.

Deeds obtain'd by Violence are void, fraudulent Conveyances shan't defeat a Man of his Claim to just Debts, Licences, or Lands.

No Grants, Sales, or Mortgages shall be in Force, except against the Grantee, himself, or Heirs, unless own'd before a Magistrate, and recorded.

All Grants before *October* 1640, to be recorded, in a Month, or to be null, except against the Grantee; if he refuses to own the Grant, when requir'd, the Magistrate may commit him, and the Grantee enter a Caution with the Recorder of the County-Court, which shall secure his Interest.

The Clerk of the County-Court to enter all Grants, Sales, &c. with the Names of Granter and Grantee, with the Date, and Particulars of the Estate.

If the Granter be not in the Jurisdiction, he must enter within three Months after his Return.

**General Court.** The General Court made up of Magistrates and Deputies, hath Power to tax the Country, and to give, and confirm Properties of publick Lands. It hath the Supreme Legislative Power, and the Power of Judicature, and of redressing the Grievances of the People; the Deputies must take the following Oath.

*I Do swear by the most great and dreadful Name of the ever-living God, that in all Cases wherein I am to deliver my Vote or Sentence against any criminal Offence, or between Parties in any Civil Case, I will deal uprightly and*



*and justly, according to my Judgment and Conscience, and I will according to my Skill and Ability, assist in all other publick Affairs of this Court faithfully and truly, according to the Duty of my Place, when I shall be present to attend the Service.*

The Magistrates and Deputies in this Court must sit and act apart, and Laws and Orders must be transmitted from one House to another; not to be in Force 'till passed by a Majority in both Houses, and engrossed.

They are to be read the last Day of the Session to the whole Body united.

In case of Difference, 'tis to be decided by the Majority of both Houses met together.

This Court to be call'd by Governour, Deputy-Governour, or Court of Assistants on any Occasion, but to be dissolv'd, or adjourn'd only by themselves.

It assembles by Warrant once a Quarter, or oftner.

It may call the Governour or any Magistrate to Account, and censure them, as the case requires.

It may determine causes without Appeal, and cite those depending in other Courts.

The Governour to have the casting Vote in this, as the Moderator in other Civil Assemblies.

**County Court.** The County Court consists of Magistrates of the County, and others appointed by the General Court at the Nomination of the Freemen, five of them with one Magistrate may hold a Court.

They may determine causes not extending to Life, Member, or Banishment, appoint Clerks, and other Officers, and summon Juries for the several Townships.

**Courts of Assistants.** Courts of Assistants consist of Governour, Deputy-Governour, and Magistrates of *Boston*, who are to meet at *Boston* the first *Tuesday* in *March* and *September*.

They determine Actions of Appeal, capital causes, and causes of Divorce: They may be called by the Governour, or his Deputy, as Occasion requires: Seven must be present, of which the Governour, or his Deputy, to be one, except in cases of necessity.

**Courts Special.** The Governour or Deputy, with two Magistrates, or any three Magistrates may call a special Court for the sake of a Stranger.

The

The Records of it to be enter'd in the Court of Assistance, at the Expence of the Party cast.

**Courts in General.** Any Court may receive an Action from a Stranger, against any one not an Inhabitant, and proceed to Judgment on Proof of legal Summons.

All criminal Cases to be try'd at the next Court that hath cognizance of them.

No Court is to transfer a Case to another, but they may state the Case and present it to the General Court for their Opinion, and proceed to Judgment according to that Opinion.

Every Court may admit Freemen, if Church Members, and give them their Oath, and the Clerk must send their Names to the General Court.

Any one Magistrate may adjourn the Court, and all Parties concern'd are bound without fresh Summons to attend again.

Clerks and Recorders of Courts must be sworn to be faithful.

**Cruelty.** No Court can punish with above Forty Stripes.

No Man must correct any under him with Cruelty, or be cruel to a Beast.

## D.

**Debts.** No Debt not acknowledged for six Years pleadable in any Court, unless prov'd or recorded in some Court; the Evidence of such must be such as the Court approves, the Debtor to have a Year to disprove it.

**Deputies.** The Deputies for the General Court are chosen by Ballots of Freemen.

They may confer about Business, and prepare it for the Court.

No Town can send more than two; and a Town not having 20 Freemen, sends but one.

Freemen of a Plantation under 10, vote in the next Town.

They may chuse any one that is free, and lives within the Jurisdiction.

A Town not having 30 Freemen, may send Deputies, or let it alone.

Disputes about Elections decided by the Deputies in the General Court.

No Man to be a Deputy, who is not sound in the main Points of Religion, regular in his Conversation, or faithful to the Government; whoever Votes knowingly for such, pays 5 s.

The Constable to return the Person chosen, and the Time for which, on forfeiture of 20 s.

They are not to be continued above a Year.

They must attend the Court, or pay 20 s. a Day, if not excus'd by the House.

No Attorney in an Inferior Court to sit in the General Court.

**Distress.** Things subject to present Decay, as Corn, &c. not liable to Distress, unless Security be given to make good the Damages.

**Dowry.** Wives not endowed by Jointure before Marriage, have a Right to a Third of the Husband's Estate for their Life, unless barr'd from it by her Consent in Writing, own'd before a Magistrate.

The Heir at Law is to assign her Thirds within a Month, or she may bring a Writ of Dowry in the County Court.

They must leave the Estate assign'd them, in repair.

## E.

**Elections.** Assistants are chosen by Freemen putting a Bean against the Person, or a Grain of Corn for him.

Whoever puts in one or more Beans that is not Free, pays 10 s.

Any one may seal up his Vote before the Constable or Deputy, and send it to the Court of Elections at *Boston*.

The Governour, his Deputy, Major-General, Treasurer, Secretary, and Commissioners of the United Colonies are elected by Papers sent open with their Names,

Magistrates for ~~the~~ Towns are to be chosen by Freemen summoned in the second Week of *March*.

He



He that gives more than one Vote in any Election, to pay 10*s*.

The Votes for the Assistants are to be sent from each Town to the Shire-Town, and thence to *Boston* to be open'd before a Magistrate the second *Tuesday* in *April*; and the 18 that have most Voices, are to be Magistrates and Assistants.

The Commissioner who brought the Votes, to return the Names of those chosen to the Constables, and they to the Freemen.

Whoever performs not his Duty in Elections, pays 10*s*.

No Quaker or Dissenter from the Publick Worship has a Vote.

**Escheates.** Where there is no Heir, the Estate is to be in the Treasury till a legal Claim be made.

## F.

**False-Witnessing.** 'Tis Death to attempt another's Life by witnessing falsely, wittingly and willingly.

**Farms.** Farms within the Bounds of a Town, are part of that Town, *Meudford* excepted.

**Fees.** Whoever impleads another, in County-Court, or Court of Assistants, pays 10*s*. before the Cause be entered.

Ten Shillings must be paid for every Action before the Commissioners of *Boston* that's above 40*s*. 3*d*. and 4*d*. for one under it, either before them or any Magistrate, or the three Commissioners for small Causes.

The Court may excuse Fees.

Fifteen Shillings must be paid, where Damages are recovered above 10*l*. 20*s*. where 20*l*.

All Fees to be allow'd in the Judgment levy'd by the Marshal, and accounted to the respective Treasurer.

**Fences.** Every one to fence according to his Proportion of the Corn-field in common, and not to put in Cattle while any Corn remains.

If they can't agree, select Men to determine, or the Freemen where there are none.

Whoever won't stand to their Determination must inclose his own Part.

Select

Select Men may order the Fences within their Bounds in Farms under 100 Acres, and impose Fines on Defaulters under 20 s.

If they neglect the Fences, to pay 5 s. to the Town *per Month*.

They may appoint two or more yearly to view the the Fences, and give Notice to the Owners to repair them, and if they do it not in six Days, the Surveyor may do it, and recover double Wages, to be levy'd by the Constable, having a Warrant from the select Men.

If any one fences his Lands, his Neighbour is not to pay half of the Charge till he also incloses.

The first Incloser is not to lay open his Neighbour's Land, tho' he may his own, but may demand the Value of half the Party-fence to be set by two, each chusing one, and purchase it.

This holds good in case of a Town-Common, but not of House-Lots, under 10 Acres; if such are improv'd, the Neighbour pays half the Party-Fence, whether he improves or not.

If a Person receives Damage from Cattle because his Fence was faulty, he cannot recover it.

**Ferries.** No Passenger to be transported but by authoriz'd Ferry-men, who can only take up at their own Ferry Place, tho' they may land at anothers.

No Canoe to be us'd by them, on Forfeiture of the Canoe or Value of it, unless in case of Necessity.

Persons may pass in their own or Neighbours Boats.

Passage at *Weymouth-Ferry* 2 d. after Day-light is over 4 d.

Magistrates and Deputies pass free with a Servant and Horse, except where Rent is paid to the Country.

Whoever presses into a Ferry boat, without consent of Ferryman or Passengers, he may be thrust out, or pays 10 s.

If the Ferryman admits one against the Consent of any Magistrate, Deputy or Elder, or Majority of the Passengers, he pays 20 s.

Persons to be transported in their Turn, except Publick Officers, Physicians, and such-like, who are to be taken first.

**Fines.** Persons are to stay in Prison till they pay their Fines, unless the Judge or Court respite them.

The Clerk of the Court is to give a Copy of Fines and Dues to the Treasurer, who must issue his Warrant to the Mareschal to levy them.

The select Men are to receive Fines in case of Elections for the use of the poor.

**Firing.** Whoever kindles a Fire in a Wood, so as to hurt Corn, before the 30th of *April*, or on *Saturdays* or *Sundays*, pays the Damage, and half so much to the Country.

If not able to pay, is to be whipt with Twenty Stripes.

Whoever sets fire to any thing, to pay double Damage and be whipt, if Ten Years old.

If it be a House or such-like, 'tis Death, with the Forfeiture of what makes Satisfaction.

Persons suspected of this, to be imprisoned without Bail till the next County Court.

**Fish.** Fishermen may use Harbour or adjoining Land for curing their Fish, and take what Timber or Fire-wood they want, paying the Proprietor.

A Surveyor of Fish must be chosen by Buyer and Seller; what he says is merchantable, the Buyer must take, he must be sworn before one appointed to take his Oath by the General Court; he is to have a Penny *per* Quintal, to be paid, half by the Buyer, and half by the Seller.

All Fish salted with *Sucktood*, Sun burnt, Salt burnt dry Fish, Fish pickled, is unmerchantable.

No one to kill Cod-fish, Hake, Haddock or Polluck for sale in *December* or *January*, or Mackarel to barrel in *May* or *June*, on the penalty of 5 s. for every Quintal, and the Mackarel forfeited.

The Garbage not to be thrown near the Banks.

Fishermen disobeying Orders, or getting drunk, to pay for the first Offence 20 s. for the second 40 s. and to be imprisoned three Months for the third.

**Forgery.** Forgery is punish'd with the Pillory, double Damages, and being disabled to give Evidence or Verdict.

**Fornication.** Punish'd by compelling Marriage, Fines, or as the Court sees fit.

**Freemen.** All *Englishmen*, Members of Churches found



found in Faith, regular in Life, Free-holders, rateable at 10 s. being 24 Years old, may be made free.

Not exempted from Offices, tho' they take not up their Freedom.

The County Court administers the Oath of a Freeman, to any admitted by the General Court.

**Galloping Horses.** No one to gallop a Horse in *Best n*, on Penalty of 3 s. 4 d.

**Gaming.** Whoever games for Money, pays treble the Value, half to the Treasurer, half to the Informer.

No playing at Shuffleboard or Bowls at a Publick House, on Penalty of 20 s. to the Master, and 5 to the Player.

No Dancing in Publick Houses, on Penalty of 5 s.

No Feasts or Festivals to be observ'd, or Cards or Dice to be us'd, on Penalty of 5 s.

None to bring Cards or Dice into the Country, or to have any in their custody, on Penalty of 5 l. half to the Treasurer, half to the Informer.

Whoever delivers them up is excus'd; whoever games; and informs of himself, is excus'd; he may witness against others, but has no Benefit from informing against them.

Judges may change the Fine into corporal Punishment.

## H.

**Heresy.** Whoever denies the Immortality of the Soul, the Resurrection of the Body, or the Evil done by the outward Man is Sin, or that Christ gave himself a Ransom for Sins, or that we are justified by his Righteousness or the Morality of the 4th Command, or the baptizing of Infants, or the Ordinance of Magistracy, or their Authority to make War, or punish Offenders against the first Table; whoever denies any of these, or seduces others to do so, must be banish'd the Jurisdiction.

Whoever professing the *Christian Religion*, and being 16, denies any Book of the Bible to be the Word of God, is to be imprison'd till the County Court, and fin'd or punish'd, as the Court thinks fit.

If he recants before Sentence, not to be fin'd above 10 l.

If he offends afterwards, he is to die or be banish'd, as the Court thinks fit.

The blasphemous Books of *Veers* or *Muggleton* to be deliver'd up to the Magistrate and burnt, on Penalty of 10 *l.*

Whoever knowingly brings a Quaker or Heretick, is imprison'd till he pays or gives Security for 100 *l.* and carrying him away again.

Whoever conceals such, to pay 40 *s.* an Hour, or lie in Prison till he does.

Whoever goes to a Quaker's Meeting, pays 10 *s.* and 5 *l.* if he preaches.

Whoever disperses or conceals their Books, pays 5 *l.* for every Book.

Whoever reviles Magistrates or Ministers, pays 5 *l.* or is to be whipp'd.

Defamers of Magistrates or Judges, for what they do in Court, are to be punish'd as the Crime deserves.

The Publisher of any Error to be censur'd as he deserves by the County Court.

Quakers not Inhabitants, to be imprison'd till the Court of Assistants, and then banish'd; not to return on Pain of Death.

If Inhabitants, they are to give Security for appearing next General Court, and to be banish'd if they don't recant.

If he returns, to be banish'd again, not to return on Pain of Death.

Vagabond Quakers are whipt through the Towns, not exceeding three, and convey'd out of the Jurisdiction; if they return after three Times, they are to be in the House of Correction till County Court, branded with the Letter *R* on the left Shoulder, and whipp'd, as before; if they return after this, to be banish'd on Pain of Death.

If any turn Quakers, they are to be banish'd the Jurisdiction, and serv'd as Vagabond Quakers, if they return.

The Magistrate signing the Warrant for Whipping, must mention the Towns and Number of Stripes, and the Constable see it executed at the Expence of the County.

**Hides.** No raw Hides, Skins, &c. to be exposed, except those which have been imported, or the Skins of wild Beasts, on Penalty of the Goods or Value.

**Highways.** Highways must be kept in Repair by the Publick.

New Roads are to be laid out by three Men of the next Towns appointed by the County Court, without pulling down Houses, or laying open Gardens, and to be 10 Rods wide where the Ground is wet or rocky.

The Town pays the Damage done to improv'd Lands, as valu'd by those who lay out the Road; those aggriev'd may appeal to the County Court.

If it be without cause, they must pay Charges and a Fine.

The select Men to lay out private Roads, so as no Damage be done, without any Recompence.

Gates or Rails in the Road may be pull'd up by the County Court, paying Damages to the Owners.

**Horses.** No Horse to be sold to an *Indian*, on Penalty of a 100 *l.* or taken on Board a Vessel, without being enter'd in the Toll-Book, with the Colour, Mark and Age of the Horse, with the Name of the Person of whom bought, and Proof that he was the Owner of it, on Penalty of 4 *l.* half to the Informer.

No Stone-Horse above two Years old to run at large, unless view'd and allow'd of by the select Men, on Penalty of 20 *s.* *per* Month.

If they neglect to view the Horse or levy the Fine, they pay 20 *s.*

I.

**Jaylors.** Jaylors may take Bail in Civil Cases, after Commitment.

**Idle Persons.** Idle Persons are to be presented and punish'd, as the Court sees fit.

**Jesuits.** No Jesuit or Priest to abide in the Jurisdiction.

Whoever can't clear himself from Suspicion to the Court of Assistants, to be banish'd, not to return on Pain of Death, unless by Shipwreck, or in Company



with any upon Business, with whom they are to return.

Whatever Priest residing there, did not depart before *November 1700*, he was to be imprison'd for Life, and to die if he broke Prison.

Whoever conceal'd such, to be Pillory'd, or pay 200 *l.* half to the Informer.

Any Justice may commit one suspected, in order to a Trial, and he may be seiz'd by any, without Warrant.

If a Priest is driven on the Coast, he must go to one of the Council, observe his Orders, and depart as soon as possible.

**Imposts.** Wines and Strong Waters not coming from *England*, are to be enter'd, on Forfeiture of the Goods; the Duty of such Goods to be paid in kind, as the Owner can agree with the Officer.

The Customer may employ Deputies to wait or search Wines.

Wines of *Fyal* or *Western Islands*, pay 5 *s.* per Pipe; of *Mudera* 6 *s.* 8 *d.* Sherry, Sack or Canary, Muscadell, Tent, Malmsley, *Alicant*, or others from the Streights, 10 *s.* *French* 5 *s.* Strong Waters 40 *s.*

Constables must assist Officers in searching for conceal'd Wines, in order to seize them, on Forfeiture of 10 *s.*

Debts due for Custom, where Wines and Strong Waters are not to be had, are recoverable by Action.

Ships not fraught in *England*, pay 6 *d.* per Ton, and 10 *s.* per Ship to maintain Fortifications, those fraught in *England*, 10 *s.* per Ship, if above 100 Ton, if under, 6 *s.* 8 *d.* per Ton.

Publick-Houses to pay 2 *s.* 6 *d.* per Hogshead for Syder, Ale and Beer, and 5 *s.* for Mum to the Treasurer, before whom he is to swear to what he sells, or pay treble Duty, or lose his License.

All imported Goods, except Fish, Sheep, Wool, Cotton, Salt, pay 1 *d.* per Pound Value, to be rated at 20 per Cent above prime Cost.

The Master, before he breaks Bulk, must report his Lading faithfully, on Penalty of 20 *s.* per Ton, and the Officer enter the Goods with the Owners Names, as far as they can lawfully be discover'd, and the Owner shall shew his Invoice, and discover the Value of them to the Collector;

Collector, who must levy the Duty, and Distrain in case of Non-payment, taking 2 s. *per* Pound for his Labour.

If the Invoice be satisfied, the Collector, with the select Men rate the Goods.

Cattle brought into this Jurisdiction, to be sold, kill'd or transported, to be paid for according to the Law mention'd, *Tit. Charges of the Publick*, on Forfeiture of the Beast or Value, half to the Informer.

Goods brought by Land, to pay 1 d. *per* Pound in Money, before Sale or Exportation.

The County Treasurer is to see this Law executed.

No Goods paid for by this Law, are rateable again the same Year.

The Treasurer may apply to the Council for Direction in doubtful Cases.

Masters of Ships bringing rateable Goods, must have Orders from the Treasurer to deliver them, or pay the Rate ; the Seal of his Office is (*TM*).

**Impress.** One Magistrate and the Overseer may Impress any Labourers for publick Work, authorized by the General Court for a Week, paying them Wages, unless they have some Incapacity.

A Person may be forc'd to go out of his Jurisdiction only in Case of a defensive War, enter'd upon by the General Court.

No Man's Cattle or Goods to be Impress'd without Warrant, and paying reasonable Prizes, and making good all Damage.

**Imprisonment.** No one to be Imprison'd, but in such Cases as the Law allows of.

**Indians.** *Indians* have a Right to Lands subdu'd and improv'd, desiring to live among the *English*.

They shall have Allotments of Lands, according to Custom, and have Relief in Courts, if dispossefs'd of what is theirs, as the *English*.

Lands in the Jurisdiction not improv'd by *Indians*, is the Property of the *English*.

None to buy Land of *Indians*, without Leave from the General Court, on Forfeiture of the Lands.

None to sell to the *Indians*, or to any Persons inhabiting out of the Jurisdiction, Guns, Powder, Ball, Armour

or Weapon, on Forfeiture of 40 s. for a pound of Lead or Shot, 5 l. for every pound of Powder, and 10 l. for Gun, Armour or Weapon.

No Person not in the Jurisdiction may Trade with any *Indian* within this Jurisdiction for any Goods, without forfeiting them.

They may be seiz'd by any without Warrant, half for their own Use.

He that sells any sort of Peltry to the *Indians*, without Leave from the General Court, pays 100 l. 10 l. for the Informer.

Whoever sells them any strong Liquors, pays 40 s. a Pint ; a Third to the Informer.

Trucking Houses not allow'd by the General Court, are to be demolish'd.

Physicians may prescribe in Liquors forbid to the *Indians*, with License of a Magistrate

None to sell the *Indians* a Boat, Skiff or Canoe, on Forfeiture of 50 l.

Damage done their Corn, to be recompenc'd by those whose Cattle did it.

Those whose Cattle may damage their Plantations, must help them to fence, and they must sell them Tools to do it.

If they refuse to fence, they can't have Damage.

They must fence Lands granted or purchased, at their own Charge.

If the *Indian* Cattle damage the *English*, they must make Satisfaction.

Laws respecting them, must be made known to them once a Year, by one appointed by the General Court.

Civiliz'd *Indians* living under the Government, shall have an *Indian* Commissioner, and Constables and Marshals in their Plantations, and the Power of a County Court to determine Causes, provided an *English* Magistrate appoint the Time and Place, and consents to all Judgments.

*Indians* not to profane the Sabbath, or to have strong Liquors.

If Drunk, they must pay 10 s. or be whipp'd with Ten Stripes, confess where they had the Liquor, or stay in the House of Correction, till they pay the Fine of the Liquor they drank.

The



The Accusation of an *Indian* will be good against any that purgeth not himself by Oath.

Those who have License to sell Peltry to the *Indians*, may also sell Arms and Ammunition to those not in Hostility, paying to the Treasurer every half Year 6 s. *per* pound of Powder : 6 d. for 10 pound of Shot : 3 s. *per* Gun and *per* dozen of Sword-Blades, and give a true account upon Oath of what he sells, on Penalty of 5 l. for every pound of Powder ; 5 l. for every 10 pound of Shot ; 10 l. for every Gun or dozen of Sword-Blades ; this to be in Force while the Court pleases. 1668.

**Indictments.** The Indictment must be within a Year after the Offence, except in capital Offences, Crimes that concern Life, or Member, or Banishment, Treason, Conspiracy or Felony, above 10 s. or Civil Right or Cause of Action at Law.

**Inn keepers.** None to keep a Publick House without License from the County Court, on penalty of 5 l. or Imprisonment during Pleasure.

Merchants not to Retail under three Gallons of Wine or Syder, and a Quart of Strong Waters.

Publick Houses must have a Sign within three Months, or forfeit their License.

And sell Beer at 2 d. *per* Quart, 4 Bushels of Malt to the Hogshead, on penalty of 40 s.

If they brew with any thing instead of Malt, to pay 5 l.

They must suffer none to be drunk, or to have above half a pint of Wine, or to sit above half an Hour, or after Nine at Night, on penalty of 5 s.

If they conceal a Drunkard, or send not for the Constable, they pay 5 l.

Whoever is drunk, pays 3 s. 4 d. for drinking too much ; 2 s. 6 d. for staying more than half an Hour ; and 5 s. for sitting after Nine at Night ; to be imprison'd till he pays, or sit in the Stocks 3 Hours.

If he abuses the Constable, or strives to Escape, he may commit him till he pays, or till Order from the Magistrate.

Licens'd Houses may entertain Travellers or Seafaring Men in the Night.

Private Persons pay 20 s. or sit in the Stocks for the first Offence, in permitting People to tipple in their Houses ;

Houses ; 5 s. for the second ; to be bound to better Behaviour or committed for the third.

Merchants of Wine to pay 10 s. if any drink to Excess in their Cellars.

Drunkards forfeit double for the second Offence, and treble for the third ; if not able to pay it, they must be whipp'd with ten Stripes.

They must be committed for the fourth Offence, or find Sureties for their good Behaviour.

Persons keeping a Publick House, shall be disabled from keeping one for ever, if they offend in this *Point* the third time.

Whatever Victualler is not provided to entertain Strangers Horses with Stable Room and Attendance, pays 2 s. 6 d. and double Damages.

Retailers pay 5 s. *per* Butt of Wine, and 2 d. *per* Quart of Strong Waters to the Country ; the Duty to be accounted for, and an account of what the Retailer buys to be given every six Months to the Treasurer, or the Wine is forfeited, half to the Treasurer and Informer.

They must not sell Wine above 6 d. a Quart more than what it cost them *per* Butt.

The Treasurer may appoint Officers to collect this Duty, and take it in Wines or other Goods ; he is to have 2 s. in the pound.

Whoever sells Drink, except to a Stranger, in Time of a Lecture, pays 5 s.

Offences against this Law determin'd by one Magistrate, who may warrant the Constable to levy the Fines.

One Confessing, is good Witness against another.

Constables may search for Offenders on Lord's-Days and Lecture-Days ; they forfeit 10 s. for any Neglect.

Licenses must be renewed every Year, on penalty of 5 l.

This does not extend to Vintners under Contract with the Publick.

Persons disturbing the House where they drink, pay 5 s. if the Master suffers it, his License shan't be renew'd.

Those who are with them are Guilty, unless they testify their Dislike.

Those who are addicted to Tippling, and warn'd by select

select Men not to frequent Taverns, shall pay 5 s. if found in a publick House.

Keepers of publick Houses must have a Licence, not to entertain such Persons : if they do, to pay 20 s.

**Judges.** No Person is to sit as Judge in a Cause when his Relation is concern'd.

**Judgments.** If a Judgment or Execution be sold it is void in Law.

If the Party dyes before he has had Satisfaction, his Executor shall renew it.

Judgment confess'd before two Magistrates is good, the Clerk may receive a Shilling Fee.

If a Person whose Goods are taken in Execution owns what is not his own, he makes it good, and pays double Damages.

If other Person's Goods be seiz'd in Execution, they must be restor'd, and another Execution granted, as if no Goods had been seiz'd at all.

**Juries.** The Clerk in Court must send a Warrant to Constables to summon Jurymen, in proportion to the Inhabitants.

He must give Notice to the Freemen to chuse and return those chosen.

None must be warn'd from *Salem* to *Ipswich*, or *Ipswich* to *Salem*.

In special Courts Jurymen have 4 s. a Day from those who desir'd that Court.

The Juries at the Court of Assistants are chosen in *Suffolk* and *Middlesex*.

Jurors sworn are to find the Fact according to Evidence, the Judge to determine Matter of Equity.

Cases of Life or Banishment try'd in inferior Courts, only by special Jury.

Grand Juries summoned once a Year to present Misdemeanors.

No Juror shall discover a Crime, when under Tye of Conscience to the contrary, except the publick would suffer, or legal Testimony is requir'd.

Every Grand Jurymen is to have 3 s. a Day out of the Perquisites of the Court.

The Jury may bring in their Verdict special, and then the Court determines.



Jurors may find in their Verdict as much as they can, if they can't find the main Issue.

If the Court and Jury differs, the case issues in the Court of Assistants.

They may there bring new Pleas and Evidence.

If the Plaintiff pursues not his Cause there, the Defendant is to have Costs the next County Court.

Any Juror not satisfy'd, may openly in Court consult with any Man.

No Juror is forc'd to serve above one ordinary Court in a Year, except summoned, in cases of Life, or Banishment.

Grand Juries must serve two Courts together at least.

Plaintiffs or Defendants not appearing, are nonsuited, and to pay Costs to him who does appear.

The Parties may agree to try it afterwards, the Plaintiff paying half Fees for a new Entry.

Any presented by the Grand Jury, or summon'd by the Magistrate, must be proceeded against for Contempt, if they don't appear.

In all Civil Cases the Verdict of the Jury must be accepted. But upon apparent corruption, the Party aggrieved may attain the Jury, and have Execution respited, upon his being bound to prosecute at the next Court of Assistants, and the Clerk summons a new Jury of 24, to try the Action of Attaint.

If they find for the Plaintiff, the former Defendant pays Damages, if corruption be found in the Jurors, the Court fines, or imprisons; if they are acquitted, the Plaintiff pays double Damages, the former Judgment is good, and Execution issued.

## I.

**Lands.** All Lands are Freeholds, and subject to no Fines upon Alienations, nor Harriots, Wardships, Escheats, or Forfeitures, on the Death of Parents, or Ancestors for ever.

**Leather.** None but Tanners are to tan, on Forfeiture of 6s. 8d.

Whoever cuts the Hide in fleaing, pays 1s. for every cut.

Lea-

Leather badly tann'd is forfeited, if expos'd to Sale.

Tanners having their Fatts in improper Places, or putting Leather in warm Moors, pay 20*l*.

Curriers not to dress Leather badly tann'd, but to curry Leather well, on Forfeiture of the Hide that is prejudic'd.

Every Town must appoint Persons to view the Leather, to seal what is good, and seize what is otherwise.

If the Owner submits not, it is to be view'd by four skilful Persons, who are to make their Report to the next County Court.

The Officer's Fee for Sealing is 1*d*. *per* Hide for Parcels under five, and 6*d*. for every Dickar above.

If he is not faithful, he forfeits the Value of the Leather.

Fines are paid, a Third to the Shire, a Third to the Town, and a Third to the Seizer.

**Liberties.** Any Person may come into Court, or Council, and move for any thing in a decent Manner.

Every Housholder has free Fishing and Fowling, in any River, Bay, &c. within the Precincts of the Town where they dwell, so far as the Sea ebbs and flows, unless it be appropriated by the Freemen.

No Town to appropriate to one Person above ten Acres.

Lands adjoining have the Property to Low-water mark, but no Proprietor to hinder the Passage of Boats where the Sea ebbs and flows.

Any may pass thro' another's Lands, not trespassing on Corn, or Meadow.

Any one may remove himself out of the Jurisdiction.

**Lying.** Whoever publishes a Lye to the Prejudice of the publick, or any private Person, pays 10*s*. or sits in the Stocks two Hours for the first Offence, for the second, 20*s*. or whipp'd ten Stripes, for the third, 40*s*. or fifteen Stripes; every new Fault increases 10*s*. or five Stripes.

Fines to be levy'd, or Punishment inflicted by the Marshal.

The Offender may appeal to the County Court.

If without Cause, he pays double Fine.

Persons must correct their Children or Servants under Age for this Fault before the Officers.

**Malt:**

## M.

**Malt.** Malt must be in good Condition, on Penalty of 1 s. *per* Bushel.

No Wheat, Barley, Biscuit, Beef, Flower, to be imported, on Penalty of Confiscation.

Marshals and Constables may seize wherever they find it, and have a fourth Part.

**Manslaughter.** If any one shall kill another in defending himself, or one who attempts to rob, or murder, or break into a Dwelling House, he shall be blameless.

**Manswearing.** Whoever steals a Person, is to be put to Death.

**Marriages.** Whoever strikes his Wife, or her Husband, is fin'd not exceeding 10 l, or otherwise punish'd, as the Court directs.

None are to be marry'd 'till it has been publish'd in the Meeting, where they dwell three Times, or affix'd to the Meetinghouse Doors for 14 Days.

None are to court a Maid, without Consent of her Parents, 5 l. for the first Offence, 10 l. for the second, Imprisonment for the third, 'till releas'd by the County Court.

Marry'd Persons must live together, unless the Court of Assistants approve of the Cause to the contrary.

None are to marry Persons but the Magistrate.

None may marry the Sister of a former Wife.

**Marshals.** Every Court shall have a Marshal to execute Writs, Summons, &c. and to levy Goods by Warrant, which he is to deliver to the Plaintiff, or make him Satisfaction.

Executions must be return'd to the Clerk that granted them, with an Account, and if the Plaintiff is not satisfy'd, the Clerk may grant Execution for what remains.

The Marshal is to serve and return Attachments, to levy Fines by Warrant, or to pay 2 s. *per* Pound for what is not collected or return'd.

He is to be no Clerk nor Recorder.

His



His Fees are for Fines, 1 s. *per* Pound, for Attachments within a Mile 1 s. 3 d. for Executions 1 s. *per* Pound, for Sums under 10 l; 6 d. *per* Pound more, for all under 40 l; 3 d. more, for all under 100 l; 1 d. more, for all above, out of the Estate of the Defendant.

If his Fees answer not his travelling Charges, he has 6 d. *per* Mile.

He is to pay to the Marshal-General 3 d. in 15 d. of Attachments, and 3 d. in 12 d. of Executions, who is also to have 2 d. *per* Quart of strong Waters retail'd, the Benefit of importing them, and 50 s. of those who sell them without License, if he informs.

The Marshal in levying Fines, &c. may after demand, break Doors, Locks, &c. and require Assistance.

He may levy Fines for whatever extraordinary Charges he is at.

He must not seize Bedding, Apparel, Tools, Arms, or what's necessary to Life.

No Officer is oblig'd to search for any Man's Estate, but at the Place of Abode, he may take the Person, if he will not direct him to his Goods.

If he does any one an Injury, he may be su'd.

**Masters, Servants.** Servants can't sell any thing without Licence.

Workmen must work the whole Day; Time to be allow'd for Food and Rest; the Freemen may settle the Rates of Labour and Time, and Men must work according to such Rules.

If any Difference arise about it between Towns, the County Court decides it.

Servants running away may be brought back again by Force.

Wages may be paid in Corn, valued by two Freemen chosen; if these don't agree, the Magistrate or Constable chuses a Third, who decides it.

Whoever flies from a cruel Master to a Freeman, may be harbour'd, giving Notice to the Master and Magistrate.

None are to be turn'd over for above a Year, but by Consent of some Court.

If a Servant is hurt he goes free, and the Master recompences as the Court determines.

Faith-

Faithful Servants not to be sent away empty, unfaithful nor unpunish'd.

**Militia.** The Militia is commanded by a Major-General, that of *Suffolk*, *Middlesex* and *Effex* by the Serjeant-Major of each, that of *Norfolk* by the Major of *Effex*.

The Serjeant-majors are chosen by the Freemen and Housholders, by a Warrant from the Major-General.

They must exercise their Regiments once in three Years, and have 20 *l.* for it out of the Treasury.

They may fine and levy upon Delinquents, with Consent of their Officers.

Housholders and Freemen chose the Officers, to be confirm'd by the County Court.

Towns chargeable with 64 Soldiers shall chuse all Officers, and form a Company, others only Serjeants and Corporals, the Major joyning small Towns into a Company.

Officers must have their Commission from the General Court, and take Care of the Equipage of their Companies, and exercise them six Times a Year, and punish Disorders corporally, or by Fine, under 20 *s.*

Soldiers and all Inhabitants are to be furnish'd with Arms, on Penalty of 20 *s.* and Males above sixteen to attend Exercises, on Penalty of 5 *s.* except Magistrates, Deputies, Officers of Court, Elders and Deacons, those of *Harvard-College*, School-masters, Physicians and Surgeons, Treasurers, Surveyors General, publick Notary, Masters of Ships above 20 Ton, Fishermen at fishing Seasons, constant Herdsmen, one Servant of a Magistrate and teaching Elder, the Sons and Servants of the Major General, and those who are infirm.

The Clerk of every Company must keep a List, take Notice of Offenders, view Arms and Ammunition twice a Year, and give an Account to the Captains, and levy Fines, and lay them out for Trophies, Colours, Drums, Halberds, or Arms and Ammunition for the poorer Sort.

A Committee shall have Power in every Town to appoint a Watch.

The Committee of *Boston*, *Charles-Town*, *Salem* and *Ipswich* consists of the chief Officer of Horse, and a chief Officer of every Company of Foot.

Every

Every Committee is requir'd to give Notice of every Alarm to the Magistrate and Major.

On the Major's Death, the oldest Captain succeeds till Orders from the Superior.

Commissions take their Seniority from that of the Town they serve for, except those of *Boston*, who have their Seniority from the Date of their Commissions.

Commissioners of Militia alone, are to Impress Soldiers, and take care of Fortifications and Artillery.

Watches are set half an Hour after Sun-set; and none to fire a Gun afterwards, on penalty of 40 s.

They may detain any they suspect till Morning.

If any resist a Centinel in time of War, he may fire on him, and give the Alarm.

Smiths are to repair Arms brought to them immediately, in Time of War; and within 10 Days in Time of Peace, on penalty of 10 s.

Every Town must have a Magazine, on penalty of 10 s.

The select Men must provide a Quintal of Powder, a Quintal and half of Musket-Ball, and 28 pound of Match to every 50 Men, and renew it, on penalty of five pound.

The Horse are commanded by the Majors of the Counties, and every Company chuse their Officers.

Every Trooper is to have a good Horse, with Furniture, on penalty of 10 s. and not to change it, or disband himself without Leave, under penalty of a Fine not exceeding 50 s. at the Discretion of the Officer.

He must attend six Days Exercise every Year, or pay 5 s. on every Default.

The Clerk of the Troop has the same Employment with him of a Company, only he is to have Marshal's Fees for Travelling, and to levy no Fines within a Month after default.

In case of Alarm, all must repair to the Guard, or pay 5 pound.

None shall be list'd a Trooper, that is not rated 100 l. in a single Rate, or his Children.

Disobedience of Orders punish'd as usual, at the Discretion of the Officer.

All Persons liable to serve in Constable's Watches, are so in Military.



Officers to obey the Major General.

All listed in the Militia or extraordinary Troops, are subject to *Marshal Laws*.

Majors or Officers may march out of their County to annoy the Enemy ; tho' not else ; the chief Officer of a Place to be defended, is to command those posted in it, unless the Major is present, or the General Court or Council order it otherwise.

The Commissioners of War are not to pass a Debenture of the Time a Man has serv'd, without a Note of the Committee whence he came, certifying whether the Arms were his own, or are return'd.

If a Man is slain, the Certificate of a Captain will do.

The Committees may fortify their Towns, and appoint Garrisons, and oblige the Inhabitants to work, on penalty of 5 s. *per Day*.

They may dispose of or augment their Magazines, and assess the Town for it.

Fines not levy'd within a Month by the Clerk may be levy'd by the Marshal on the Clerk himself for the Captain.

The Clerk is to account for all Fines with the Captain in six Weeks.

**Millers.** Millers must weigh all Corn, and take a 16th part for grinding.

**Mines.** Whoever discovers a Mine in this Jurisdiction, enjoys the Profits thereof, with a fit Proportion of 21 Years, he may buy the Interest of *Indians* in the Land where 'tis, but not enter on another's Property.

If he discovers it in his own Land, 'tis his own for ever except a fifth of the Oar.

**Ministers.** Every Town must chuse a Minister, and pay him according to Agreement ; if not the Justices may rate them according to their Ability.

If they are without one six Months, the Quarter-Session gives them three Months to supply themselves.

If they still neglect it, they chuse for them, and oblige them to pay him.

Every Town having 50 House-holders, shall provide a School-master to teach to write and read ; if it have 100, it shall have a Grammar-School, the select Men to see them paid ; whatever Town neglects it, pays 10 l.

Every

Every gather'd Church shall chuse its Minister, and if the major part of the Inhabitants concur with the Church's Act, he shall be maintain'd by the Town.

The Town of *Boston* was left by this Act to their own Customs.

Where no Church is gather'd, the rateable Inhabitants chuse, with the Advice of three neighbouring Ministers, giving 15 Day Notice.

If any refuse to pay his proportion, he is fin'd by the Quarter-Session, 40 s. for the first Offence, and 4 l. for every other.

If the Majority of the Inhabitants refuse a Minister chosen by the Church, the Elders and Messengers of three or five Neighbouring Churches are call'd; if they approve of him, he is the Minister of the Town, and must be maintain'd.

Those who voted as Church-members, may also vote as Inhabitants.

A Town neglecting a School, pays 20 s. every Master must be approv'd by the Minister, or two neighbouring Ministers.

No Minister is to be a School-master.

The Quarter-Sessions may appoint Men to assess and raise what is due to the Minister by Contract or Allowance settled by them, the Inhabitants to name the Assessor.

But if they won't act, the select Men must.

**Money.** No Coin to be current, except *English*, or coin'd here of Silver of the Alloy of *English* Money, 2 d. per Shilling less Value than *English* Money.

Officers of the Mint are to have One Shilling in Twenty, every Shilling to weigh 3 Drams *Troy Weight*; other Pieces in the same proportion.

No one to carry more than 20 s. out of the Country, on penalty of the whole of his Estate, a Third to the Informer.

**Monopolies.** No Monopolies but of profitable Inventions, and for a short Time.

**Murder.** Wilful Murder is punish'd with Death.

## O.

**Oaths, Subscriptions.** No Oaths or Subscriptions are to be impos'd, but those appointed by the General Court.

The County Court, or any Magistrate out of Cavit, is authoriz'd to require an Oath of Fidelity of all Inhabitants who have not taken it, and of Strangers after two Months Abode; if they refuse, they forfeit 5 s. for every Week, or must give Security for their Fidelity.

## P.

**Payments.** All Contracts must be paid in the Specie bargain'd for.

**Petitions.** All Petitions to the General Court, on common Occasions, pay 2 s. 6 d. to the Clerk on Delivery.

Petitions for Abatement of Fines, Mitigation of Penalty, Gratuities, Debts, Controversies, 10 s.

Petitions of Magistrates or Deputies either for themselves or the Country exempted. The Clerks discount what is paid to them for Petitions in their Salary.

None are to be presented to the General Court, after four Days of the Court of Elections, or the first Week of other Sessions.

**Pipe-staves.** The select Men are to view Pipe-staves before shipp'd, and to throw by those that are any way defective, and to have 2 s. *per* Thousand.

Those offer'd to be shipp'd unsearch'd, are forfeited.

Masters taking such on Board, pay 5 l.

Refuse-staves may be sold or shipp'd, if as such, and not as merchantable.

**Poor.** The County Court, or two Magistrates, determine about Provision for the *Poor*, with an Appeal to the Court of Assistants.

Three Months Residence is a Settlement, except the select Men warn them away, and complain to the County Court, if they stay.

**Porters.**



**Porters.** The select Men appoint *Porters*, and adjust their Wages.

**Possession.** Possession for five Years gives a Property.

**Pound Breach.** Every Village or Town must maintain a Pound.

Whoever impounds a Beast, must give Notice to the Owner, or cry them at the two next Markets or Lectures, and the Owner must pay Damages, tho' the Cattle escape.

Rescuing Cattle going to pound, is fin'd 40 s. breaking the pound 5 s. to answer all Harm done, and to be whipp'd, if not able to make Satisfaction.

**Powder.** The Captain of the Castle is to notify to all Masters coming into the Bay, and the Constables to those coming into other Ports, that they are to give an account of the Ammunition they bring to the Notary within a Month, with the Names of the Persons to whom it is consign'd, on penalty of 5 l.

No Gun-powder to be exported, without License, on penalty of Forfeiture.

The County Court may appoint Searchers to prevent it.

The Undertakers of the Powder-mill may have a Warrant to impress Men for publick Work.

**Prisons.** Malefactors are to be convey'd to *Prison* at their own Charge, if they are able to bear it.

The County Court is to appoint a House of Correction in every County, and a Master for it.

The select Men are to provide Materials for Work, the Profit is the Master's, he allowing to the Offenders mean Food, or half what they earn.

Every one must be whipp'd at his Entrance, under 10 Stripes, and then employ'd by Task till discharg'd.

If they won't work, the Master must correct and abridge them of Food, and not discharge them without Warrant.

Whoever helps a Prisoner to escape, shall answer for him; and suffer besides, as the Court determines.

The Goaler is to suffer what the Prisoner deserv'd, if he escapes thro' his Neglect.

Goalers must give to the Courts from time to time true Lists of their Prisoners.

The Courts determine what they are to be paid for their Maintenance, and by whom.

The Plaintiff in Civil Causes must give Security for Food and Physick, or the Prisoner swearing he is not worth 5 *l.* may be dismiss'd.

The ordinary Allowance is 2 *s.* 6 *d.* per Week for each Prisoner.

**Protestation.** Whoever dissents from the Majority of the Court, may have his Protest enter'd, but without Reasons.

**Punishment.** None to be twice punish'd for one Offence.

Corporal Punishments not to be Inhumane.

None to be whipp'd who can pay Fines; except the Case is extraordinary, and his Life scandalous.

None to be rack'd, unless it appears there are Confederates, and he won't discover them.

## R.

**Rape.** Rapes are punish'd with Death, or some grievous Punishment the Court appoints instead of it.

Whoever has Carnal Knowledge of a Child under 10 Years of Age, suffers Death.

**Records.** All Judgments are to be recorded, and Evidences kept.

The Jury must deliver up the Writings committed to them when they give their Verdict.

Clerks of the Writs in every Town must record Births and Burials, and return a Copy to the Recorder of the County Court, paying a Penny for every Birth or Burial.

All Parents, or Masters, or Executors, must notify to the Clerk every Birth or Death, and pay 3 *d.*

Every married Man shall notify to him his Marriage, under the Hand of the Magistrate who married him, and be enter'd paying 3 *d.* this also to be return'd as the other; Persons not doing this, pay 1 *s.*

Clerks not making their Annual return, pay 5 *l.* and 5 *s.* for omitting any particular Person.

Any Man may record Testimonies before two Magistrates, Deeds, or Evidence legally confirmed.

Any one may search Records, or have Exemplifications,

Whoever defaces Records, pays treble Damages, and suffers otherwise, as the Court thinks fit.

**Replevin.** Persons may replevy their Goods, except upon Execution or Fine, giving Security to prosecute the Replevin, and answer what shall be recover'd at Law.

S.

**Sabbath.** Whoever profanes the Sabbath after Admonition, pays for the first Offence 5 *s.* for the second 10 *s.* to be bound over to the County Court for the third; Governours of Youth under seven Years to suffer for them.

Drinking or sporting on Saturdays after Sun pays 5 *s.* Persons refusing to pay, must suffer Corporal Punishment, as the Court determines.

No Work to be done on the Sabbath, on Penalty of 10 *s.* for the first Offence, to be doubled for every following one.

To travel to a Meeting not allow'd by Law, is a Profanation of the Sabbath.

**Sailors.** No Retailer can recover Money of a Sailor, due for strong Liquors.

**Salt.** Salt must be measured by an Officer in every Maritime Town, who is to have 17 *d.* per Hoghead.

**Seal.** The Governour or Deputy must affix the publick Seal to all Commissions or publick Writings, without Fee.

The Secretary must write and get it seal'd for 1 *s.*

**Self-murther.** All Self-murderers must be buried in the High-way, with a Load of Stones on their Grave.

**Schools, See Ministers.**

**Sheep.** Any Man may keep what Sheep he pleases on a Common not stinted, belonging to the Town where



he lives, on a Common flinted, he may use his Share, accounting five Sheep to a Cow.

The select Men are to clear the Commons of Brush and Wood, and to set the Fines for putting Rams to the Flock.

Whoever molests Sheep, pays 5 s. and double Damages.

If a Dog kills or hurts Sheep, the Owner must hang him, or pay double Damages; if after Warning, he must do both.

Sheep must be wash'd, and not put into dirty or sandy Ground between that and sheering, on penalty of 1 s. *per* Sheep.

No short Locks or Lumps of Dirt or coarse Tails to be wound in the Fleeces, on Penalty of 1 s.

**Ship.** The Owner or Builder of any new Ship must give Notice of it to the Governour, or his Deputy, or any two Magistrates before they plank, that Officers may view it, on penalty of 10 l.

The Surveyors may cause bad Materials to be chang'd; if the Builder and they differ, two Shipwrights swearing to be Faithful, must determine it, and be paid by him in Fault.

No Health to be drank on Board any Ship in Harbour, or Gun to be fir'd after Sunset, or on the Sabbath, on penalty of 20 s. for every Health or Gun.

All Ships above 20 Tun, except those whose Owners are Inhabitants, pay half a pound of Gun-powder for every Ton.

No Persons are to trade with any Ship till it comes to Anchor, and under command.

**Spinning.** All Hands not employ'd, are oblig'd to spin.

The select Men may assess Families at one fourth, half or whole Spinner, or more.

Every whole Spinner is to spin 3 pound *per* Week of Wollen, Cotton, or Linnen, for 30 Weeks in a Year, on penalty of 1 s. *per* pound short.

**Sodomy.** Sodomy is punish'd with Death, if one of the Parties was forc'd, or under 14, shall not die, but be severely punish'd.

**Strangers.** Christian Strangers flying from Tyranny and Oppression to be maintain'd by the publick till otherwise provided for.

Men-

Men-Strangers upon their Arrival are to give an Account of themselves before the Governour, or his Deputy, or two Magistrates, and to have the Benefit of, and to be subject to the Laws, as well as the Inhabitants.

None to be entertain'd above three Weeks without Licence, if the Constables know they are, they must return their Names to the County Court.

**Strayers.** Beasts taken up straying must be given to the Constable, and cry'd three Times, if worth 20 s. at the two next Markets, or meeting Houses.

If the Finder gives no Notice in a Month, or records not the Goods found in three Months in the County Court, he forfeits the Value.

The Owner may claim in a Year, paying Charges, if no Claim be made, the Goods are half to the Finder, and half to the Country.

If they put not a Whith about the Neck of the Beast found straying for a Month, they lose the Charges of taking and keeping; if it be taken off by the Owner, he loses the Value to the Finder.

No Beast is to be taken up as straying, from the first of *April* to the 20th of *December*, unless it trespass in Inclosures.

**Sureties.** Sureties for Appearance shall not be discharg'd 'till the Principal be surrendred, or the Execution satisfied, unless it be delay'd above a Month after Judgment.

Goods attached are held 'till Judgment is satisfied.

If Bond for Appearance is forfeited, the Court proceeds to Hearing and Judgment, and if the Plaintiff have a Verdict, Judgment is granted, and Execution issued against Defendants and Sureties.

**Swearing.** Whoever curses or swears, pays 10 s. or sits in the Stocks, if more than once, the Penalty is doubled.

Any Magistrate may determine this Cause.

**Swine.** The select Men are to settle Orders, to prevent Mischief by Swine, or to pay 40 s.

Satisfaction is to be made for the Damage they do, if the Fences were as the select Men order'd.

If impounded, and not own'd for three Days, he may give three Days Notice to the two next Towns,  
if

if within five miles, and sell them by Outcry, or have them apprais'd, and keep them.

If the Owner appears, he may have the Overplus after Charges and Damages are defray'd.

## T.

**Tile-Earth.** Tile-Earth must be dug before *November*, and turn'd once a month, on Penalty of half the Tiles made of that Earth.

**Tobacco.** None to smoak so near to a House, Barn, &c. as to endanger firing it, on Penalty of 10 *l.* and Damages, if they happen.

None to smoke in a publick House, so as to offend the master or guests, on Penalty of 2 *s.* 6 *d.*

**Tolling of Cattle.** All Cattle tolled must be tolled in the Clerk of the Writs Book, at 3 *s.* a Head, at the Peril of the Buyer.

The Seller enters his Name with two Vouchers, who are to make good the Damage, if the Cattle are challeng'd.

Any one who has lost Cattle, may search the Toll-Book without Charge.

**Township.** The Freemen may make Laws for their Town, except in Criminal Cases, and impose Fines under 20 *s.* and chuse their select men, not exceeding 9.

Any Householder aged 24, rated at 8 *l.* Estate, having taken the Oaths to the Government, may be a select man, Juror, or Constable, though not free, provided the majority of select men are so.

Every Town may fine one refusing to serve as Constable 5 *l.* the Town of *Boston* 10 *l.*

No Cottage or Dwelling-House to be admitted to the Privilege of Common, but by the Towns Consent.

Constables must serve the Warrants of the select men, and levy their Fines.

**Treasurers.** The County Treasurer must keep exact Accounts, and not make any Payment to any indebted to the Country, without deducting the Debt.

All Fines arising in County Courts, or order'd by one Magistrate or Commissioner in Criminal Cases are paid to him, the Treasurer is chosen annually by the Freemen.

The



The Secretaries of Courts shall give an Account of all Dues coming to them within 14 Days after the Court ends, who is to warrant the Constable to levy them within a Week.

He is to give in his Account to the General Court every Year, and to have 1 s. *per* Pound for all Fines, and to be free from all Rates.

If he has not enough to defray publick Expences, the County Court must rate the County for the Deficiency.

He is to present the Names of negligent Constables to the County Court.

**Tryals.** All Tryals are by Bench and Jury, unless where the Law has order'd it otherwise.

An Offender may challenge any of his Jury, with shewing Cause.

Children and Ideots to have all reasonable Allowances.

## V.

**Vagabonds.** Vagabonds are to be carried before the Magistrate, and corrected, and sent from Constable to Constable, 'till they come home, if they won't tell their Home, they go to the House of Correction.

**Votes.** Every Freeman call'd to vote, may do it according to his Conscience; if he is silent, he must be deem'd as a Negative.

If the President of any Assembly will not put the Question, the majority may, and punish him for refusing.

**Usury.** No man shall be adjudg'd for Forbearance of a Debt above 8 *per Cent. per Annum*, Bills of Exchange excepted.

## W.

**Watching.** The Constable's Watch begins the first of *May*, and continues 'till *October*.

It must consist of able men, and be order'd by the Constable, unless the select men appoint otherwise.

All warn'd upon the Watch must serve, or pay 5 s. except remote Farmers, Magistrates, Deputies, Elders of Churches, Officers of the Country, or Militia.

The Watch must examine all in the Streets after 10, and secure them 'till morning, if they don't give a good Account of themselves.

If any are found in Debauchery or Drunkeness, they are kept 'till the Law is satisfied.

**Weights and Measures.** The Treasurer must provide, at the County's Charge, seal'd Measures and brass Weights and Standards.

The Constable of every Town must get a Set try'd by these, and sealed by the Treasurer, or his Deputy.

He is to deliver them to the select men; who are to chuse an Officer to be sworn in the next County Court, to whom all the Inhabitants are to bring their Weights and Measures to have them try'd, and seal'd the second month in every Year.

The Constable, select Men or Sealer pay 40 s. if they neglect their Duty, the Inhabitants 3 s. 4 d.

The select Men must appoint one to be sworn for measuring Corn, Wood, or Boards.

None are obliged to receive these Commodities, unless measur'd by him.

**Wharfage.** Goods are to pay Wharfage according to settled Rates, only where the Wharfs are made and maintain'd.

Weighty Goods must be set on End, or 7 Foot from the side, on Penalty of double Wharfage, none to lye on the Wharf above 48 Hours.

The Wharfinger may take his Wharfage out of the Goods, if not otherwise paid.

None to cast Anchor, or do any thing else in, or near the Cove at *Boston*, that may endanger other Vessels, on Penalty of 10 s. besides Damages.

None to cast into the Cove any thing to fill it up, or annoy the Inhabitants, on Penalty of 40 s.

**Wills.** Wills must be recorded in the County Court, or Administration taken out within 30 Days after Demise.

Whoever enters upon, or embezzels the Estate of the Deceas'd, before he proves, and records the Will of the Deceas'd, or takes out Administration, pays all Debts of the Deceas'd, whether Assuits be prov'd, or not, and 5 l. per Month, 'till the Will is prov'd, or Administration taken out.

If an Executor refuse to act, or Friends refuse to administer, the Clerk of the Writs in the Town, notifies it to the County Court, on Penalty of 40 s. per Month, and the Court takes Care of the Estate. Two

Two Magistrates with the Clerk of the County may take a Probate of Wills attested by two Witnesses, or grant Administration, giving Notice of, and recording it in the next County Court.

The County Court divides the Estate of an Intestate among the Wife and Children; Daughters are to be Coheirs, and eldest Sons to have a double Portion.

**Witches.** Witches suffer Death.

**Witnesses.** None to die but by two Evidences, *Viva Voce*.

Any Magistrate or Commissioner may take Evidence from one above 14, but it is not good in Court, unless the Person is present to be farther examin'd, except he live above 10 miles off, or is hindred by sufficient Cause.

He who summons Witnesses must pay their Charges, 2 s. per Day to those 3 miles distant, and who are to pass a Ferry, except that between *Charles-Town* and *Boston*; 18 d. to others.

Whoever on the Tender of this refuses to give in Evidence, pays the Party's Damages.

Witnesses in Criminal Cases are paid by the Treasurers, and these by the Delinquents.

**Wolves.** Whoever kills a Wolf within 10 miles of a Plantation, contributing to the publick Charge, has 40 s.; 20 s. from the County, 10 s. from the Country, and 10 s. from the Town.

**Wood.** Wood brought by Water is assiz'd, at the Rate of three Load per 4 Ton.

Cordwood must be 8 Foot long, 4 high, and 4 broad, 1647.

**Worship false.** Idolatry is punish'd with Death after legal Conviction.

**Wrecks.** If any suffer Shipwreck, whether Friends or Enemies, their Persons are to be harbour'd, and their Goods preserv'd 'till farther Orders.

Whales, or other such Fish driven on Shore, if they can't be kept shall be improv'd by the Township; or Owners of the Land where they come on Shore, and an Account given to the next General Court.

**Writs.** All Writs, &c. are issued, and proceeded upon in the Name of the King, or Queen of *England*.





# NUMB. V.

*A List of the Council and General Assembly  
of the Province of the Massachuset-Bay for  
the Year 1719.*



WEDNESDAY the 27th of May, being the Anniversary Day appointed by the Royal Charter for chusing His Majesty's Council of this Province; the Great and General Court or Assembly elected the following Gentlemen for the ensuing Year; and all that were present being sworn, took their Places at the Board, having been first approved by His Excellency.

*SAMUEL SHUTE*, Esq; Governour.

MEMBERS of the COUNCIL.

Those that have this (\*) Mark, are new ones.

|                                          |                                   |
|------------------------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| <i>W<sup>m</sup>. Dummer</i> , Esq; L.G. | <i>William Tailer</i> , Esq;      |
| <i>Samuel Sewall</i> , Esq;              | <i>Benjamin Lynde</i> , Esq;      |
| <i>Penn Townsend</i> , Esq;              | <i>Addington Davenport</i> , Esq; |
| <i>John Appleton</i> , Esq;              | <i>Thomas Hutchinson</i> , Esq;   |
| <i>Nathaniel Byfield</i> , Esq;          | <i>John Clark</i> , Esq;          |
| <i>John Higginson</i> , Esq;             | <i>Samuel Brown</i> , Esq;        |
| <i>Samuel Partridge</i> , Esq;           | <i>Thomas Fitch</i> , Esq;        |
| <i>Edward Bromfield</i> , Esq;           | <i>Edmund Quincey</i> , Esq;      |
| <i>Isaac Winslow</i> , Esq;              | <i>Jonathan Belcher</i> , Esq;    |
| <i>Nathaniel Paine</i> , Esq;            | <i>Jonathan Dows</i> , Esq;       |
| <i>John Cushing</i> , Esq;               | <i>Joseph Hammond</i> , Esq;      |
| <i>Nathaniel Norden</i> , Esq;           | <i>Paul Dudley</i> , Esq;         |
| <i>John Otis</i> , Esq;                  | * <i>Samuel Thaxter</i> , Esq;    |
| <i>John Wheelwright</i> , Esq;           | * <i>Charles Frost</i> , Esq;     |

In all 28.

The Members of the House of Representatives for the several Towns, are as follow. Those that have this (\*) Mark, are New ones.

|                     |   |                            |                                           |
|---------------------|---|----------------------------|-------------------------------------------|
| <i>Boston</i> ,     | { | * <i>Elish. Cooke</i> Esq; | <i>Hingham</i> , Col. <i>Sam. Thaxter</i> |
|                     |   | * <i>Oliver Noyes</i> Esq; | <i>Brantrey</i> , * <i>Major John</i>     |
|                     |   | <i>Mr. Isaiah Tay</i>      | <i>Quincey</i> .                          |
|                     |   | * <i>Mr. Willm. Clark</i>  | <i>Dedham</i> , * <i>Capt. Sam. Guild</i> |
| <i>Roxbury</i> ,    |   | <i>Willm. Dudley</i> Esq;  | <i>Medfield</i> , <i>Mr. Henry Adams</i>  |
| <i>Dorchester</i> , |   | <i>Major Thomas</i>        | <i>Weymouth</i> , * <i>Mr. John Tor-</i>  |
| <i>Tileston</i>     |   |                            | <i>rey. Milton,</i>                       |

Milton, Mr. Ephr. Tucker  
Wrentham, \* Mr. Thomas  
Bacon.

Mendon, Josiah Chapin Esq;  
Brooklin, —————

Woodstock, \* Mr. Sam. Paine  
Needham, —————

Salem, { Mr. Tim. Lindal  
          \* Capt. John Gar-  
          dener

Ipswich, { Capt. Matthew  
          Whipple  
          \* Mr. Michael  
          Farley

Lynn, John Burril, Esq  
Speaker

Newbury, { Capt. Richard  
          Kent  
          \* Mr. Nathan  
          Coffin.

Marblehead, John Cawley  
Esq;

Andover, \* Mr. Nehemiah  
Abbot

Bradford, \* Mr. Thomas  
Kimbal

Beverley, \* Mr. Samuel  
Balch

Wenham, Mr. William Ro-  
gers

Rowley, Mr. Joseph Jewet  
Salisbury, Captain John  
Wadleigh

Haverhill, \* John White, Esq  
Amesbury, \* Mr. Jos. Brown

Glocester, Captain Nathaniel  
Coit

Topsfield, \* Mr. James Per-  
kins

Boxford, Mr. Tho. Pearley

Manchester, —————

Cambridge, \* Mr. Andrew  
Bordman

Charles- { Charles Cham-  
Town,      bers Esq;  
              John Foye, Esq

Watertown, Mr. Samuel  
Stearns

Newton, \* Mr. Ebenezar  
Stone

Concord, \* Mr. Benjamin  
Whittemore

Woburn, \* Mr. Samuel  
Walker

Reading, \* Mr. John Brown

Sudbury, \* Mr. Peter Haynes

Marlborough, Thomas How  
Esq;

Malden, Mr. Jacob Wilson

Chelmsford, \* Mr. Stephen  
Pierce

Billerica, \* Oliver Whiting  
Esq;

Sherburn, \* Mr. William  
Rider

Groton, Capt. John Shipley

Lancaster, Mr. John Hough-  
ton

Frammingham, Jos. Buck-  
minster Esq;

Medford, \* Mr. Thomas  
Willis

Lexington, \* Mr. Thomas  
Blegget

Weston, Francis Fullam Esq;

Stow, —————

Springfield, Luke Hitch-  
cock Esq;

Northampton, John Stod-  
dard Esq;

Hadley, \* Mr. John Nash

Hatfield, Mr. John Dick-  
inson

Suffield, Mr. John Austin

Westfield, \* John Ashley Esq;

|                                                 |                                                  |
|-------------------------------------------------|--------------------------------------------------|
| <i>Enfield,</i> _____                           | <i>Little Compt.</i> Tho. Church                 |
| <i>Deerfield,</i> Mr. Thomas Wells              | <i>Esq;</i>                                      |
| <i>Brookfield,</i> * <i>Capt.</i> Tho. Baker    | <i>Swansey,</i> * <i>Mr.</i> John Tho-           |
| <i>Plymouth,</i> * <i>Mr.</i> John Foster       | <i>mas</i>                                       |
| <i>Scituate,</i> * <i>Mr.</i> John Bar-         | <i>Tiverton,</i> <i>Mr.</i> Gershom              |
| <i>ker</i>                                      | <i>Woodel</i>                                    |
| <i>Bridgewater,</i> <i>Mr.</i> Richard          | <i>Attleborough,</i> * <i>Mr.</i> Jerem.         |
| <i>Davenport</i>                                | <i>Whipple</i>                                   |
| <i>Marshfield,</i> Isaac Little <i>Esq;</i>     | <i>Dighton,</i> * <i>Mr.</i> Ebenezar            |
| <i>Duxbury,</i> * <i>Mr.</i> Samuel             | <i>Pitts</i>                                     |
| <i>Scaberry</i>                                 | <i>Norton,</i> * <i>Mr.</i> Nicholas             |
| <i>Rochester,</i> <i>Mr.</i> John Ham-          | <i>White</i>                                     |
| <i>mond</i>                                     | <i>Barington,</i> * <i>Mr.</i> Zechariah         |
| <i>Pembroke,</i> * <i>Capt.</i> Thomas          | <i>Bicknel</i>                                   |
| <i>Barker</i>                                   | <i>Freetown,</i> * <i>Mr.</i> Samuel             |
| <i>Plympton,</i> * <i>Mr.</i> Benoni            | <i>Forman</i>                                    |
| <i>Lucas</i>                                    | <i>York,</i> * <i>Abraham</i> Prebble            |
| <i>Middleborough,</i> * <i>Capt.</i> Ja.        | <i>Esq;</i>                                      |
| <i>Thompson</i>                                 | <i>Kittery,</i> * <i>Charles</i> Frost           |
| <i>Barnstable,</i> * <i>Jos.</i> Lowthorp       | <i>Esq;</i>                                      |
| <i>Esq;</i>                                     | <i>Wells,</i> <i>Capt.</i> Joseph Hill           |
| <i>Eastham,</i> <i>Mr.</i> John Paine           | <i>Falmouth,</i> * <i>Mr.</i> William            |
| <i>Sandwich,</i> * <i>Mr.</i> John Chip-        | <i>Scales</i>                                    |
| <i>man</i>                                      | <i>Berwick,</i> * <i>Captain</i> Samuel          |
| <i>Yarmouth,</i> * <i>Mr.</i> John Hedge        | <i>Plaiſted</i>                                  |
| <i>Harwich,</i> * <i>Mr.</i> William Mir-       | <i>Biddiford,</i> * <i>Mr.</i> Humphrey          |
| <i>rick</i>                                     | <i>Scammon</i>                                   |
| <i>Truro,</i> * <i>Thomas</i> Paine <i>Esq;</i> | <i>Edgar - Town,</i> <i>Mr.</i> John             |
| <i>Bristol,</i> <i>Captain</i> William          | <i>Norton</i>                                    |
| <i>Throop</i>                                   | <i>Chilmark,</i> } <i>Pain</i> Mahew <i>Esq;</i> |
| <i>Taunton,</i> * <i>Seth</i> Williams          | <i>Tisbury,</i> }                                |
| <i>Esq;</i>                                     | <i>Nantucket,</i> <i>George</i> Bunker           |
| <i>Dartmouth,</i> <i>Mr.</i> Jonathan           | <i>Esq;</i>                                      |
| <i>Delano</i>                                   |                                                  |
| <i>Rehoboth,</i> * <i>Mr.</i> Daniel            |                                                  |
| <i>Carpenter,</i>                               |                                                  |

In all 103.

The Representatives of *Hingham* and *Kittery* being chosen of His Majesty's Council, Writs are issued forth to elect two others in their Room.

F I N I S.

INDEX.





# INDEX.

A.

\*\*\* *C A D I A* describ'd,  
\*\*\* 452. Taken by Sir  
\*\*\* *William Phips*, 458.

*Adventurers in England*  
discourag'd from Trad-  
ing with the *Planters*, 109.  
They sell their Shares in  
the Plantation, 110.

*Afflicted. Vid. Witch-*  
*crafts.*

*Aldin*, (Capt. *John*) his  
Examination for Witch-  
craft, 524. Escapes out of  
the Province, 527. Sur-  
renders himself, and is ac-  
quitted, *ib.*

*Alexander Sachem* of the  
*Wompanoags* surprized, and  
carried Prisoner to *Pli-*  
*mouth*, 333.

*America.* Conjectures of  
learned Men about its first  
Inhabitants, 1. Discover-  
ed by *Columbus*, 10. Se-  
veral Voyages of the Eng-

*lish* to the Northern Parts  
of it, 13.

*Amidas*, (Capt. *Philip*) his  
first Voyage to North  
*America*, 13.

*Anabaptists* separate from  
the *New-England Churches*,  
278. Their Sufferings, 279.  
A Law made against them,  
284. A Letter of the Dis-  
senting Ministers of *London*,  
in their Favour, 354. A  
villainous Contrivance to  
render them odious, 356.  
Character of the present *A-*  
*nabaptists* of *Boston*, 589.

*Andrés* (St. *Edmund*) Go-  
vernour of *New-England*,  
420. Marches against the  
*Indians* with an Army of  
1000 Men, 427. Is depo-  
sed, and sent Prisoner to  
*England*, 432. His Male-  
Administration, 433.

*Annapolis Royal* describ-  
ed, 577. Surrender'd to  
the *English* by the Treaty

of *Utrecht*, *ib.*

*Antecosta*, a desolate Island, on which Capt. *Rainford* and his Crew being Shipwreck'd, liv'd a whole Winter, 465.

*Antinomians*, their Rise in *N. England*, 165. Their turbulent Behaviour towards the Government, 170. They are condemn'd by a Synod, 172. And their Leaders banish'd, 175.

*Apology* for the Behaviour of the Magistrates of *New-England* towards the Quakers, 322.

*Assembly General* of the *Massachusetts Bay*, their Number, and Powers, 605.

*Avery* (Rev. Mr.) lost by Shipwreck, 145.

## B.

*Bancroft*, (A. Bishop) his Conduct towards the Puritans, 71.

*Baptism*, Determinations of a Synod about the Subjects of it, 336.

*Barrow* (Henry) his Account of the Sufferings of the *Brownists*, 64. His Sufferings and Death, 67.

*Bastwick* (Dr.) his Sufferings, 150.

*Bay* of the *Massachusetts* describ'd, 585. Of *Boston*, 587.

*Beasts* of *New-England*,

an Account of some of them, 573.

*Bellamont* (Earl of) Governor of *New-England*, 561. But resides at *New-York*, 562.

*Bellingham* (Mr. Rich.) his Death and Character, 373.

*Bible* translated into the *Indian Tongue*, 239.

*Bishop* (*Bridget*) her Trial for Witchcraft, 506. Her Death and Character, 513.

*Boston* built, 134. Its Situation, 585. Describ'd, 587. Number of Inhabitants in it, 588. And of Churches, *ib.*

*Bradford* (Mr. William) chosen Governor of *Plymouth Colony*, 91. His Death and Character, 297.

*Bradstreet* (Mr. Simon) sent Agent to the Court of *England*, 332. His Death and Character, 557.

*Brewster* (Mr. William) puts himself at the Head of the first Colony for *New-England*, 79. His Death and Character, 211.

*Bristol* (New) described, 594.

*Brownists*, their Opinions, 61. Their Sufferings, 63. Several of them remove to *Holland*, 69.

*Brown* (Robert) his Life and Character, 58.

*Bulkly* (Mr. Peter) his Death and Character, 302.

*Burroughs*

*Burroughs* (Reverend Mr. *George*) his Trial for Witchcraft, 501. His dying Behaviour, 515.

*Burton* ( Mr. ) his Sufferings, 150.

## C.

*Cambridge* (N.E.) described, 582. The University, 181, 184, 374, 583.

*Canada* described, 459. Sir *William Phips*'s unfortunate Expedition against it, 460. Another Expedition, 603.

*Canoe* (Indian) describ'd, 26.

*Canonicus*, Sachem of the *Narrhagansets* defies the *English*, 93.

*Cape Breton* yielded to the *French*, 577.

*Carrier* (*Martha*) execut- ed for Witchcraft, 518.

*Carver* ( Mr. *John* ) first Governor of *Plimonth*, 83. His Death and Character, 90.

*Casco* surpriz'd by the *Indians*, 466.

*Castle Island* with the Fort describ'd, 585.

*Cattle* (neat) first brought into *New-England*, 106.

*Charles Town* described, 584.

Charter for *Plimouth* obtain'd by Mr. *Winslow*, 105. Charter of the *Massachusetts*

Bay, 617. Charters of the several Provinces taken from them, 415. The *Massachusetts* Agents solicit the Restoration of theirs, 474. They obtain a new one 477. The old and new Charter compared, 478.

*Catechism* abstract of a Popish one for the *Indians*, 266.

*Chauncey* (Rev. Mr. *Char.*) his Death and Character, 371.

*China*. Some Parts of *America* peopled from thence, 8. Reasons for it, 9.

*Christison* (*Wenlock*) condemn'd for Quakerism, but pardoned, 314.

*Chub* (Capt.) Governor of *Pemmaquid* Fort, 550. Surrenders it to the *French* 551.

*Church* the Method of the first Planters forming one, 126. Of their Admission of Members, 128. The Number of Churches in *Boston*, 589. Their Church Covenant, 126.

*Church Discipline*. The Platform abridged (Appendix Numb. 2.) wherein the present Clergy differ from it, 273, 274.

*Cod* (Cape) described, 16.

*College* (*Harvard*) its Foundation, 181. The Method of Education, and of ra-



king Degrees, 185. The Duty of the President and Fellows, 184. New College built, 374. The present State of the College, 583.

*Colony* (vid.) *Planters*. The Rise of the first *Plimouth* Colony, 76. Their Voyage to *N. England*, 80. The first Colony of the *Massachusetts* Bay, 125. The second Colony, 132. Their Hardships, 133.

*Columbus* his Voyage to *America*, 10.

*Confederation*. Articles between the four grand Settlements of *New-England*, 203.

*Confession of Faith* of *Ponampam* an *Indian* Convert, 237. *Savoy* Confession approved by the *New-England* Synod, 410.

*Confession of a Wizard*, 530.

*Congregational* Principles, 73. Their Platform of Discipline (Append. Num. 2.)

*Connecticut*, the first Settlement, 146. The Hardships they suffer'd the first Winter, 147. United with *Newhaven*, 341. Description of both Colonies, 596.

*Corn* (*Indian*) the manner of planting it, 569.

*Cory* (*Giles*) press'd to Death, 522. His Wife executed for Witchcraft, 521.

*Cotton* (Rev. Mr. *John*)

arrives at *New-England*, 138. Chosen Assistant at *Boston*, *ib.* Is ill treated by the *Antinomians*, 168. His Death and Character, 285.

*Covenant* (Church) of the first *Planters*, 126. Of the converted *Indians*, 235.

*Council of New-England*, their Powers, 604.

*Cradock* (Mr.) first Governor of the *Massachusetts* Colony, 124.

*Cross in the Banner*; its Lawfulness disputed, 142.

*Cudworth* (Capt. *James*) his Letter concerning the Governments Proceedings against the Quakers, 317.

*Customs and Manners* of *New-England*, 613.

## D.

*Davenport* (Rev. Mr. *John*) his Death and Character, 369.

*Declaration* of the Gentlemen at *Boston* at the head of the Revolution, 433.

*Deerfield* Fight, 386.

*Degrees* conferr'd by the College, 186.

*Dennis* (*William*) executed for *Brownism*, 68.

*Diamond* (*John*) tortur'd to Death by the *Indians*, 486.

*Discipline* (vid.) *Church*.

*Dudley* (*Tho.*) Esq; Sen. his Death and Character, 288.

288. *Dudley* (Jun.) Governor of *New-England*, 420.

*Dummer* (Mr. *Shubael*) shot dead at his own Door, 483.

*Dunstan* ( *Hannah* ) her Bravery, 553.

*Dunstar* (Mr. *Henry*) President of *Harvard College* resigns, 289.

## E.

Earthquakes in *N. England*, 181, 339.

*Eastham* built, 212.

*Easty* ( *Mary* ) executed for Witchcraft, 519. Her moving Letter to the Court, 520.

*Eaton* ( *Theoph.* ) his Death and Character, 299.

*Eliot* (Rev. Mr. *John*) arrives at *N. England*, 135. Attempts the Conversion of the *Indians*, 222. His great Labours in the Missionary Work, 230, 239. His Death and Character, 470.

*Endicott* (Mr.) sent to *N. England* to prepare a Settlement for the *Massachusetts* Planters, 124. His Death and Character, 346.

*English* (vid.) *Colony* and *Planters* ) three *English* hang'd for the Murder of one *Indian*, 180. Their Wars with the *Indians* (vid.)

*War*. The Number of the *English* in *N. England*, and their Military Strength, 600. Their Trade, 606. Religion, 608. Customs and Manners, 613. Their Loyalty, 616.

## F.

*Fenwick* (Mr.) arrives at *N. England*, and builds *Say Brook Fort*, 148, 149.

Fire in the new Settlement at *Plimouth*, 107.

*French* make War against *N. England*, 424. Supply the *Indians* with Warlike Stores, 546. Take and demolish *Fort William* and *Henry*, 551. A Squadron of *French* Men of War alarm the Coast, 555. Are included in the Peace of *Ryswick*, 557.

## G.

*Gardiner* (Sir *Christoph.*) his Story, 135.

*Good* ( *Sarah* ) executed for Witchcraft, 513.

*Gorges* (Capt.) settles in the *Massachusetts Bay*, 103. But breaks up, 105.

*Gorton* (Sam.) his Story, 179.

*Gosnold* ( Capt. *Barthol.* ) his Voyage to North America, 15.

*Gospel* (vid.) *Society*,  
*Government* of *N. Eng-*  
*land*, the Revolution of it,  
 429. The Alterations it  
 underwent by the new  
 Charter, 478. The Civil  
 Government at present,  
 604.

*Grave*, Description of an  
*Indian Grave*, 29.

*Greensmith* (Mrs.) exe-  
 cuted for Witchcraft, 339.

*Greenville* (Sir *Rich.*) his  
 Voyage to *North America*,  
 14.

*Greenwood* (Mr.) his Suf-  
 ferings and Death, 67.

*Grievances* of the People  
 of *N. England* under the  
 Administration of Sir *Wil-*  
*liam Andros*, 433.

## H.

*Hampshire* new planted,  
 153. Described, 578.

*Hiaccomes*, an *Indian*  
 Convert, his Courage and  
 Constancy in the Christian  
 Faith, 244.

*Higginson* (Rev. Mr.  
*Francis*) arrives at *New-*  
*England*, 125. His Death  
 and Character, 130.

*Hingham*, the Commo-  
 tions there, 213.

*Hoar* (Dr. *Leonard*) Pre-  
 sident of *Harvard College*  
 resigns, 373.

*Hobameck*, an *Indian*  
 comes to live among the

*English*, 92.

*Hobamocko*, an *Indian*  
 Deity, 33.

*Hooker* (Rev. Mr. *Tho.*)  
 his Death and Character,  
 270.

*Hopkins* (Edw.) his Death  
 and Character, 300.

*Hunt* (Capt.) his Trea-  
 chery to the *Indians*, 20.

*Hutchinson* (Mrs.) her  
 singular Opinions, 166.  
 Occasions a Faction in the  
 State, 167. Her Examina-  
 tion and Behaviour before  
 the Magistrates, 176. She  
 is banish'd, 177. And re-  
 tiring to *Hebgate*, is mur-  
 der'd with her whole Fa-  
 mily by the *Indians*, 178.

## I.

*Jacobs* (George) Sen. exe-  
 cuted for Witchcraft by  
 the Evidence of his Grand-  
 Daughter, 517. She re-  
 cants, ib.

*James I.* King of *Eng-*  
*land* his Behaviour to-  
 wards the Puritans, 70.

*Japan. America* peopled  
 from thence, 8.

*Impropriations*, the buy-  
 ing them suppress'd by A. B.  
*Laud*, and the Money ad-  
 judged to the King, 119.

*Independants*, their Prin-  
 ciples, 73. Their Platform  
 of Discipline (Appendix  
 Numb. 2.) their manner of  
 gathering



gathering Churches, 126. Their Church Covenant, 127. Their ancient manner of admitting Members into their Churches, 128. Their present Method, 275, 589.

*Indians* described, 24. Their Dress, 16, 17, 87, 88. Their Disposition and Way of living, 25. Their Houses, Food, the Diseases that are most fatal to them; their Method of curing the sick, 26, 27, 28. Their Funerals, 29. Their Mournings, 30. Their division of Time, *ib.* Their Religion, 31. Their Marriages, 38. Their Civil Constitution, 39. Their Language, 44. Their manner of saluting the *English*, 96. Commotions among them, 269. They make War with the *English*, 156, 376, 423. The Western *Indians* subdued, 399. The Eastern *Indians* supported by the *French*, 546. They make Peace, 560. Four of their Kings come to *England*, 602. Their Speech to the Queen, *ib.*

*Indian Converts.* The History of their Conversion, 221. A Body of them being civilized, build a Town, 226. They make Laws for themselves, *ib.* 229. Their Form of Go-

vernment, 235. A Confession of Faith of one of them, 237. They are gathered into a Christian Church, 239. An Abstract of two of their Sermons, 240. Dr. *Increase Mathers's* Letter to Professor *Leusden* about them, 251. Their History continued to the present time, 255. Their Vices, 259. Their Fidelity to the *English* in their War with *Philip*, 406.

*Inhabitants (English)* of *N. England*, their Numbers and Military Strength, 600. Their Trade, 606. Religion, 608. Customs and Manners, 613. Their Political Interests, 615. And Loyalty, 616.

## K.

*Kichtan*, an *Indian* Decry, 92.

## L.

*Lad* (Mr. *Tho.*) prosecuted for being present at the Repetition of Sermons in his own Lodgings, 72.

*Lathrop* (Capt.) killed with his whole Party, 386.

*Laud* (A. Bp.) Innovations in the Church in his time, 118. His Severity against the Puritans, 119, 150.

*Laws of the Indians* when civilized, 228, 229. Against the Anabaptists, 284. Laws against the Quakers, 292, 306. *Laws of the Country* abridg'd, (Appendix Num. 4.)

*Leddra (Will.)* executed for Quakerism, 313.

*Lee (Rev. Mr. Sam.)* flies to *N. England*, and dies in his Return, 419.

*Leighton Alexander D.D.*) his Sufferings, 119.

*Lenthal (Mr.)* recants his Opposition to the *N. England Discipline*, 179.

*Leverett (John)* his Death and Character, 409.

*Liberty of Conscience*, the present Magistrates and Ministers of *N. England* for it, 610.

*Library at Cambridge (N. E.)* an Account of it, 183, 583.

*Long-Island* described, with its first Inhabitants, 189.

*Loyalty of the N. English*, 616.

*Lyford* his Seditious Practices against the first Planters, 106. He is banish'd, 107.

## M.

*Main (Province of)* first peopled, 153.

*Maquas. K. Philip* at-

tempts to engage them against the *English*, 394. They ruin his Affairs, 395. Some of their Princes come into *England*, 602.

*Marthas (alias Martin's)* Vineyard planted, 199. The Natives converted by Mr. *Mayhew*, 244.

*Martin (Susanna)* her Trial for Witchcraft, 509.

*Massachusetts Bay.* derivation of the Name, 580. Capt. *Standish* trades with the *Indians* in the Bay, 94. Several unsuccessful Attempts to make Settlements, 95, 103, 111. The rise of the present Settlement, 122. Abstract of their Charter, *ib.* Voyage of the first Colony; their Strength and Numbers, 125. The Province described, 579.

*Massasoiet* (an *Indian* Prince) described, 88. Entertain'd by the Governor of *Plimouth*, 89. Makes an Alliance with them, *ib.* Entertains Mr. *Winslow* and *Hopkins* at his Court, 91. Falls sick and recovers by Mr. *Winslow's* Medicines 98. His Gratitude, 99.

*Mather (Rev. Mr. Rich.)* settles at *Dorchester*, 146. His Death and Character, 368.

*Mather (Increase D.D.)* (his Letter to Dr. *Leusden*, concerning the Conversion of

the *Indians*, 251. Chose Rector of *Harvard College*, 413. And created Dr. of Divinity, 487.

*Mather (Cotton)* D. D. publishes the *Trials of the Witches by Command of the Governor*, 501. His Account of the Circumstances of the *afflicted Persons*, 498. Remarks on his *Trials*, 512. Acknowledges things were carried too far, 538. He declares against all sorts of Persecution for Conscience sake, 330, 611. His Account of the Sufferings of the *Quakers*, 364.

*Mayhew (Mr. Tho.)* Sen. obtains a Grant of *Mather's Vineyard*, 199. Assists his Son in converting the *Natives*, 249.

*Mayhew (Rev. Mr. Tho.)* Jun. his Success in converting the *Indians*, 244. His Method of Instruction, 247. His Death and Character, 248.

*Mayhew (Experience)* his Travels among the *Indians*, 256.

*Merrimack River* described, 582.

*Meteor* in *N. England*, 350.

*Ministers.* A List of such who being silenced by A. Bp. *Laud*, settled in *New-England* before the Year 1640, 195. A List of those who came over after the

*Uniformity Act* in 1662, 338. *Dissenting Ministers of London's Letter* in favour of the *Anabaptists*, 354. Another in favour of the *Quakers*, 362. Their Method of Ordination in *N. England*, 611.

*Mistick Fort* taken by the *English*, 160.

*Mitark*, Prince of the *Gayhead*, his Death and Character, 413.

*Mitchel (Rev. Mr. Jonathan)* his Death and Character, 352.

*Money.* *New English* its value, 608. *Indian Money*, 42.

*Morton (Mr.)* his Villany, 112. Instructs the *Indians* in the use of Fire-Arms, *ib.* Taken Prisoner by Capt. *Standish*, and sent to *England*. 113.

*Mose*, an *Indian Beast* described, 573.

## N.

*Narrhagansets*, their manner of declaring War, 93. They joyn the *English* against the *Peguots*, 160. They break with the *English*, 388. Their chief Fort taken by Storm, 389.

*Natick*, an *Indian Town* describ'd, 234.

*Nations*, names of several *European Nations* in *America*, 6. Names of the *Indian*



*Indian Nations* before the *English* took Possession of it, 22.

*New-England* its Name, 19. *Indian Natives*, 22. Situation, 563. Climate, 564. Soil, 565. Lakes and Rivers, 566. Product, 567. Description of the most considerable Towns, 577. Its present Inhabitants, 606.

*New Hampshire* described, 578.

*Newhaven* Settlement, 152. Unites with *Connecticut*, 341. The County described, 598.

*Newman* (Rev. Mr. Sam.) his Death and Character, 341.

*New Scotland* (vid.) *Acadia*.

*New York* taken from the *Dutch*, 342.

*North*. Northern Nations pass into *America*, 4. And when 8.

*Norton* (Rev. Mr. John) his Death and Character, 340.

*Nurse* (*Rebecca*) executed for Witchcraft, 513.

## O.

*Oakes* (*Urian*) his Death and Character, 412.

*Oldham* his Seditious Practices, 106. Runs the Gauntlet, and is banish'd, 107. His Death, 149.

*Owen* (*John*) D. D. ships his Effects for *N. England*, but is the stop'd by the Court, 338.

## P.

*Patridge* (Rev. Mr. Ralph) his Death and Character, 301.

*Peace* Articles between the *English* and *Indians*, 491, 560.

*Peirce* (*William*) his Treachery against the Colony, 105.

*Peirce* (Capt.) cut to Pieces by the *Indians*, with his whole Party, 392.

*Pemmoquid* Fort described, 488. Taken by the *French* and demolish'd, 551.

*Penry* (Rev. Mr. John) his Sufferings and Death, 65.

*Peguots* disturb the *Connecticut* Planters, 149. Their Situation, 156. Their War with the *English*, 157. They are dispers'd, and their Territory annex'd to the *English* Settlement, 163.

*Phenicians*, whether they sail'd into *America*, 2.

*Philip* Prince of the *Wompanoags* renews his Alliance with the *English*, 334, 370. The Rise of the War between him and the *English*, 376. He begins Acts of Hostility, 379. He is besieg'd, but escapes by a Strata-

Stratagem, 382. His Followers desert him, 394. His Death and Character, 399.

*Phips* (Sir William) finds a rich *Spanish* Wreck, 420. Petitions K. James II. for restoring his Country's Charter, 428. His unfortunate Expedition to *Canada*, 460. He is made Governor of *N. England*, 480. His Death and Character, 544.

*Plantations* (*N. England*) their Equity, 154.

*Planters*. From whence the first Planters came, 76. Their Voyage to *N. England*, 80. They enter into Society, 81. And look out for a Place of Settlement, 83. They skirmish with the *Indians*, 85. And fix at *Paluxet* Bay, 86. Their Hardships, 87. They pallisado their Town, 93. A Famine among them, 95, 103. Their Numbers before the Year 1640, 193.

*Plimouth* (New) built, 86. In danger of being burnt, 107. A Description of the Town, as it was in the Year 1624, 108. Division of Land to each Inhabitant, 113. The County described, 592.

*Pocasset*. Queen drowned, 398.

*Powaws*, or (*Indian* Priests) their Character and Art, 35. Incantations over the

Sick, 99. Aversion to the Christian Religion, 233, 247.

*Prince* (Mr. Tho.) his Death and Character, 375.

*Prisoners*. The *Indians* Cruelty to their *English* Prisoners, 453.

*Procter* (John) executed for Witchcraft, 516. His Letter to the Ministers of *Boston*, 534.

*Protestants* foreign, their Disposition with Relation to the Civil Wars of *England*, 218.

*Providence* and *Warwick* Plantations. The Manners of the Inhabitants, 595.

*Prynne* (Mr.) his Sufferings, 150.

*Psalms*. New *English* Version, by whom composed, 187.

*Puritans*; their Original, 47. Their Sufferings, 50. Many of their Ministers deprived, 54, 71. Intercessions for them without Effect, 55. Their Expectations from K. James I. frustrated, 69. Their Sufferings under A. Bp. *Laud*, 119, 150. Are prohibited going out of the Kingdom, 151.

*Pirates* executed at *Boston*, 374.

## Q.

*Quaboag*, the *English* routed

routed there, 384.

*Quakers*. Their Rise, 291. Penal Laws against them, 292, 296, 304, 306. Their Sufferings and Behaviour under them, 302. Put to Death, 308. The Government's Apology for themselves, 310, 328. A stop put to their Sufferings, 315. Reasons of the Government's Severity towards them, 322. The Quakers complain to K. Charles II. 358. And to the Dissenting Ministers at London, who write to N. England in their Favour, 36. The present State of their Case, 365.

*Quebec* described, 459. Sir *William Phips's* Expedition against it, 460.

## R.

*Rehoboth* described, 594.

*Religion* of the first Planters, 114. The State of Religion in *England* under the Administration of A. Bp. *Laud*, 117, 150. The Religion of the present Inhabitants, 608.

*Revolution* of the Government of N. England, 429.

*Rhode Island* described, 178, 595. Planted by *Antinomians*, *ib.*

*Robinson* (Rev. Mr. John)

settles at *Leyden*, 72. His Congregation resolve to remove to some Part of *America* 76, 77. They send Agents into *England* to prepare for their Voyage, *ib.* Mr. *Robinson's* Farewel Discourse to the Planters, 78. His Death and Character, 110.

*Robinson* (*William*) executed for Quakerism, 308.

*Rogers* (*Rob.*) tortur'd to Death by the *Indian*, 454.

## S.

*Sachems* (*Indian*) their Power, 39. Their Aversion to the *Christian Religion*, 231.

*Salem* described, 581.

*Samoset* (an *Indian*) welcomes the *English* to *America*, 87. His Dress and Entertainment, *ib.*

*Savages* their Dress, 16. *vid.* *Indians*.

*Savoy Confession of Faith* approv'd by a N. *English* Synod, 410.

*Sausaman* (*John*) his Death, and the Execution of his Murderers, 377.

*Say* and *Brook* (Lord) his Title to the Lands about *Connecticut River*, 148.

*Scythians* described, 5. They pass into *America*, 4. Separation from the Church of *England* it Rise, 51.

*Sheppard*



*Sheppard* (Rev. Mr. Tho.) his Death and Character, 277.

*Skelton* (Rev. Mr.) arrives at *New-England*, 125. His Death, 140.

*Small-Pox* fatal to the *Indians*, 139.

*Smith* (Capt.) his Voyage to *N. England*, 19.

*Snake* Rattle described, 574.

*Society* for propagating the Gospel in *N. England*, their Constitution, 261, 263. A List of the Original and present Members, 261, 264. Their Estate and Method of disposing of their Revenues, 263. Of the Society for propagating the Gospel according to the Manner of the Church of *England*, 609.

*Squanto* (an *Indian*) joyns the *English*, 89. His Sham Plot, 94. His Death and Character, 97.

*Standish* (Capt.) reduces *Cubatan* with 14 Men, and the neighbouring *Sachems*, 92. His Death and Character, 290.

*Stevenson* ( *Marmaduke* ) executed for Quakerism, 308.

*Stone* (Capt.) murder'd by the *Indians*, 139.

*Stoughton* (Deputy Governor) prosecutes the War against the *Indians*, 545.

*Students*, their several Classes and Degrees, 185.

*Synods*, their Nature, according to the Independants, 170. The first Synod of *N. England*, 171. The second, 272.

## T.

*Tartars* pass into *America*, 6.

*Thacker* (Mr.) preserv'd from Shipwreck, 145. His Death, 367.

*Trade* of *N. England*, 606.

*Truce* concluded between the *English* and *Indians*, 470.

## U.

*Vane* ( Sir *Henry* ) Jun. Governor of the *Massachusetts* Bay, 144. His Character and Death, 145.

*Udall* (Mr ) his Sufferings and Death, 65.

*Virginia*. its Name and ancient extent, 14. Planted, 17. A Massacre, 95, 200.

*Uniformity*, a List of Ministers that settled in *N. England* after its taking place, 338.

*Union* of the four grand Settlements of *N. England*, 203.

W. *Wad.*

## W.

*Wardwell (Samuel)* executed for Witchcraft, 519.

*Wars Civil of England*, their Rise, 218. They hinder the Growth of the Plantations, 191.

*War with the Pequots*, 157. With *Philip*, 376, 379. With the Eastern Indians, 401, 423, 450, 546.

*Wells* besieged, 483.

*Wequaish* (an Indian Convert) his Death, 161.

*Weston (Mr.)* attempts a Settlement in the *Massachusetts Bay*, 95. Is reduced to Misery, 97. Relieved by Capt. *Standish*. But breaks up, 100, 102. His further Misfortunes and Death, 102, 104.

*Wheelwright (Rev. Mr.)* his Seditious Sermon. 169. He is banish'd, 174.

*Wheelwright Pond*, the *English* defeated there, 468.

*Whitgift (A. Bp.)* his Severity towards the Puritans, 53. The Lord Treasurer's Opinion of his Conduct, 55. His Death and Character, 70.

*Willard (John)* executed for Witchcraft, 516.

*Williams (Mr. Roger)* his

Character, 140. His singular Opinions, 141. Separates from the new *English* Churches, and is banish'd, 142.

*William and Henry Fort* described, 488. Taken and demolished, 551.

*Wilson (Rev. Mr. John)* arrives in *N. England*, 133. His Death and Character, 347.

*Winslow (Edward)* goes on an Embassy to *Massasoiet*, 91. His Reception, 92. His Death and Character, 290.

*Winthrop (John) Sen.* Governor of *Massachusetts Bay*, 132. His Speech occasioned by the Commotions at *Hingham*, 216. His Death and Character, 275.

*Winthrop (John) Jun.* his Death and Character, 408.

*Witchcrafts*, their Rise in *New-England*, 496. Circumstances of the afflicted, 498. Trials of several of them, 501. The Number of those who were executed, with their dying Behaviour, 512. Several of the accused make their Escape, 523. Afflicted Persons sent for to *Andover* to discover Witches, 527. They over-act their Part, which

which opens the Peoples Eyes, 529. Recantation of the confessing Witches, 531. Confessions extorted, 534. Recantation of the Jury and others, 537.

*Wren* (Bishop of *Ely*) his Severity against the Puritans, 121.

Y.

*York* (New) taken from the *Dutch*, 342. The Town of *York* surprized, and taken by the *Indians*, 481.

F I N I S.





BOOKS printed for John Clark, Richard Ford,  
and Robert Cruttenden.

THE Psalms of *David*, imitated in the Language of the New Testament, and apply'd to the Christian State and Worship. By the Rev. Mr. *Isaac Watts*. The second Edition, 12<sup>o</sup> Price 1 s. 6 d.

A Collection of Tunes, suited to the various Metres in Mr. *Watts's* Imitation of the Psalms of *David*, or Dr. *Patrick's* Version; fit to be bound up with either. To which is added an Introduction to Psalmody in a new Method; with several Tunes, never before published. 12<sup>o</sup> Price 1 s.

*Hora Lyrica.* Poems chiefly of the Lyric kind, in three Books. 1. Sacred to Devotion and Duty. 2. To Virtue; Honour and Friendship. 3. To the Memory of the Dead. By *Isaac Watts*. The third Edition.

A Help to true Spelling and Reading: Or, A very easy Method for the Teaching Children, or elder Persons, wherein most of the Words in our *English* Bible are brought under several easy Rules. By the Help whereof, by God's Blessing, Children may be brought on with Delight, and taught in much less time than is usual, distinctly to read the Holy Scriptures. By *William Scofield*. The third Edition.

### Preparing for the Press

Several valuable Manuscripts of the late Reverend and Learned *JOHN OWEN*, D. D. sometime Vice-Chancellor of *Oxford*, and Dean of *Christ Church*, never before published. To which will be added, all his Sermons that have been already printed: Together with several small Tracts, very scarce; as also, some Memoirs of his Life, and a Preface giving an Account of the whole.

N. B. The Contents of this Work may be seen in the *Proposals* for printing the same (in One Volume in *Folio*) which may be had *Gratis* of the Undertaker *John Clark*, at the *Bible and Crown* in the *Poultry* near *Cheapside*.



















